

When She Was Bad

Written by **Joss Whedon**

Directed by **Joss Whedon**

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "When She Was Bad". It also includes descriptions of the settings, ac-

tion scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.09.28

This episode was originally broadcast on September 15, 1997.

Copyright (C) 1997 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

The cemetery. The camera pans across it and over to the sidewalk along the border. Willow and Xander are on their way home. Xander has an ice cream cone and takes an occasional lick.

Willow Okay, um...

Xander It's your turn.

Willow I, alright, okay, uh... 'In the few hours that we had together, we loved a lifetime's worth.'

Xander Terminator.

Willow Good! Great.

Xander Um, oh, okay, I got one. *imitating Charlton Heston* 'It's a madhouse! A mad...'

Willow *interrupts* Planet of the Apes.

Xander Can I finish, please?

Willow Oh! Sorry, go ahead.

Xander '...house!' *indicates she may answer*

Willow Planet of the Apes. Okay, good. Me. Uh...

Xander Well?

Willow I'm thinking. 'Use the Force, Luke.'

Xander Do I even have to dignify that with a guess?

Willow I couldn't think of anything. It's a dumb game anyway.

Xander Well, what else do you wanna do? We already played rock, paper, scissors. My hands cramped up.

Willow Well, yes, if you're always scissors of course your tendons are gonna strain...

Xander *interrupts* Y'know, I just gotta say that this has been the most boring summer ever.

Willow Yeah, but on the plus side no monsters or stuff. *She steps over to the wall and hops up to sit on it.*

Xander I'm just so restless! I'm actually looking forward to school startin' up again.

Willow Yeah, and that wouldn't have anything to do with a certain girl we both know who is a Vampire Slayer?

Xander Please, I'm so over her. Did she, uh, mention when she might be gettin' back? About which I do not care.

Willow I haven't heard from her. I got a couple postcards when she went to L.A., but then, like, nothing.

Xander Well, she's probably with her dad having a good time.

Willow And you don't care?

Xander Well, okay, there might be some interest. I'm a man. I have certain desires, certain needs...

Willow Uhhh! I don't wanna know.

Xander I got a movie for ya! *taps her nose with his ice cream*

Willow *surprised* Xander!

Xander You're Amish! You can't fight back... 'cause you're Amish! I mock you with my ice cream cone, Amish guy!

Willow Witness. *pouty* My nose is cold.

Xander Let me get that for ya. *leans in to lick off her nose*

Willow Xander! *stops him*

Xander I'm sorry, I can't help myself. Your nose looks so tasty.

He reaches up with his napkin and gently wipes off her nose. He takes much longer than he needs to and looks into her eyes. He brushes his hand against her cheek. After another moment he starts to move in for a kiss. She responds in kind and tilts her head. They stop just short of making contact and linger there a moment. Xander finally begins to pull back, and when he does he sees a vampire standing on the other side of the wall. Willow notices his glance and looks, too. She screams and jumps off of the wall as Xander pulls her away from the vam-

pire.

Xander Willow, go!

He puts himself between her and the vampire. She doesn't go, but watches as he punches the vampire in the face. The vampire isn't fazed. He grabs Xander and tries to bite. Xander struggles with him to keep from being bitten. After a few moments of wrestling a hand grabs the vampire by the shoulder and pulls him off of Xander. It's a girl, and she punches the vampire in the face, knees

him in the crotch and flips him over onto his back. She turns to Willow and Xander.

Buffy Hi, guys!

The vampire gets up. Buffy turns her attention back to him and kicks him in the chest, sending him flying into a tree, where he gets impaled on a dead branch and bursts into ashes. She turns back to Willow and Xander.

Buffy Miss me?

Part 1

On the sidewalk.

Willow Buffy!

Xander Hey! *hugs her*

Buffy Hey. Hey, Will! *hugs her*

Xander *hugs Buffy again* Man, your timing really doesn't suck. *laughs*

Willow When'd you get back?

Buffy Uh, just now. Dad drove me down. And I figured you two losers would be getting into some kind of trouble.

Willow I think we had the upper hand. I-in a subtle way.

Buffy Does either of you even have a cross? Very sloppy.

Xander Well, it's been a slow summer. I mean, that's the first vampire we've seen since you killed the Master.

Buffy It's like they knew I was coming back.
They start to walk.

Xander So, what about you? How was your summer? Did you slay anything?

Buffy No. Uh, just hung out, partied some, shopping was also a major theme.

Xander Well, you haven't lost your touch. That vampire...

Buffy I did kinda whale on him, didn't I?

Xander *notices* I like your hair.

Buffy *giggles* So, how did you guys fare? Did you have any fun without me?

Xander No.

Willow Yes!

Xander Uh, our summer was kinda yawnworthy. Our biggest excitement was burying the Master.

They stop walking.

Willow That's right, you missed it. *points* Right out by that tree. *Buffy looks* Giles buried the bones and we poured holy water and we got to wear robes.

Xander Very intense. You shoulda been.

Willow Have you seen Giles?

Buffy Why would I do that? I'll see him at school.

Xander Man, I'm really glad you're back.

Buffy *looks at the tree again* Me, too.

Cut to Buffy's room. Her dad is helping her mom unpack her things. Joyce opens a suitcase and looks through it.

Hank Okay, then. This is the last of it. *puts another suitcase on the bed*

Joyce More clothes?

Hank Oh, do shoes count as clothes?

Joyce How much shopping did you let her do?

Hank Oh, I just thought I was saving you from the big back-to-school clothing nightmare. *unzips the suitcase*

Joyce My nightmares of Buffy in school have nothing to do with clothes. Did she manage to stay out of trouble in L.A.?

Hank She did, yeah. She was, um... you know, great.

Joyce But?

Hank She was just, I don't know, um... distant. Not brooding or sulking, just... there was no connection. The more time we spent together, the more I felt like she was nowhere to be seen.

Joyce Hence the shoes?

Hank *hands her the shoes* I may have overcompensated a little bit.

Joyce Hmm.

Hank It's so strange. You know, at least when she was burning stuff down I knew what to say.

Joyce Well, welcome to my world. I haven't been able to get through to her for so long. I'll just be happy if she makes it through the school year.

Cut to Sunnydale High.

Cordelia It was a nightmare, a total nightmare.

Cut to her and two friends coming down some stairs and walking across the quad.

Cordelia I mean, they promised me they'd take me to St. Croix, and then they just decide to go to Tuscany. *exhales* Art and buildings? I was totally beachless for a month and a half. No one has suffered like I have. Of course I think that that kind of adversity builds character. Well, then I thought, I already have a lot of character. Is it possible to have too much character?

Snyder The first day back. It always gets me.

Giles Yes.

Cut to the two of them walking along the colonnade.

Snyder I mean, it's incredible. One day the campus is completely bare. Empty. The next, there are children

everywhere. Like locusts. Crawling around, mindlessly bent on feeding and mating. Destroying everything in sight in their relentless, pointless desire to exist.

They stop. Snyder looks around, observing the students.

Giles I do enjoy these pep talks. Have you ever considered, given your abhorrence of children, school's principal was not, perhaps, your true vocation?

Snyder Somebody's got to keep an eye on them. They're just a bunch of hormonal time bombs. *takes two steps away from Giles* Every time a pretty girl walks by every boy turns into a gibbering fool.

Giles spots Jenny coming towards them.

Giles Ms. Calendar!

Jenny Mr. Giles!

Giles Well, I, uh, um... Hello!

Snyder You see the way these kids gaze at each other... all moony.

Jenny It's good to see you.

Giles Yes.

Snyder You think they're thinking about learning?

Giles Uh, were you headed to the, uh, faculty room?

Jenny Sounds like fun!

They head off to the faculty room leaving Snyder behind.

Snyder I try and tell 'em about the important things in life. Discipline, responsibility, punctuality. Might as well be talking to myself.

Cut inside to the halls. They walk through the student lounge.

Giles How was your summer?

Jenny Extreme. I did Burning Man in Black Rock, ohhh, such a great festival, you should've been there. They had drum rituals, mobile sculptures, raves, naked mud dances, you would've just... hated it with a fiery passion!

Giles I can't imagine finding any redeeming, uh... *stops at the base of the stairs* Naked?

Jenny Hmm. And you probably spent all summer with your nose in a book.

Giles Yes. I suppose you'd consider that frightfully dull.

Jenny Depends on the book. *smiles*

Willow and Xander come down the stairs. Buffy is not far behind them.

Willow Giles!

Xander Yo! G-man! What's up?

Giles Nice to see you. And don't ever call me that.

Jenny Hi, kids.

Willow Hi!

Buffy arrives now, too.

Giles to Buffy How are you?

Buffy Live and kicking.

Willow Buffy killed a vampire last night.

They all look around to see if anyone overheard.

Buffy Uh, I think you can get a little more volume if you speak from the diaphragm.

Willow Sorry.

Jenny quietly We've got vampires? I thought the Hellmouth was closed.

Giles Well, it's, it's closed, but not gone. The mystical energy that emanates from it is still concentrated in this area.

Xander Which means we're still the undead's favorite party town.

Giles I wonder if they're here for any purpose, particularly.

Buffy You're the Watcher. I just work here.

Giles Yes, I-I must consult my books.

Xander Oh, eight minutes and thirty-three seconds, pay up. *Willow hands him a dollar* I called ten minutes before you'd consult your books about something. *to Willow* Thanks.

The bell rings.

Willow We better get to class.

They all start making their way to their classes.

Giles Oh, uh, Buffy! *she looks back* Uh, I realize you've only just returned, but when you're ready I-I think we should start your training again.

Buffy I'm ready. I'll see you after school. *starts to go again*

Giles Well, I-I-I understand if, if you want a few days to...

Buffy I'm ready. *leaves*

Cut to the library after school. Buffy does tumbling and kicking exercises that take her all around the library. Then they continue training with the quarterstaff. Buffy swings it at Giles' hand pads. He retreats as she hits. He ducks a swing but she continues around with the quarterstaff and knocks him back into the chairs by the table. Next she practices her punches on the wooden punching dummy. She has a flash of the Master and begins to go crazy on it, throwing continuous rapid punches.

Giles Buffy, that's enough.

She keeps whaling on the dummy.

Giles Buffy!

She kicks it, and it breaks.

Giles Uh, safe to say you've stayed in shape.

Buffy breathing hard I'm ready. Whatever they've got coming next, I'm ready. *bunches her hair above her head* Yeah.

Cut to an old brick warehouse. Cut inside.

Absalom We have been put down, kinsmen. We have lost our way. We have lost the night. But despair is for the living. Where they are weak, we will be strong. Where they weep, we rejoice. Where they bleed, *laughs* we drink! Within three days a New Hope will arise. We

will put our faith in him. *looks over at Collin* He will show us the way.

Part 2

The student lounge. Buffy is upstairs on a couch, off in her own world. Willow and Xander come up the stairs to her.

Xander Buffy! *no response* Buffy!

Buffy *back on earth* Fine! I'm fine.

Xander Good! It's good that you're fine.

Willow sits on the couch opposite Buffy. Xander steps past Buffy and sits on the couch next to her.

Willow What were you thinking about? *gets out an apple*

Buffy Nothing.

Xander Oh, c'mon, you can tell us. We're your bosom friends! The friends of your bosom!

He gets a power bar out of his bag.

Willow Xander.

Xander winces at his power bar. Willow frowns at her apple. They toss them to each other over the table.

Buffy I wasn't thinking anything, really.

Willow What'd you do last night?

Buffy Mm. Slept. I had weird dreams.

Xander Dreams are meaningful.

Willow Tsh! Tell me about it. The other night I dreamt that Xander... Uh, I-it wasn't Xander. I-in fact it wasn't me. It was a friend's dream, and she doesn't remember it.

Buffy I bet she doesn't.

Giles *finds them* Buffy!

Buffy Giles! *gets up* What is it? You look worried.

Giles This vampire activity, I think I know what they're up to.

Buffy Well, we'll deal with it.

Giles I hope it's that simple.

Buffy It is not to worry. Trust me.

Giles Oh, I don't know. I mean, *chuckles* I've killed you once, it shouldn't be too difficult to do it again.

Buffy What?

Giles takes a hard backhand swing at her face, knocking her down onto the table between the two couches. He gets on top of her and begins to choke her. Xander and Willow just sit on the couches and chew away at their food. Willow smiles at Xander. Buffy reaches up to Giles' face and tries to push him off. She claws at him, and suddenly pulls off a mask, revealing the Master underneath. Buffy stares up at him in wide-eyed terror.

Cut to Buffy's bedroom. She wakes from her nightmare with a start. She looks around and over at her open window. She sits up and rubs her face. When she looks back at her window again Angel is there, leaning against the sill.

Buffy Hello.

Angel Mind if I come in?

Buffy Be my guest.

Angel How are you?

Buffy Peachy. So, is this a social call? It is kinda late. Or, well, it is for me, anyway. What is it for you, lunch hour?

Angel It's not a social call.

Buffy Ah. So, lemme guess. That means grave danger. Gosh, it's good to be home.

Angel I'm sorry. I wish I had better news.

Buffy So, some of your cousins are in town for a family barbecue, and we're all on the menu!

Angel The Anointed One. He's been gathering forces somewhere in town. I'm not sure why.

Buffy Guess I'll find out soon enough, huh?

Angel You don't sound too concerned.

Buffy I can handle myself. Besides, I could use a little action anyway.

Angel Don't underestimate the Anointed One just because he looks like a child. He has power over the rest of them. They'll do anything for him.

Buffy Is that it? Is that everything? Y'know, 'cause you woke me up from a really good dream.

She turns away from him and lies back down.

Angel Sorry. I'll go. *turns around to go, but pauses* I missed you.

Buffy *turns to the window* I missed you?

Angel is already gone. "It Doesn't Matter", by Alison Krauss, plays in the background.

Lyrics It doesn't matter what I want / It doesn't matter what I need

Cut to Joyce's Jeep the next morning on the way to school.

Lyrics It doesn't matter if I cry

Joyce How are your new classes?

Buffy Good.

Lyrics Don't matter if I bleed

Joyce Good. Is there the slightest chance that if I asked you what was wrong you would tell me?

Lyrics You've been on a road

Buffy looks over at her mother.

Joyce Course not. It would take all the fun out of guessing.

Lyrics Don't know where it goes or where it leads

Cut to the halls at Buffy's locker.

Willow Angel stopped by? Wow. Was there... Well, I mean, was it having to do with kissing?

Buffy Willow, grow up. Not everything is about kissing.

Xander *to Willow* Yeah. Some stuff's about groping.

to Buffy It wasn't about groping?

Buffy Okay, hormones on parade here? It was pure shoptalk. Remember vampires, pointy teeth, they walk by night, am I ringing a bell?

Willow What did he say?

Buffy Oh, something's up. *closes her locker* Nothing I can't handle.

They begin to walk down the hall to class.

Xander Oh, hey, did you guys hear that Cibo Matto's gonna be at the Bronze tonight?

Willow Cibo Matto? They're playing?

Xander No, Willow, they're gonna be clog dancing.

Willow Cibo Matto can clog dance? *gets a look from Xander* Oh, sarcasm, right.

Xander We should attend, no?

Cordelia comes out of class and engages them in the hall.

Cordelia Oh, look, it's the Three Musketeers.

They look at each other, not sure what to make of that.

Buffy to Xander Was that an insult?

Xander Kinda lacked punch.

Willow The Three Musketeers were cool.

Cordelia I see your point.

Xander I woulda gone with Stooges.

Cordelia Well, I just meant that you guys always hang out together. So, did you guys fight any demons this summer?

Willow Uh, yes! Our own personal demons.

Xander Uh, such as, as, as lust and, uh, thrift!

Buffy I would have to go with Stooges also.

Cordelia What are you guys talking about? I'm talking about big squiggly demons that came from the ground? Remember? Prom night? With all the vampires.

Buffy Cordelia, your mouth is open and sound is coming from it. This is never good.

Xander No. *takes Cordelia aside* It's, see, we can't mention that stuff in front of other people, Buffy being the Slayer and all.

Willow You haven't been talking about our little adventure all summer, have you?

Cordelia Are you nuts? Do you think I would tell people that I spent the whole evening with you? Besides, it was all so creepy. That Master guy? And all the screaming? I don't even like to think about it. *to Buffy* So your secret's safe with me.

Buffy Well, that works out great. You won't tell anyone that I'm the Slayer, and I won't tell anyone you're a moron. *leaves*

Xander Now, that was a good insult.

Willow A little too good.

Cordelia What's up with her?

Cut to the Bronze that night. People are gathering and going in. Cut inside. Cibo Matto is on stage playing "Spoon".

Lyrics Don't, don't want the boys

Cut to Willow and Xander sitting at a table. She has a cup of ice cream.

Willow I just think something's up is all.

Lyrics Don't, don't note the heat

Xander Willow, you're paranoid.

Willow Buffy's never acted like this before. Ever since she got back she's... different.

Lyrics Can't find a spoon...

Xander Buffy's always been different.

Willow She's never been mean.

Lyrics ...that we have had

Xander *exhales* Any sign of her? She said she was coming.

Lyrics The sugar cubes...

Willow No. The band's cool, though.

Xander Yeah, cool.

Lyrics ...can melt our mouth / We belong, yes, to-to-together

Willow dips her nose into her ice cream and smiles, trying to get Xander's attention.

Lyrics We belong, yes, to-to-together / We belong, yes, to-to-together

Xander *looks at her* You got somethin' on your nose.

Lyrics We belong, yes, to-to-together / We belong, yes, to-to-together

The smile disappears from Willow's face, and she wipes the ice cream off with her napkin.

Lyrics We belong, yes, to-to-together

Cut to the cemetery. Dissolve to the tree where the Master is buried. Four crosses mark his grave. A shovel stabs into the dirt and starts to dig. Another one joins in. The camera pans around to Absalom, Collin and two others watching the first two vampires dig.

Absalom to the other two Don't just stand there. Dig! We have to hurry.

The other two get on their knees and begin to dig. The ground burns their hands.

Vampire The ground is consecrated! It burns!

Collin Dig.

The two vampires continue digging by hand. The grave is shallow, and they soon unearth the Master's skull.

Cut to the Bronze. The band starts their next number, "Sugar Water".

Lyrics The velocity of time... turns her voice into... sugar water

Buffy walks into the Bronze. Angel sees her come in and goes over to her.

Buffy Hi.

Angel Hi.

Buffy So, is there danger at the Bronze? Should I be aware?

Angel I can't help thinking I've done something to make you angry. And that bothers me more than I'd like.

Buffy I'm not angry. I don't know where that comes from.

Angel What are you afraid of? Me? Us?

Buffy Could you contemplate getting over yourself for a second? There's no 'us'. Look, Angel, I'm sorry if I was supposed to spend the summer mooning over you, but I didn't. I moved on. To the living.

She heads over to Willow and Xander's table. Cordelia watches her go by, and wonders about her attitude.

Lyrics I'm on a concrete way / The wind is blowing...

Buffy Hey!

Willow Hi.

Xander Hey.

Lyrics ...to the north-northwest

Willow What's wrong with Angel?

Buffy Beats me.

Lyrics It smells like sands of the southern island

Buffy to Xander Let's dance. *pulls at his shirt*

Xander Ooo-kay. *is pulled by his shirt to the dance floor*

Lyrics When a black cat crosses my path

Buffy and Xander begin to slow dance. Her movements are very sensual.

Lyrics A woman in the moon is singing to the earth / A woman in the moon is singing to the earth / La la la, la la la la la la / La la la, la la la la la la

Buffy turns around and spoons in against Xander, pulling his arms around her waist. She grinds her hips and shoulders against him.

Lyrics La la la, la la la la la la / La la la, la la la la la la
She reaches up with her hand and strokes his face. Angel looks on jealously. Willow watches in disbelief. Buffy continues her grinding.

Lyrics I'm riding on a camel that has big eyes / The buildings are changing into coconut trees / Little by little

Buffy turns to Xander and tilts her head up to his, close enough to kiss.

Buffy Xander? Did I ever thank you... for saving my life?

Lyrics When a black cat...

Xander No.

Lyrics ...crosses my path

Buffy slowly slithers around him, making sure not to lose contact with his body.

Lyrics A woman in the moon is singing to the earth

Buffy Don't you wish I would?

She breaks off, leaving him standing there. Xander isn't sure what to make of it all, but he knows he doesn't like it.

Lyrics A woman in the moon is singing to the earth

Buffy goes back to their table and retrieves her jacket.

Lyrics La la la, la la la la la la

She walks past Cordelia as she makes her way out of the Bronze. Angel follows her with his stare.

Lyrics La la la, la la la la la la

Xander is still standing on the dance floor, upset and unsure how to react.

Cut outside. Buffy exits the Bronze and walks down the alley at a quick pace. Cordelia follows her out.

Cordelia Buffy. *Buffy stops* You're really campaigning for bitch-of-the-year, aren't you?

Buffy turns to face her As defending champion, you nervous?

Cordelia I can hold my own. You know, we've never really been close, which is nice, 'cause I don't really like you that much, but... you have on occasion saved the world and stuff, so I'm gonna... do you a favor.

Buffy And this great favor is...

Cordelia I'm gonna give you some advice. Get over it.

Buffy Excuse me?

Cordelia Whatever is causing the Joan Collins 'tude, deal with it. Embrace the pain, spank your inner mope, whatever, but get over it. 'Cause pretty soon you're not even gonna have the loser friends you've got now.

Buffy I think it's about time you start minding your own business.

Cordelia It's long past.

Buffy turns and goes Nighty-night. *flips up her hood*

Cordelia I'll just see if Angel feels like dancing.

She is suddenly grabbed by two vampires coming out of the shadows and dragged into an adjacent building.

Part 3

A basement. The two vampires force Cordelia down the stairs. At the bottom they shove her into the room. She's frightened and looks around. She takes a step sideways and bumps into a hand. She looks down and sees that it's Jenny. She crouches down to see if she's okay, but Jenny is unconscious.

Cordelia Ms., Ms. Calendar? Oh, God, Ms. Calendar?

Cut to the cemetery. Buffy is going to check out the Master's grave. When she gets there she finds it dug open and

his bones exhumed. She steps back slowly, and thinks she sees the Master out of the corner of her eye. She quickly turns to look, but no one's there.

Willow She's possessed!

Cut to the student lounge. Giles is getting a soda from the vending machine.

Giles Possessed?

Willow That's the only explanation that makes any sense. I mean, you should've seen her last night. That

wasn't Buffy.

Xander Are we overlooking the idea that she may be very attracted to me? *gets looks from the others and concedes* She's possessed.

Giles Possessed by what?

Willow Aaaaa possessing thing!

Giles *sarcastically* Well, that narrows it down.

He takes a sip of his soda and winces at its sweetness.

Xander Well, you're the expert. Hey, maybe when the Master killed her some... mystical bad guy transference thing happened.

Willow That's what it was! I mean, why else would she be acting like such a b-i-t-c-h?

Giles Willow, I think we're all a little too old to be spelling things out.

Xander A bitca?

Giles *not surprised by Xander's misunderstanding* Yes. I suggest that, uh, the explanation for her behavior may be something more, more mundane.

The bell rings and the students around them begin to leave for class.

Giles *sits* She may simply have what you Americans refer to as issues. Uh, her experience with the Master must have been extremely traumatic. Well, she was, for at least a few minutes, technically dead. *Buffy appears in the door* I-I don't think she's dealt with that on a conscious level. *Xander notices Buffy* She's convinced herself that she's invulnerable... for the very reason that she feels...

Xander *interrupts* That's a very interesting point about trout, you just brought up now.

Buffy walks up to them.

Giles Trout? *notices Buffy* Trout! Yes, trout, i-is a fish. Good morning. Did you sleep well?

Buffy Like a rock. Master's gone.

Giles I'm sorry?

Buffy The Master. I went by his grave last night, and they have a vacancy.

Giles Good God!

Willow What would somebody want with Master bones?

Xander A trophy, a horrible conversation piece?

Buffy They're gonna bring him back. They're gonna bring the Master back to life, and I seem to recall you telling me he was history.

Giles Buffy, I-I-I've never heard of a-a revivification ritual being successful.

Buffy But you've heard of them? Thanks for the warning.

Willow Well, Buffy, Giles did bury him and...

Buffy Look, this is Slayer stuff, okay? Could we have just a little less from the civilians, please?

Xander Okay, that's just about enough!

Buffy shoots Xander a look.

Snyder *interrupts* I believe some of us have class? And some of us have jobs.

Giles Y-yes, well, I'll, uh, I'll see you all, uh, in the library later. We'll, we'll continue this discussion.

Willow About trout.

The kids leave. Snyder watches them go.

Snyder There're some things I can just smell. It's like a sixth sense.

Giles No, actually that would be one of the five.

Snyder That Summers girl. I smell trouble. I smell expulsion, and just the faintest aroma of jail.

Giles Well, before you throw away the key, you might consider giving her the benefit of the doubt. She may surprise you.

Snyder You really have faith in those kids, don't you?

Giles Yes, I do.

Snyder Weird.

Cut to the library after school.

Giles Alright, alright, I-I-I've got something. It's Latin, so bear with me. Uh, to revive the vampire they need his bones, uh... w-which they have, and, um, the blood... this is very unclear, of the closest person... uh, someone connected to the vampire.

Buffy That'd be me.

Giles Perhaps.

Buffy We were close. We killed each other. It really promotes togetherness.

Xander Well, is there anything on when the ceremony might take...

A rock comes crashing through a window.

Xander Whoa!

Buffy catches the rock in her hands. It has a note wrapped around it and kept in place with a bracelet.

Buffy This is Cordelia's. *takes off the note* 'Come to the Bronze before it opens, or we make her a meal.'

Xander They're gonna cook her dinner? *gets looks from everyone* I'll pretend I didn't say that.

Willow What do we do?

Buffy *exhales* I go to the Bronze and save the day. *starts to go*

Xander I don't like this.

Giles Nor I!

Buffy *turns back* Yeah? Well, you guys aren't going.

Willow What do you mean?

Buffy I can't do it anymore. I can't look after the three of you guys while I'm fighting.

Willow Well, what about the rest of the note?

Buffy What rest of the note?

Willow The part that says, 'P.S. This is a trap'?

Giles You'll be playing straight into their hands. *takes off his glasses*

Buffy I can handle this.

Willow Stop saying that! God, what's wrong with you?

Xander Cordelia may be dead.

Buffy This is my fight.

She leaves and grabs her coat and bag on the way out. Willow just watches her go. Xander shakes his head.

Giles puts his glasses back on.

Cut to the alley outside the Bronze. Buffy senses Angel as she nears the entrance.

Buffy Y'know, being stalked isn't really a big turn-on for girls.

Angel *behind her* You need help. Someone to watch your back.

Buffy Sure you don't mean my neck?

Angel *comes around her* Why are you ridin' me?

Buffy Because I don't trust you. You're a vampire. *gets a look* Oh, I'm sorry, was that an offensive term? Should I say 'undead American'?

Angel You have to trust someone. You can't do this alone.

Buffy I trust me.

Angel You're not as strong as you think.

Buffy *gives him a challenging look* You think you can take me?

Angel What?

Buffy Oh, c'mon! I mean, you must've thought about it. What would happen if it ever came down to a fight, you vampire, me the Slayer, I mean, you must've wondered! Well, why don't we find out?

Angel I'm not gonna fight you.

Buffy Come on! Kick my ass!

Angel Don't you have somewhere to be?

Buffy I do.

Angel Well, you're wasting time.

Buffy Just stay out of my way. *walks around him to the entrance*

Angel Happy to oblige.

Cut inside. Buffy comes in and looks around as she slowly walks through an empty Bronze. She comes upon a girl crying in a corner. She stops. Angel appears behind her.

Buffy That's not Cordelia.

The vampire laughs and turns around.

Vampire Cordelia couldn't make it.

Buffy Where is she?

Vampire I'm not supposed to tell.

Angel I don't like this.

Buffy Don't like what?

Angel There's the bait. Where's the hook?

The vampire attacks, and Buffy flips her over onto her back on the floor and pins her down with her foot.

Buffy You're right. Why would they send just one?

Cut to the library. Giles is continuing his research.

Willow I still think we should've gone with her.

Xander Buffy's about to lose it. I think we should be trying to reach minimum safe distance.

Willow Xander, you know it's a trap!

Giles Ah! Ah, ah, ah! Uh, uh, the Latin is, is translated from the Sumerian, a-a-and rather badly. Closest to the Master actually translates as 'nearest'. Physically. The, the, the person or persons who were with him... when he... *looks up* It is a trap.

Several vampires appear on the mezzanine level above.

Giles It just isn't for her.

Part 4

The Bronze. Buffy binds the vampire's wrists

Buffy Watch her. Don't kill her unless you have to. *shoves her over to Angel*

Angel Buffy! What's goin' on?

Buffy I'll be back.

Cut to the library. Buffy comes rushing in, and stops short when she sees that the place is a shambles. The camera pans through the room to the center table, which has been tipped over onto its side. Behind it Xander regains consciousness and gets up, using the table for support.

Buffy Xander!

She rushes over to him to help, but he shakes her off.

Buffy What happened?

Xander *out of breath* Vampires. The ones you could handle yourself.

Buffy Where are the others?

Xander I don't know. *angry* I don't know what your problem is, what your issues are. But as of now, I officially don't care. If you'd worked with us for five seconds, you coulda stopped this.

Buffy *turns away* We, we just have to think. Where would they have taken them?

Xander *vehemently* If they hurt Willow, I'll kill you.

She turns back to him and looks at him seriously.

Buffy Why did they take them and not you?

Xander Giles said the ritual was, um... They needed people who were close to the Master. Physically close. When he, uh...

Buffy The ones who were with the Master when he died.

Xander Giles, Willow, Cordelia...

Buffy Ms. Calendar.

Xander Odds are they've got a complete set by now.

Buffy We need to find out where.

Xander How?

Cut to the Bronze. Buffy is interrogating the female vampire. She throws her down onto the floor.

Buffy One more time: where are they?

Vampire You're too late. Your friends are dead.

Buffy *lifts her back up* Tell me where they are!

Vampire *laughs* What are you gonna do? Kill me?

Buffy As a matter of fact...

She throws the vampire onto a pool table.

Buffy ...yes. *yanks off her necklace* But since I'm not gonna kill you any time soon, the question becomes...

She drops the cross into the vampire's mouth and covers it with her hands.

Buffy ...how are we gonna pass the time till then?

The cross burns in the vampire's mouth, and she shakes her head. After several seconds Buffy pulls the cross back out.

Buffy So. One more time.

Cut to the warehouse. Cut inside. Collin carries a black case past the Master's skeleton, which has been laid out on a table. Absalom takes it from him.

Absalom Begin.

Another vampire starts pulling on a chain, and Willow, Giles, Cordelia and Jenny are moved along an overhead conveyor to hang upside down and unconscious above the Master's bones.

Absalom Behold, these four mortals.

Buffy comes into the warehouse through a side door. Angel and Xander follow her in.

Absalom Witnesses to our Master's wretched demise. They will breathe their last this night. The blood that pours from their throats will bring NEW LIFE to the old one. We gather for his resurrection. For the dawn of this new hell.

Buffy looks up at the four of them hanging upside down.

Xander *in a low voice* Buffy! Buffy! *she faces him* We gotta do something now!

Buffy You two get the others out of here.

Angel We need you to distract the vampires.

Buffy Right.

Xander What are you gonna do?

Buffy I'm gonna kill them all. *turns to her task* That oughta distract them.

Cut to Absalom, holding a Kuhkri, a long, curved knife.

Absalom For the old one. For his pain. For the dark.

Vampires For the dark!

Absalom kisses the blade. Cut to one of the vampires. A stake is suddenly thrust through him from behind, and he instantly turns into ashes. Buffy stands there now in a fighting stance. Absalom looks at her in disbelief and then roars. Three vampires begin fighting her. She easily

keeps them at bay. Angel and Xander seize the opportunity to climb the ladder to the platform above to get the others off of the conveyor. Buffy continues to fight the vampires below. Absalom takes Collin and ushers him out of the warehouse. He comes back in and sees Angel and Xander pulling on the chain, bringing the others back over to the platform.

Absalom The sacrifices! Stop them!

A vampire responds to Absalom's command and runs to the ladder to the platform. Buffy continues to fight below as Angel and Xander keep pulling on the chain. Absalom looks around and then rushes out of the warehouse. Buffy keeps fighting. She does a flip over some wooden boxes, grabs one on the way and smashes it onto a vampire's head. She kicks the vampire in the face, knocking him down and breaking a few pieces of wood off of the box. She gets tackled by another vampire. On the platform above Giles, Jenny and Cordelia are already off of the conveyor. Angel and Xander lift Willow off as well. Giles rolls on the floor in semi-consciousness. They lay Willow down and tend to them all. A vampire finally makes it up to the platform and growls. Angel looks at him with his game face on and growls back. The vampire attacks, and Angel rushes to meet him. They fight. Below one of them is on top of Buffy. She reaches up with a broken piece of wood and jams it into the vampire's back, and gets ash all over herself. The vampire she knocked down before with the box gets up and rushes to attack her. Above, Angel and his opponent fall through a poorly covered hole in the platform. Jenny is awake now and crawls over to Giles, who is also awake now and trying to sit up.

Giles Are you alright?

Jenny Yeah, I'm okay.

Giles Where's Buffy?

Xander is at the edge of the platform holding a still unconscious Willow with his arm and watching the fight below.

Xander Uh, she's working out her issues.

Buffy is still fighting a vampire below. Underneath the platform Angel's attacker tries to jam a piece of wood into his chest, but Angel stops him and jams it into his instead. Buffy kicks the vampire she's fighting into a storage rack, and he goes down with it. Absalom shows up again in the doorway with a large sledgehammer.

Absalom ENOUGH!

Buffy turns to look at him. The other vampire gets back up.

Absalom Your day is done, girl. I'll grind you into a sticky paste, and hear you beg before I smash in your face.

Buffy So, are you gonna kill me or are we just making

small talk?

Absalom raises the sledgehammer in indignation and yells as he begins his attack. The other vampire rushes at her from the other side. Buffy calmly looks at the tall wooden torch post in front of her, breaks it off and turns it a few times in her hands. The vampire impales himself on the broken end and crumbles into ash. Absalom runs into the burning end and is set ablaze. He backs up and screams as the flames spread over him. He makes a last desperate attempt to get Buffy and raises the sledgehammer over his head, but is too late as the flames engulf him and instantly burn him up. The sledgehammer falls to the floor with a loud clang. Buffy drops the post and looks over at the Master's skeleton. Cut to the platform above. Willow is awake now.

Willow It's over.

Xander No, it's not.

Cut below. Buffy bends down and picks up the sledgehammer. She slowly walks over to the Master's skeleton and looks at it a moment. Then she swings the hammer back behind her and arcs it directly into the Master's skull, shattering it to pieces. She keeps whaling on the Master's skeleton as Willow, Xander and Giles look down from above. Angel comes up behind her and watches her continue until there's nothing left on the table. She stops and bursts into tears, dropping the sledgehammer to the floor.

Angel It's okay. It's okay.

Buffy turns around and leans into him, crying into his shoulder. Angel gently holds on to her as she cries. Xander, Willow and Giles continue to watch from above. Willow briefly looks up at Xander.

Cut to the school the next day. Jenny and Cordelia walk across the quad.

Cordelia What an ordeal. And you know what the worst part is?

Jenny What?

Cordelia It stays with you forever. No matter what they tell you, none of that rust and blood and grime comes out. I mean, you can dry clean till judgment day, you are living with those stains.

Jenny Yeah that's the worst part of being hung upside down by a **vampire who wants to slit your throat** the stains.

Cordelia I hear ya!

Giles and Buffy come walking the other way on the other

side of the quad.

Buffy I don't think I can face them.

Giles Hmm? Of course, you can.

Buffy I can't! What am I supposed say? 'Sorry I almost got your throat slit. What's the homework?'

Giles Punishing yourself like this is pointless.

Buffy It's entirely pointy. I was a moron. I put my best friends in mortal danger on the second day of school.

Giles What are you gonna do? Crawl inside a cave for the rest of your life?

Buffy Would it have cable?

Giles Buffy, you acted wrongly, I admit that. But believe me, that was hardly the, the worst mistake you'll ever make. Uh, that wasn't quite as comforting as it was meant to be.

Buffy Well, points for effort. *the bell rings* See ya.

Cut to class. Buffy comes in, sees Willow and Xander and stops. Willow sees her come in. Xander, facing Willow, notices her look up and looks over, too, but goes back to what he's doing on Willow's desk. Buffy walks over to an empty desk next to Willow.

Willow Hey, Buffy.

Buffy Hey.

Willow We saved you a seat.

Buffy looks at them both and sits down.

Xander There's a rumor going around that, uh, Mr. Cox is the most boring teacher in the entire world. Like, I think he won a belt or something.

Buffy Like, yes.

Willow Well, I hear he nods off a lot. So that's a plus.

Xander So, we Bronzin' it tonight?

Willow Wednesday, it's kinda beat.

Xander Well, we could grind our enemies into talcum powder with a sledgehammer, but, gosh, we did that last night.

The two of them give Buffy big smiles. She smiles back.

Xander Hey, I got a plan: how 'bout miniature golf.

Willow There's no course here.

Xander Okay, uh, miniature tennis! A very tiny form of tennis that we could invent...

They make small talk until class begins. The camera slowly pans around them.

Cut to the warehouse. Collin surveys the damage Buffy has wrought. He looks all around him at the pieces of bone strewn all over the place.

Collin I hate that girl.

Some Assembly Required

Written by **Ty King** Directed by **Bruce Seth Green**

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Some Assembly Required". It also includes descriptions of the settings,

action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.09.28

This episode was originally broadcast on September 22, 1997.

Copyright (C) 1997 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

The cemetery. Buffy is sitting on top of the gravestone of Stephan Korshak playing with her yo-yo.

Buffy C'mon, Stephan, rise and shine. Some of us have a ton of trig homework waiting.

The camera cuts to her right and approaches her from behind.

Angel Hey.

Buffy inhales a quick startled breath and turns around to face her stalker.

Angel Is this a bad time?

Buffy Are you crazy? You don't just sneak up on people in a graveyard. You make noise when you walk. You stomp or... yodel.

Angel I heard you were on the hunt.

Buffy I'm supposed to be, but... lazy bones here doesn't wanna come out and play.

Angel When you first wake up it's a little disorienting. He'll show.

Buffy It's weird to think of you going through that.

Angel It's weird to go through. So, uh, you're here alone?

Buffy Yeah! Why?

Angel I just thought you'd have somebody with you. Xander or someone.

Buffy Xander.

Angel Or someone.

Buffy Nope. *hops down off the gravestone* Why? Are you jealous?

Angel *chuckles* Of Xander? Please. He's just a kid.

Buffy Is it 'cause I danced with him?

Angel 'Danced with' is a pretty loose term. 'Mated with' might be a little closer.

Buffy Don't you think you're being a little unfair? It was one little dance, which I only did to make you crazy, by

the way. Behold my success.

Angel I am **not** jealous.

Buffy You're not jealous? What, vampires don't get jealous?

Stephan has come out of the ground, and looks at them from behind his gravestone.

Angel See? Whenever we fight you always bring up the vampire thing.

Buffy Well, I didn't come here to fight.

The vampire lunges at her and knocks her into Angel. They fall to the ground, but Buffy quickly gets up.

Buffy Oh, right, I did.

Stephan throws a few punches which Buffy easily blocks. She punches him in the face several times and kicks him in the jaw, sending him stumbling into a large adjacent gravestone. She looks around frantically.

Buffy Where's my stake? I-I know I had a stake!

Angel I didn't see a stake!

The vampire grabs a shovel that was lying by the other gravestone and comes at them again. Angel attacks, but Stephan brings the shovel up and hits him in the side of the face, knocking him onto his back. He leaves Angel lying there and steps toward Buffy. She meets him and jumps over the shovel when Stephan swings it at her legs. He swings it at her again, but she catches it, hits him again and breaks the handle. She spins around with her half and jams the broken handle into his chest. He falls over backward and bursts into ashes as he hits the ground. Angel gets up holding the side of his head.

Buffy *out of breath* What do you mean he's just a kid? Does that mean I'm just a kid, too?

Angel Look, obviously I made a mistake coming here tonight. *turns and leaves*

Buffy Oh, no you don't. You can't just turn and walk away from me like that. *starts following him determinedly* It takes more than that to get rid of me.

She falls into an open grave with an open and empty coffin at the bottom.

Buffy Oof! Uhhh...

Angel comes over and bends down to look.

Angel You okay?

Buffy I'm fine. *sits up and exhales* Gee, I wish people wouldn't leave open graves laying around like this. *stands up slowly*

Angel So. Another vampire has risen tonight.

She pokes her head out of the grave and looks across the grass.

Buffy I don't think so. Look at those tracks. Whoever was buried here didn't rise from this grave.

She climbs out of the grave and finds a girl's shoe.

Buffy She was dragged from it.

Part 1

Sunnydale High School. Cut to the library. Buffy and Xander walk in and see Giles sitting in a chair and talking to another empty chair across from him.

Giles *clears his throat* W-w-w-what I'm proposing is, um... and I-I don't mean to appear indecorous, is, is, um, a, a-a-a social engagement, um, a, a, a, a-a date, if you're amenable.

Buffy and Xander stop and listen to him. Giles is displeased with himself.

Giles You idiot!

Buffy Boy...

Giles is startled and quickly gets up and faces them.

Buffy I guess we never realized how much you like that chair.

Giles I-I-I was just working on... *knocks over a few books*

Buffy Your pickup lines?

Giles *bends down* Um, in a manner of speaking, yes. *picks up the books*

Buffy Then if you wouldn't mind a little Gene and Roger, you might wanna leave off the 'idiot' part. Being called an idiot tends to take people out of the dating mood.

Xander Hmm, it actually kinda turns me on. *looks at Buffy*

Buffy *to Xander* I fear you. *goes to the table* You also might wanna avoid words like 'amenable' and 'indecorous', y'know. Speak English, not whatever they speak in, um...

Giles England?

Buffy Yeah. You just say, 'Hey, I got a thing, you maybe have a thing, maybe we could have a thing.'

Giles *sarcastically* Oh, thank you, Cyrano.

Buffy I'm not finished. Then you say, 'How do you feel about Mexican?'

Giles About Mexicans?

Buffy Mexican. Food. You take her for food, for which you then pay. *sits at the table*

Giles Oh. Right.

Xander So this chair-woman. We are talking Ms. Calendar, right?

Giles W-what makes you think that?

Xander *sits* Simple deduction. Ms. Calendar is reasonably dollsome, especially for someone in your age

bracket. She already knows that you're a school librarian, so you don't have to worry about how to break that embarrassing news to her.

Buffy And she's the only woman we've actually ever seen speak to you. Add it all up and it all spells 'duh'.

Xander Now, is it time to have a talk about the facts of life?

Giles You know, I'm suddenly deciding this is none of your business. *starts up the stairs*

Xander Y'know, because that whole stork thing is a smoke screen.

Giles stops and looks back at him. Buffy laughs to herself.

Giles So, um, how did things go last night? Did Mr. Ko-rshak show up on schedule?

Buffy More or less. Angel and I took care of him.

Xander Angel.

Buffy *gives Xander a look* There's something else, though. We found an empty grave.

Giles Another vampire?

Buffy No. No, this one was dug up and the body was taken out.

Giles Grave robbing? That's new. Interesting. *comes back down to the table*

Buffy I **know** you meant to say gross and disturbing.

Giles Yes, yes, yes of course. Uh, terrible thing. Must, must put a stop to it. Damn it.

Xander So. Why does someone want to dig up graves?

Giles Well, I'll, uh, collect some theories. Uh, it would help if we knew who the body belonged to.

Buffy Meredith Todd. Ring a bell?

Xander No.

Buffy She died recently. She was our age.

Xander Drawin' a blank.

Giles Why don't we ask Willow to, uh, fire *indicates the PC* this thing up and, uh, track Meredith down?

Cut to the halls. Sign-ups for the science fair are going on. Willow is writing in her entry. Eric comes up to her with a camera and points it at her.

Eric Smile! *takes her picture*

Willow Hey!

He turns around and sees another girl.

Eric Oh, look at those legs! *goes to take her picture*

Willow No, thank you.

Chris comes up behind Willow.

Chris Eric, will you knock it off?

Eric looks at him, upset to have his fun spoiled.

Willow *smiles* Hey, Chris!

Chris Hey.

He picks up a sign-up sheet. She watches what he's writing. He looks up at her.

Willow Oh, I, I was just wondering what you were gonna do this year.

Chris Why?

Willow 'Cause every year you win and I place second, so I just thought I'd see what I'm up against.

Chris You know what the key is? If Dr. Clark doesn't understand your experiment he gives you higher marks so it looks like he understands your experiment. *reads Willow's entry* 'The Effects of Sub-Violet Light Spectrum Deprivation on the Development of Fruit Flies'? *smirks* That should do the trick.

Cordelia *shows up and signs up* Okay, I'm doing this under protest. It is not fair that they're making participation in this year's science fair mandatory. I don't think anyone should have to do anything educational in school if they don't want to.

Willow *reads* 'The Tomato: Fruit or Vegetable'?

Cordelia I wanted to do something I could finish in a weekend, alright?

Eric flashes a picture of Cordelia.

Cordelia Stop it! What are you doing? *Eric takes another picture* We are under florescent light, for God's sake.

Eric The camera loves you!

Cordelia I didn't think yearbook nerds came out of hibernation till spring.

Eric *snaps another picture* It's for my private collection. *winks*

Chris Eric! Will you quit it?

Buffy Comin' through. Sorry. *Eric takes her picture* Uh, sorry to interrupt, Willow, but it's the Bat Signal.

Willow Okay, sure. See you later, Chris. Thanks for the tip.

Chris Okay.

Cordelia watches them go. Eric raises his eyebrows at her.

Cordelia *disgusted* Uhhh! *leaves*

Eric Cordelia's so fine. Y'know, she'd be just perfect for us.

Chris Don't be an idiot. She's alive.

Cut to the library. Willow sits down in front of the PC.

Willow This shouldn't take long. I'm probably the only girl in school who has the coroner's office bookmarked as a favorite place.

Cordelia *coming in* Hi. Sorry to interrupt your little undead playgroup, but I need to ask Willow if she'll help me with my science fair project.

Willow It's a fruit.

Cordelia I would've asked Chris to help me, but then that would've brought back too many memories of Daryl.

Willow I found it! Meredith Todd died in a car accident last week.

Cordelia Of course I have learned to deal with my pain.

Buffy How was her neck?

Willow Fine, except for being broken.

Giles comes out of his office.

Cordelia Hello! Can we deal with my pain, please?

Giles There, there.

He pats her on the shoulder and continues up into the stacks.

Willow It says that Meredith and two other girls in the car were killed instantly. They were all on the Fondren High Pep Squad, on the way to a game.

Buffy You know what this means.

Xander That Fondren might actually beat Sunnydale in the cross-town body count competition this year?

Buffy She wasn't killed by vampires. Somebody did dig up her corpse.

Cordelia Eww! Why is it that every conversation you people have has the word 'corpse' in it?

Xander Okay, so we got a body snatcher. What does that mean?

Giles Uh, h-here's what I've come up with. Demons who eat the flesh of the dead to absorb their souls. Or, i-i-it could obviously be a, a voodoo practitioner.

Willow You mean making a zombie?

Giles Uh, zombies, more likely. For most traditional purposes a voodoo priest would require more than one.

Buffy So, we should see if the other girls from the accident are AWOL, too. Maybe we can figure out what this creep has in mind if we know whether or not he's dealing in volume.

Xander So, we dig up some graves tonight?

Willow Oh, boy! A field trip! Are you gonna call Angel?

Buffy I don't think so.

Xander Yeah, why bother him, huh?

Buffy Angel and I have been, um... Never mind. As far as Angel's concerned, I'm taking the night off, okay?

Xander So, we're set then. Say, nineish? BYO shovel?

Willow And I'll pack some food. Who else likes those little powdered doughnuts?

Xander Me.

Willow Cordelia?

Cordelia Darn, I have cheerleader practice tonight. Boy, I wish I knew we were gonna be digging up dead

people sooner. I would've canceled.

Xander Alright, but if you come across the army of zombies, can you page us before they eat your flesh?

Cordelia huffs and leaves the library.

Giles Xander?

Xander Huh?

Giles Zombies don't eat the flesh of the living.

Xander Yeah, I knew that. But did you see the look on her face?

Cut to the cemetery that night. Giles and Xander are digging while Buffy and Willow relax and watch.

Buffy I couldn't believe Angel. He was acting all jealous, and he wouldn't even admit it.

Willow Jealous of what?

Buffy Of Xander.

Willow Because you did that sexy dance with him?

Buffy Am I ever gonna live that down?

Willow No. *munches a doughnut*

Buffy Anyway, he was being totally irrational.

Willow Love makes you do the wacky.

Buffy That's the truth.

Xander Y'know, this might go a lot faster if you femmes actually picked up a shovel, too.

Giles Here, here.

Buffy Sorry, but I'm an old-fashioned gal. I was raised to believe that men dig up the corpses and the women have the babies. *to Willow* So, speaking of the wacky, what was Cordelia's whole riff about painful memories? Who's Daryl?

Willow Daryl Epps. Chris' older brother. He was a big football star. All-State two years ago. He was a running... He was a running... Uh, someone who runs and catches.

Buffy Was he a studly?

Willow Big time. All of the girls were crazy for him.

Buffy And he broke Cordy's heart? Thus possibly proving its existence.

Willow He died. Rock climbing or something? He fell.

Buffy Man, that's lousy. Poor Chris.

Willow Ever since then Chris has been real quiet. Kind of in his own world. I heard their mother doesn't even leave the house anymore.

Giles I think we're there.

Buffy and Willow get up and go over to the grave.

Willow By the way, are we hoping to find a body, or no body?

Xander Call me an optimist, but I'm hoping to find a fortune in gold doubloons.

Giles Um, body would mean flesh-eating demon, no body would point towards the, uh, army of zombies thing. Take your pick, really. Right, then, uh... *to Xander* Go on. *indicates the casket*

Xander You're closer.

Buffy Pathetic much? *climbs down* Move over. *She opens the casket.*

Cut to the school after cheerleading practice. The cheerleaders are heading home.

Cordelia Guys, if we don't get this down by tomorrow, no one's gonna be led by our cheers. Practice.

Girl Okay. See ya later.

Cordelia continues on to her own car as the others get in theirs. They drive off before Cordelia reaches her car. She hears something by the fence and stops to look around.

Cordelia Hello?

She continues to her car and starts to dig in her pack for her keys. She gets them out and runs the rest of the way to her car. She nervously fumbles with the lock.

Cordelia Xander Harris, if this is some kind of joke...

She drops her keys and they roll under the car. She kneels down and reaches for them frantically. On the other side of her car she can see someone in black shoes approaching. She quickly gets up and starts to run. The man follows her. He walks past a dumpster. When he's gone the lid opens, and Cordelia checks to see if the coast is clear. She pushes the lid up all the way, then turns around again to hop out, but is startled by Angel.

Angel Cordelia. This is the last place I expected you to hang out.

Cordelia *quietly* Oh, God! God, it's you. Why were you following me?

Angel I wasn't sure it was you at first. I'm looking for Buffy.

Cordelia Buffy? Well, she's, uh... big shock, she's at the graveyard.

Angel She said she'd be home.

Cordelia Well, she lied. Isn't she a rascal? Well, you're in luck. It just so happens that my night is free. *tries to get out* Uh, hold on, my skirt is caught.

She reaches behind her and gets her skirt loose.

Cordelia There.

She picks up what was holding her skirt and sees it's a hand. She drops it and screams.

Part 2

The library. Xander can be heard outside in the hall.

Xander So, both coffins are empty. That makes three girls signed up for the army of zombies.

They come in through the doors.

Willow Is it an army if you just have three?

Angel gets up from the table and faces them. Cordelia clings to his arm and gets up, too.

Buffy Zombie drill team then.

Angel You're back.

Buffy Angel!

Angel Xander.

Xander Angel.

Angel *to Buffy* I thought you were takin' the night off.

Buffy I, I was, um, but something came up.

Angel Cordelia told me the truth.

Xander *chuckles* That's gotta be a first.

Giles Um, as long as you're here, perhaps you could be of some help. Hmm? *to Buffy* Hmm?

Buffy We were investigating. Somebody's been digging up the bodies of dead girls.

Angel I know. We found some of them.

Buffy You mean, like, two of the three?

Angel I mean, like, some of them. Like parts.

Cordelia It was horrible. Angel saved me from an arm. God, there were so many parts, they were everywhere. Why are these terrible things always happening to me?

Xander Karma! *coughs to cover it*

Willow So much for our zombie theory.

Giles So much for all our theories.

Buffy I don't get it. Why go to all the trouble to dig up three girls only to chop them up and throw them away? It doesn't make any sense. Especially from a time management standpoint.

Angel Well, what I saw didn't add up to three whole girls. I think they kept some parts.

Buffy Could this get yuckier?

Willow They probably kept the other parts to eat.

Buffy Question answered.

Giles Why dispose of the remains five miles from the cemetery at a school, of all places?

Buffy Maybe because whoever did it had some business in the neighborhood. Like, say, classes?

Giles Oh. Ah.

Angel This was no hatchet job. Whoever made those incisions really knew what they were doing.

Giles *disbelieving* Yes, really. What student here is gonna be that well versed in physiology?

Willow Well, I can think of five or six guys in the science club. And me.

Xander So, Will, come clean. Promise to never do it again, and we'll call it a night. *no response* He joked! *smiles*

Buffy Willow, why don't you get these guys' locker numbers so we can do some checking?

Cordelia No. I have to go home now. I have to take a bath and burn my clothes.

Xander *in mock disappointment* You have to go? Aw, too bad. Keep in touch. Buh-bye.

Cordelia I don't wanna go alone. I'm still fragile. *to Angel* Can you take me?

Angel is in open-mouthed shock, and looks at Buffy. She gives him a stare of disapproval.

Cordelia Great! I'll drive?

She leads the way out of the library as Angel gives Buffy another helpless look.

Xander How about that? I always pegged him as a one-woman vampire.

Cut to Chris' house. His mother is sitting in front of the TV watching videos of Daryl's games. His trophy sits on top of the TV. Chris comes out of the basement.

Chris I'm going out, Mom.

She doesn't even look up. She just blows out another lungful of cigarette smoke. Chris walks over to the front door.

Chris I'll be back later, okay? Mom?

Still no response. She takes another drag from her cigarette. Chris lets out a sigh of frustration and leaves the house. On the video Daryl just scored a touchdown, and the team is holding him up high as the cheerleaders jump and wave their pompoms.

Video Dar-yl! Dar-yl! Dar-yl! Dar-yl! Dar-yl!

Daryl takes his helmet off and holds his fists up in the air, laughing and enjoying the moment.

Cut to the halls at school. Xander is working a locker combination from a list. Giles comes down the other hall.

Giles You understand, in my capacity as school official, this search is completely unauthorized, and I, I cannot condone it.

Buffy Fine, your butt's covered. Wanna grab a locker? *hands him a sheet*

Giles Uh, yes, yes, of course. *takes the sheet*

Buffy *approaches a locker* Okay, Eric. Let's see what's on your annoying little mind.

Willow *at another locker* Nothing in here but back issues of Scientific American. Ooo, I haven't read this one! *starts to read*

Giles Nothing remarkable here.

Xander *opens one* Guys!

They all go over to see.

Xander Your friend Chris Epps' locker.

Willow *reads off book titles* 'Grey's Anatomy', 'Mortician's Desk Reference', 'Robicheaux's Guide to Muscles and Tendons'.

Giles reaches in and pulls out a newspaper folded open to a picture of the three cheerleaders. The title above the picture reads 'Tragic Accident Kills Three'.

Giles I think it's fair to say Chris is involved.

Xander He's into corpses alright, but we still don't know why.

Buffy Yes, we do.

She opens Eric's locker door and shows them a collage of a woman made from parts of various pictures.

Cut to Chris' basement. Eric sings while Chris works on a body.

Eric I guess you'll say / What can make me feel this way? / My girl / Talkin' 'bout my girl / My girl... How's my baby?

Chris She's not your baby.

Eric She's not gonna be anybody's baby if we don't finish her soon.

Chris I'm working on it.

Eric So am I, friend. So am I.

He hangs up freshly developed pictures of Buffy, Willow and Cordelia to dry.

Cut to the balcony. Buffy comes up to Willow and Xander sitting on the railing.

Xander Any sign of our suspects?

Buffy Not yet. I don't get it. Why would anybody wanna make a girl?

Xander You mean when there's so many pre-made ones just laying around? The things we do for love.

Buffy Love has nothing to do with this.

Xander Maybe not, but I'll tell you this: people don't fall in love with what's right in front of them.

Willow gives Buffy a sad, knowing look.

Xander People want the dream. What they can't have.

Willow looks over at Xander longingly. Buffy understands only too well.

Xander The more unattainable, the more attractive.

Willow hops down from her perch.

Willow And for Eric the unattainable would include everyone. That's alive.

She walks around Xander to head down the stairs. Buffy joins her.

Buffy Uh, Eric's sick enough to do something like this, but what about Chris? He seems like a human person.

Xander follows them.

Willow I dunno. That thing with his brother was really hard on him. And he talked about death a lot. Maybe he just wanted to get one-up on it.

Buffy But it's not doable. I mean, making someone from scraps, actually making them live.

Willow If it is, my science project's definitely coming in second this year.

Xander spots Giles And speaking of love...

Willow We were talking about the re-animation of dead tissue.

Xander Do I deconstruct your segues?

Buffy to Giles Hey.

Giles distracted Oh! Yes. Hello.

Buffy Still no sign of our mad doctors?

Giles What? Oh! Uh, corpses, yes. Evil. Huh. Very good.

They see Jenny stop and talk to a student.

Jenny Did you bring it? *the student shakes his head* Tomorrow.

Student I forgot it.

Giles Very, very good.

Buffy Okay, Giles, just remember, 'I feel a thing, you feel a thing...' But personalize it.

Giles Personalize it?

Buffy She's a technopagan, right? Ask her to bless your laptop. *starts to leave* Have fun.

Willow and Xander smile. Willow pats him on the shoulder and goes too.

Giles What? Oh! Don't...

Xander Best of luck. *follows the girls*

Giles ...leave?

Jenny walks by Good morning, Rupert. *continues without stopping*

Giles Uh, Ms. Calendar?

Jenny looks at him but keeps going Oh, no, please call me Jenny. Ms. Calendar's my father.

Giles follows Jenny, then.

Cut inside the halls. They walk together.

Giles You know, uh, Jenny, um...

Jenny Hmm?

Giles Would it appear indecorous... Uh, no, not in-in-decorous, um...

Jenny Yeah...?

Giles Well, um... Wha... *exhales* Ah, ah, um...

Jenny Rupert, look, I've gotta get inside and set up the lab.

Giles What, what I'm proposing is...

The bell rings.

Jenny Ah! I gotta go! Sorry! *goes into her room*

Giles to himself You idiot!

Jenny sticks her head back out Hey! Listen, if it's important, why don't you just tell me at the game?

Giles Game? Oh, uh, you're going to the football game?

Jenny Yeah, you seem surprised. *smiles*

Giles No! No, I-I-I-I-I-I just assumed that you, you, you spent your evenings downloading incantations and, and, and casting bones.

Jenny On game night? Are you nuts? You're going, too, right?

Giles Oh, of course. Always, always do.

Jenny So, we should just go together! Look, I could pick you up after school, and we'll grab a bite to eat on the way if you like. How do you feel about Mexican?

Giles nods.

Jenny Good! Okay! And whatever it is you wanna tell me, you can just tell me then. Okay?

Giles Okay! Tonight, then.

Jenny smiles and goes back into her classroom.

Giles *to himself* That went well. I think.

Cut to the science classroom. Willow is looking through a book.

Willow I still don't get how Chris could do it. I mean, arresting the cell deterioration is one thing, but...

Xander Hello! *holds up a visible head* I wanna get ahead.

Willow *exhales* Maybe an electrical current combined with an adrenaline boost.

Xander For the love of God, can somebody scratch my nose?

Buffy *comes into the room* Well, it's official. Chris and Eric didn't come to school today.

Xander That's no coincidence.

Willow Maybe they finished their project.

Buffy God! What if it worked? What, what if that poor girl is walking around?

Xander Poor girls, technically.

Buffy What could she be thinking?

Willow And what are they gonna do with her?

Giles *comes in also* I don't think we need to worry about that just yet. I spoke to a press person this morning about the remains. The police have finished sorting through them, and apparently they found three heads in the dumpster.

Buffy They only had three girls.

Giles Precisely.

Willow So, they don't have the whole, uh, package?

Xander Heads must be no good. Huh. I found 'em attractive enough. *gets looks from the girls* Well, obviously I'm not as sick as Chris and Eric.

Giles Based on what the police have put together, I would say they're one step short of completing their masterpiece.

Willow One step.

The camera pans around the visible head.

Cut to Chris' basement.

Eric We're running out of time. If we wait too long, the onset of atrophy in the limbs will be irreversible.

Chris We can turn up the current. That'll buy us a day, at least.

Eric We will lose the entire body if we don't attach a head soon.

Chris We have time.

Eric We don't! The crash with the girls was lucky. But we can't just keep waiting around for another lucky accident to drop a head in our laps. You know what we have to do. Hell, it's just one lousy girl.

Chris I won't do it. I... I can't... kill anyone. *turns to the shadows* Please! Understand. I... I can't do that! Please don't make me.

Daryl But you gave me your word. You promised me, little brother. *comes into the light* That I wouldn't be alone.

His face is discolored and criss-crossed with stitches.

Part 3

Chris' basement.

Eric The body is perfect. And if we harvest a head tonight, she'll be ready by sunrise.

Daryl When you brought me back you promised you'd take care of me. I need this, Chris. I need someone.

Chris Please don't ask me to do this. Don't ask me to take a life.

Eric I tried to tell him. If you take a life in order to make a life, the whole thing is a wash. No harm, no foul.

Chris Maybe you could... you could go out...

Daryl No!

Chris Let people know.

Daryl They can't see me. Chris, you've always been smarter than me. You were always the brains. You're the only one who can help me now. Third and long, seconds to go. Where do you throw? Where do you throw?

Chris Number five. Daryl's gonna drive.

Daryl Help me, brother.

Chris nods. Daryl hugs him.

Daryl Thank you. *to Eric* Show me!

Eric shows Daryl the pictures.

Daryl *points* This one.

Eric Ha, ha. A man of taste.

He grabs a pair of scissors and cuts around Cordelia's hair.

Eric *sings* My girl / Talkin' 'bout my girl / My girl
He snips her head off.

Cut to the library.

Willow I checked the obits. Nothing that would make for a likely candidate.

Xander They seem kinda picky for guys who had three heads to begin with.

Willow Formaldehyde.

Giles Formaldehyde. Yes, yes, yes, yes, of course, it accelerates neural decay in the brain cells.

Willow After a couple days they're useless. They're gonna need something really fresh.

Buffy How fresh?

Willow As fresh as possible. Buffy, you don't think that they would...

Buffy I think anybody who cuts dead girls into little pieces does not get the benefit of any doubt. I wanna end this thing now.

Giles I second that.

Buffy Okay, fine. You guys go to Eric's, we can go to Chris', and meet up.

Giles *remembering* Oh! I'm supposed to be at the big game, I-I believe it's called.

Buffy Fine. Go ahead. We'll take care of this.

Giles Well, yes, but shouldn't I, I-I, um...

Buffy Okay, then why don't, uh, we all meet there?

Giles Fine. Yes.

Willow Buffy? Don't be too hard on Chris. I mean, he's not a vampire.

Buffy No. He's just a ghoul.

They leave the library.

Cut to Chris' house. His mother answers the door for Buffy.

Buffy Hi. Um, I'm a friend of Chris'. I kinda need to talk to him. Uh, do you know if he's home?

Chris' Mom goes back inside and sits down again. Buffy comes in and closes the door.

Buffy So, is he home?

Mrs. Epps Westbury game. November 17, '95. Daryl rushed 185 yards that night. Four TD's. He was MVP, and he made All-City that season.

Buffy Yeah, that was a great one. Um, but is Chris home?

Mrs. Epps I dunno. Is today a school day? Oh, watch! Watch this move! Daryl takes a kickoff, he sheds one, two, three defenders, and he breaks into the open field for a ninety-five yard touchdown!

Buffy sees the basement door with its 'Keep Out' and 'No Admittance' signs.

Mrs. Epps He woulda been nineteen next week.

Buffy goes over to the basement door and opens it. She quietly makes her way down the stairs. She looks around a bit, and then goes over to the table. There she finds the pictures of herself and Willow. She also finds the plans for the body with Cordelia's face pasted on top.

Buffy *whispers* Cordelia!

Daryl sneaks up behind her, but the door opens and they both look up. Buffy quickly hops over to the open basement window and climbs out. Daryl watches her go.

Cut to the girls' locker room. Cordelia is putting on her lip-gloss. Joy, the cheerleading squad leader, walks by with Lisa.

Joy Cordelia. You coming?

Cordelia Yeah, I'll be right out.

She finishes putting on her lip-gloss and sees Chris appear behind her in the mirror. She's startled and turns to face him.

Cordelia Oh, God! Chris, you scared me. What are you doing in here?

He looks down and away from her.

Cordelia Is something wrong?

She screams as Eric pulls a bag over her head and drags her off. Chris just looks away.

Cut to a hall. Buffy comes around a corner and sees Joy and Lisa coming down the stairs.

Buffy Joy! Lisa! Where's Cordelia?

Joy Cordelia has a game to think about. She doesn't need losers like you. *tries to go*

Buffy *blocks her way* I'm sorry, what did you say?

Cut to the locker room. Eric has Cordelia on the floor, trying to tie her hands. Buffy comes running down the adjoining hall and stops to look into the locker room. Eric sees her and gets up to defend himself. Buffy comes running in and jump kicks him, knocking him down. She crouches down and pulls the bag off of Cordelia's head.

Buffy Are you okay?

Cordelia Oh my God, Buffy!

Eric gets up and runs away.

Buffy Don't worry, he's gone.

Cordelia I was on my way down to the field when Chris came in, and all of a sudden someone jumped me.

Buffy Shh! Quiet down. Relax. Take it easy.

Cordelia *hears music* That's the fight song. Oh my God, it's time for the cheerleader pyramid at mid-field. I've gotta go.

Buffy Well, are you sure you're okay to go out there?

Cordelia Yeah, you don't understand, I **have** to go. I'm the apex! *runs out*

Buffy hears a noise and looks around.

Buffy Chris? *walks slowly* I know what you're trying to do. You and Eric. I know about the bodies from the cemetery. But you haven't hurt anyone yet. *Chris steps out into the open* Look, I know what it's like to lose someone that you're close to. But that's no excuse. What you're doing is wrong.

Chris I have to do this for him. He needs someone.

Buffy Who, Eric? He needs industrial strength therapy!

Chris He always looked out for me. Stood up for me. He's all alone. Everybody loved him. And now he's all alone.

Buffy Who are you talking... *realizes* Oh my God!

Cut to Chris' basement. Daryl is trashing the place.

Daryl *yelling* You promised me! You promised I wouldn't have to be alone!

Eric It's not too late.

Daryl comes over to him and lifts him by the shirt.

Eric Nothing's changed! We can still do this! You and me. Your brother's not the only one who can create life. Whadaya say?

Daryl sets him down. Eric takes a few deep breaths.

Eric Let's go scare you up a date.

Part 4

Chris' Basement. Buffy and Chris come in and quickly descend the stairs.

Buffy Daryl! Daryl? Daryl!

She takes a quick look around.

Buffy He's not here. Where else could he be?

Chris But he would never go out. U-unless...

Buffy He's gonna pick up where you left off.

She makes quick strides to get out of the basement and over to the game. After a moment's hesitation Chris follows her.

Cut to the game. Cordelia is doing a cheer with the squad.

Squad Go, Razorbacks, go! Go, team, go! Go, Razorbacks, go! Go, team, go!

On the field the ball is snapped, thrown, caught and run in for a touchdown. The crowd goes wild. Cut to Jenny and Giles coming from the refreshment stand. His arms are full of snacks and drinks.

Jenny I don't know what it is about football that does it for me. I mean, it lacks the, the grace of basketball, the, uh, poetry of baseball. At its best it's unadorned aggression. It's such a rugged contest.

Giles Rugged. American football. *laughs*
They climb into the stands.

Jenny And that's funny because?

Giles No! *laughs* I just think it's rather odd *they sit* that a nation that prides itself on its virility should feel compelled to strap on forty pounds of protective gear just in order to play rugby.

Jenny Is this your normal strategy for a first date? Dissing my country's national pastime?

Giles Did you just say 'date'?

Jenny You noticed that, huh?

Willow Hi, Ms. Calendar! Hi, Giles.

Jenny Hey, guys. What's up?

Willow Eric's was a bust. Nothing there.

Xander Yeah, nothing but a bunch of computer equipment and a pornography collection so prodigious it even scared me.

Willow Did Buffy get back yet?

Giles No, uh, no. Uh, perhaps you should, uh, circulate nearer the field, see what you can find.

Willow and Xander slip under the railing and sit in front of Giles and Jenny. Xander reaches back and takes Giles' popcorn.

Xander So, what's the score?

Giles and Jenny are unhappy about them sitting right there.

Cut to a view of the field from behind the spectators. The teams are getting in position for the next play. The ball is snapped. Cut under the stands. Daryl is crawling along, looking for Cordelia. He sees the action on the field and

stops a moment to watch and remember. A player on the field gets tackled, but has gained several yards and gets high-fives from his teammates. Daryl lowers his eyes a moment, then notices Cordelia. She takes a break from cheerleading and walks over to the coolers next to the bleachers for a drink. Daryl comes up behind her as she drinks and grabs her. She screams, but her yell is drowned out by the crowd cheering another touchdown. The other cheerleaders jump and wave their pompoms. On the field the players help the scoring team member up and pat him on the back. Buffy and Chris arrive by the bleachers.

Buffy I don't see her. Do you?

Chris No.

Buffy lets out a frustrated breath.

Cut to the old science lab at the school. Cordelia has been blindfolded and is being tied to a gurney.

Cordelia Please, what's going on? Just take off the blindfold. I promise I won't scream! I promise!

Daryl lifts the sheet from the headless body they've constructed.

Daryl She's beautiful!

Eric No! It's bad luck for the groom to see the bride before the wedding.

Daryl puts the sheet back down and goes over to Cordelia.

Cordelia Please? Just take off the blindfold! I promise I won't scream! I promise!

Daryl Cordelia?

He takes off her blindfold. She takes one look at him and screams at the top of her lungs.

Eric You can scream all you want. We're in an abandoned building.

Cordelia screams for help at an even higher pitch. Eric holds up a pan and threatens to hit her with it.

Eric Okay, that's enough.

Cordelia stops her screaming, and Eric puts the pan back down.

Daryl You were always good to me. Always noticed me. But I ignored you. I'm sorry. I'm glad I have a second chance to tell you that.

Cordelia D-Daryl?

Daryl I was thoughtless. I see that now. But I've changed. I've learned to appreciate how much it meant that you wanted to be with me.

Eric We're ready.

Cordelia Ready? Ready for what?

Eric You're gonna feel a little pinch, maybe some discomfort around the neck area. But don't worry. When you wake up, you'll have the body of a seventeen-year-old. In fact, you'll have the body of several.

He lifts the sheet, and Cordelia lets out a very intense scream when she sees the body.

Cut back to the game. Buffy walks over to the cooler and finds Cordelia's pompoms.

Buffy He was here, Chris. Where did he take her?

Chris To the rest of the body. To the lab.

Buffy Where is that?

Chris I promised him that I...

Buffy Look, he'll kill Cordelia! You can't just give and take lives like that. It's not your job.

Chris He's in the old science lab. Everything's set up there.

Buffy Thank you. Now find Xander and Willow and tell them what's going on.

She leaves quickly for the lab. Chris goes to find the others.

Cut to the lab. Eric is pouring gasoline into a sink.

Cordelia *frightened* Daryl, please. You don't have to do this.

Daryl We have to. So we can be together.

Cordelia We'll be together anyway! I'll be with you, I promise!

Daryl Is that right?

Cordelia Mm hm!

Daryl You see anything you like?

He goes over to the other body and lifts the sheet.

Daryl And when you're finished you won't go out. You won't run away. But we can hide together.

Cordelia *very frightened* Please! Please!

Eric holds a knife into a flame a moment, and then comes over to her.

Eric Sterile enough for government work.

He bends over Cordelia to begin the procedure.

Cordelia No! No, please!

There is a loud pounding on the door. It breaks open and Buffy comes in. Eric turns around, sees her and throws the knife at her. She catches it in midair.

Cordelia Buffy, help me!

Eric runs away.

Buffy Daryl, listen. I know what you're doing, okay? Your brother sent me to stop you.

Daryl He wouldn't do that. My brother loves me.

Cordelia Buffy, they're crazy!

Buffy It's okay, Cordelia. I'm gonna get you outta here.

Daryl No, I'm not done with her yet!

He turns to the instrument tray and fumbles around for something. He grabs a cleaver.

Daryl I'm not finished!

He takes the cleaver back to Cordelia and tries to start hacking at her neck. Buffy rushes over, grabs Daryl's arm, knocks the cleaver away and punches him in the face. She scrambles around the table to continue the fight, but

Daryl punches her hard in the face. He grabs her, slams her head into the instrument tray and throws her over Cordelia and onto the floor.

Daryl I won't live alone!

He pushes Cordelia's gurney aside, and it knocks over the can of gasoline. The gas starts pouring out onto the floor.

Eric I'm getting out of here!

Daryl *grabs Eric by the shirt* You have to help me!

Eric Let go!

Daryl throws Eric aside and faces Buffy again. Eric slides into a barrel with his head and gets knocked out. Daryl comes at Buffy. She kicks him in the knee, making him collapse to the floor. She kicks him again in the gut as he tries to get up. He tries to get up again, and she kicks him in the face. He's not fazed, gets up and tries to swing at her. She ducks it. He tries again, and she ducks again and kicks him in the chest, sending him staggering backward and knocking the Bunsen burner to the floor, igniting the gasoline. Xander shows up.

Xander Buffy!

Buffy Get Cordelia!

Cordelia Xander!

Xander runs over to Cordelia and tries to untie her.

Cordelia Get me out of here!

Daryl grabs hold of Buffy and flips her over onto the floor. As she gets up he grabs a canister and throws it at her. She ducks it. The flames around Cordelia and Xander are starting to get higher. Buffy kicks Daryl twice in the side.

Cordelia C'mon! C'mon! Get it off!

Daryl grabs Buffy again, lifts her and holds on to her while she struggles to free herself. Xander is getting nowhere with Cordelia's bindings and tries to find a knife.

Cordelia Get it off! Get me outta here! C'mon!

Buffy continues to struggle in Daryl's grip. Giles and Willow show up. Xander gives up looking and decides to just wheel Cordelia out. Willow and Giles spot Eric, pick him up and get him out. Xander gives the gurney a good shove, hops on and they roll through the flames while Cordelia screams. He hops off, and Jenny helps him stop the gurney. They get Cordelia loose. Buffy hits Daryl in the neck, and he lets go of her. She tries to kick him again, but he grabs her leg, lifts her up and throws her to the floor. Buffy is stunned and lies there while Daryl grabs a desk and raises it over his head.

Chris Daryl!

Daryl looks behind him and sees his brother there.

Chris Don't!

Daryl looks back at Buffy and then notices the body surrounded by flames. He tosses the desk aside and rushes over to it.

Daryl She's mine!

Chris Daryl!

Buffy gets up and stops Chris from running into the flames after Daryl.

Chris Daryl!

Jenny watches, stunned as Giles comes back into the room behind her and looks on as well.

Daryl No. We'll be together always. No! Mine!

The flames engulf Daryl and his bride-to-be.

Cut outside. There are fire engines and police all over. The camera pans down from above over to Chris and Buffy.

Chris The first time he woke up after... He said I shouldn'ta brought him back. I-I was just... tryin' to look out for him. Like... he woulda done for me.

Angel *suddenly shows up* I saw the fire. I figured you'd be here. Is everyone okay?

Buffy Yeah. We're okay.

Cut to Giles walking up to Jenny. He hands her a cup of coffee.

Giles Sorry about all this.

Jenny It's okay. Although a good rule of thumb for a first date is don't do anything so exciting that it'll be hard to top on the second date.

Giles Believe it or not, since I've moved here to live on top of the Hellmouth, the events of this evening actually qualify as a slow night. *pauses and considers* Did you just say 'second date'?

Jenny You noticed that, huh? *smiles*

Giles smiles back and takes a sip of his coffee. Cut to Willow and Xander.

Xander Well, I guess that makes it official. Everybody's paired off. Vampires get dates. Hell, even the school librarian sees more action than me. You ever think that the world is a giant game of musical chairs, and the mu-

sic's stopped and we're the only ones who don't have a chair?

Willow All the time.

Cordelia Xander? I just wanted to thank you for saving my life. What you did in there was really brave and heroic, and I just wanted to tell you if there was anything that I could ever do to...

Xander Do you mind? We're talking here.

Cordelia is taken aback, rolls her eyes and leaves.

Xander So where were we?

Willow Wondering why we never get dates.

Xander Yeah, so why do you think that is?

Cut to the cemetery. Angel and Buffy are strolling through.

Buffy God, the whole thing was so creepy. Well, at the same time, I mean... he did do it all for his brother.

Angel Sounds like he took it a little over the edge.

Buffy Love makes you do the wacky.

Angel What?

Buffy Crazy stuff.

Angel Oh. Crazy, like a two-hundred-and-forty-one-year-old being jealous of a high school junior?

Buffy Are you fessing up?

Angel I've thought about it. Maybe it bothers me a little.

Buffy I don't love Xander.

Angel Yeah, but he's in your life. He gets to be there when I can't. Take your classes, eat your meals, hear your jokes and complaints. He gets to see you in the sunlight.

Buffy I don't look that good in direct light.

Angel It'll be morning soon.

Buffy I should probably go. I could walk you home.

They look at each other for a long moment. Finally Angel begins to walk, and Buffy accompanies him, her hand in his. The camera pans down to Daryl Epps' gravestone, 1978 - 1996.

School Hard

Written by **David Greenwalt**

Directed by **John Kretchmer**

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "School Hard". It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes

and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.09.28

This episode was originally broadcast on September 29, 1997.

Copyright (C) 1997 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Sunnydale High.

Snyder A lot of educators tell students, 'Think of your principal as your pal.'

Cut to Snyder's office. He's lecturing Buffy and Sheila.

Snyder I say, 'Think of me as your judge, jury, and executioner.' Tell me, who do you think is the most troublesome student in this school?

The camera pans from Sheila, looking blase', over to Buffy, looking apprehensive.

Snyder Well, it is quite a match between you two. On the one hand, Buffy hasn't stabbed a horticulture teacher with a trowel.

Sheila I didn't stab anyone with a trowel. They were pruning shears.

Snyder On the other hand, Sheila has never burned down a school building.

Buffy W-well, that was never proven. The Fire Marshall said i-it coulda been mice.

Snyder Mice.

Buffy M-mice that were smoking?

Snyder The two of you seem to be tied in the class-cutting and fight- starting events. You really are neck and neck here. It's quite exciting.

Sheila What does the winner get?

Snyder Expelled. *Buffy looks at him in shock* Thursday is Parent- Teacher night. Your parents, assuming you have any, will meet your teachers, assuming you have any left. I've decided to put the two of you in charge of this event. You have three days to prepare the refreshments, make the banners and transform the school lounge into a habitable place for adults. This will incur my good will. And may affect what I tell your parents when I meet them. Are we clear?

Buffy I'm clear. *to Sheila* Don't you feel clear? *Sheila just looks back* We're very clear.

Snyder Good. Because you mess up this time, and your parents will be coming to clean out your lockers.

Cut to the school's main entrance. The bell rings. Buffy and Sheila come walking out of the building.

Buffy Well, it shouldn't be that hard. We can work on the banners at lunch tomorrow and figure out refreshments then?

Sheila Yeah, sure, whatever. *yells* Hey, meatpie! *walks off*

Xander and Willow meet up with Buffy.

Xander Snyder's got you guys making party favors, huh?

Buffy His two worst students. That's what mom sees when she looks at me. A Sheila.

Sheila kisses an older boy with long, blonde hair.

Xander Well, Sheila's definitely intense. That guy with her? That's the guy she **can** bring home to mother.

Willow She was already smoking in fifth grade. Once I was lookout for her.

Xander *to Willow* You're bad to the bone.

Willow I'm a rebel.

Buffy It's not fair. I'm the Slayer. That requires a certain amount of cutting and fighting. What's Sheila's excuse?

Xander Homework. She won't do it. And most teachers respect that now. Oh, you might wanna keep away any sharp implements when you're working with her.

Buffy Do you think any other Slayers ever had to go to high school?

Xander It's no biggie. You'll have a nice soire'e. The parents will love it. As long as nothing really bad happens between now and then, you'll be fine.

Buffy Are you crazy? What did you say that for? Now something bad is gonna happen!

Xander Whadaya mean? Nothing's gonna happen.

Willow Not until some dummy says, 'as long as nothing bad happens.'

Buffy It's the ultimate jinx!

Willow What were you thinking? Or were you even thinking at all?

The girls give Xander looks of exasperation and walk off.

Xander Well, you guys don't know. *hugs his satchel*

Maybe this time it'll be different.

Cut to a small park and playground that night. A classic 1958 Dodge Desoto Sportsman crashes through the 'Welcome to Sunnydale' sign and screeches to a halt. Spike gets out and strolls over to the curb. He takes a deep breath and lights a cigarette.

Spike Home, sweet home.

Part 1

Inside Collin's warehouse.

Vampire#1 The Master is dead. Someone has to take his place.

Vampire#2 As long as the Slayer's alive, whoever takes his place will be sharing his grave.

Vampire#1 Then let the soul who kills her wear his mantle.

Collin Can you do it?

Vampire#1 Yes. This weekend, the night of St. Vigeous, our power shall be at its peak. When I kill her, it'll be the greatest event since the crucifixion. And I should know. I was there.

Spike *appears behind them* **You** were **there**? *chuckles* Oh, please! If every vampire who said he was at the crucifixion was actually there, it would have been like Woodstock.

Vampire#1 I oughta rip your throat out.

Spike *turns his back to him and strolls away* I was actually at Woodstock. That was a weird gig. I fed off a flowerperson, and I spent the next six hours watchin' my hand move.

Vampire#1 rushes him from behind, and Spike swings his fist up without even looking, hitting him in the face and knocking him down and out.

Spike So. Who do you kill for fun around here?

Collin Who are you?

Spike Spike. You're that Anointed guy. I read about you. *growls at vampire#2* You've got Slayer problems. That's a bad piece of luck. Do you know what I find works real good with Slayers? Killing them.

Collin Can you?

Spike A lot faster than Nancy-boy there. Yeah, I did a couple Slayers in my time. I don't like to brag. *can't keep a straight face* Who am I kidding? I **love** to brag! There was this one Slayer during the Boxer Rebellion, and... *He senses someone behind him and turns his head to look as he morphs into his human guise.*

Spike Drusilla. *goes to her* You shouldn't be walking around. You're weak.

Drusilla Look at all the people. Are these nice people?

Spike We're getting along.

Drusilla *stares at Collin* This one has power. I could feel it from the outside.

Spike Yeah. He's the big noise in these parts. Anointed, and all that.

Drusilla *to Collin* Do you like daisies? Hmm? I plant them, but they always die. Everything I put in the ground withers and dies. *looks up and off into space* Spike? I'm cold.

Spike *puts his jacket around her* I've got you.

Drusilla I'm a princess.

Spike That's what you are.

She pricks Spike on the cheek with her fingernail, and a bead of blood flows out. She reaches up and licks it off. They move close to kiss but don't, and instead look over at Collin.

Spike Me and Dru, we're movin' in. *they separate* Now. Any of you want to test who's got the biggest wrinklies 'round here... step on up. *to Collin* I'll do your Slayer for you. But you keep your flunkies from tryin' anything behind my back. Deal?

Collin nods. Drusilla bows her head down and puts her hands to her temples.

Drusilla I can't see her. The Slayer. I can't see. *looks back up* It's dark where she is. Kill her. Kill her, Spike. Kill her for me?

Spike It's done, baby.

Drusilla Kill her for princess?

Spike I'll chop her into messes.

Drusilla You are my sweet... my little Spike.

Spike *to Collin* So. How 'bout this Slayer? Is she tough? *Cut to Buffy's room. She's standing at her mirror, trying to brush her hair.*

Buffy Ow!

Joyce What's wrong?

Buffy I spent a good part of my allowance on this new cream rinse, and it's neither creamy nor rinsey.

Joyce Life is hard, dear.

Buffy Don't I know it. Is that a split end?

Joyce I got the mail.

Buffy Good.

Joyce Which included a reminder notice about Parent-Teacher night. Thursday.

Buffy That's good.

Joyce Which you were planning on telling me about?

Buffy Oh, for... *faces her mom* the last two weeks.

Joyce Uh-huh. So, what do you think your teachers are gonna tell me about?

Buffy Well, I think they'll all agree that I always bring a pen to class, ready to absorb the knowledge. *sits on her bed*

Joyce And, uh, this absorption rate? How is it reflected in your homework and test scores?

Buffy What can you really tell about a person from a test score?

Joyce Whether or not she's ever going out with her friends again.

Buffy Oh, that.

Joyce Well, I look forward to meeting your principal.

Buffy Won't that be something.

Joyce *comes over to the bed* Look, sweetheart. Life is more than grades and homework and not getting kicked out of school. *sits next to Buffy*

Buffy I know.

Joyce But we moved once because of you getting in trouble. And I had to start a new business, not to mention a new life in a whole new town.

Buffy And you don't wanna do it again.

Joyce What I don't want is to be disappointed in you again.

Buffy Mom, that's the last thing that I want, too. *exhales* I'm trying, I really am. I just... I have a lot of pressure on me right now.

Joyce Wait till you get a job. Sleep tight. *gets up and leaves*

Buffy gets up from her bed and walks over to her desk. She pulls open the top left drawer. In it is a jar of holy water, a cross, a few stakes, a set of brass knuckles. She looks up at her reflection in the mirror.

Buffy I have a job.

Cut to the school. Cut to the lounge. Buffy and Willow are working on a banner.

Willow Sheila's a no-show? She goes to this really rank bar. The Fish Tank? Sometimes they have raids and other stuff that can make you tardy.

Buffy D'you think you can help me cram some French tonight? I don't want Mr. DeJean telling my mother I'm an imbecile.

Willow I thought we were going to the Bronze tonight. 'Cause of how you thought Angel might show?

Xander If he does he'll meet some other nice girl? Studying comes first.

Buffy We're going to the Bronze. I can study and party and do Parent- Teacher night and make my mother proud as long as I don't have to...

Giles and Jenny come walking in.

Giles Buffy!

Buffy ...fight vampires.

Giles to Jenny There is nothing in the chronicles about a-an extraneous lunar cycle.

Jenny The Order never accurately calculated the Mesopotamian Calendar. Rupert, you have **got** to read something that was published after 1066.

Giles Very funny.

Xander What's the up, guys?

Giles W-um, Ms. Calendar has been researching, well, uh, surfing on her computer, a-and she's... Well, according to her calculations, this Saturday is the night of St. Vigeous.

Buffy Let me guess: he didn't make balloon animals.

Giles No, he led a crusade, of, of, uh, vampires. They swept through Edessa, Harran, and points east.

Jenny And they didn't leave much behind.

Buffy Well, if I survive Parent-Teacher night tomorrow, I'll see what I can do about Saturday.

Giles You're being a tad flip, don't you think? This is serious.

Buffy And getting kicked out of school is laughs aplenty?

Giles You know what happens when you, you let your life interfere with your slaying.

Buffy Okay, well, if my slaying doesn't get me expelled, then I promise my banner making won't get me killed, okay? Just please let me get through this week.

Giles This Saturday's going to need a great deal of preparation.

Willow Well, we'll help.

Xander Yeah, I'll whittle stakes.

Willow A-and I can research stuff.

Xander And while I'm whittling, I plan to whistle a jaunty tune.

Giles Yes, your help will be greatly appreciated, but when it comes to battle, Buffy must fight alone. You are, after all, the Slay... *sees Snyder in the hall* ...slay-ve. Slaves. You're, you're all slaves to the, uh, television.

Jenny Yes.

Giles Young people nowadays. *to Jenny* Shall we go?

Jenny Mm, let's. *they leave*

Snyder comes over.

Snyder to Willow and Xander You wouldn't be helping Buffy in Sheila's place, would you?

Xander laughs nervously No.

Willow We're hindering.

Snyder She ditched. *takes a deep breath* Mm. I feel an expulsion coming on.

Buffy No. No, actually, Sheila's been helping us for hours. Um, she just went to get some more paint.

Sheila comes in the door behind Buffy and takes off her glasses. Buffy notices Snyder looking behind her, turns around and sees her.

Buffy Oh! Oh, is there no more teal in the art room?
goes over to Sheila I know you wanted everything to be perfect, but let's just go with what we have.

Snyder Just make sure everything is perfect on Thursday. *turns and leaves*

Sheila Thanks for covering. Guy's a serious rodent.

Buffy No problem.

Sheila Did you really burn down a school building one time?

Buffy Well, not actually one time.

Sheila Cool.

Cut to the Bronze. Nickel is the band tonight. They're in the middle of playing "1000 Nights". Xander dances lamely by himself as Willow helps Buffy with her French at a table.

Lyrics A drink you can't resist / And in your head a voice you'll always miss

Buffy La vache... doit me... touche... de la... jeudi. *looks at Willow* Was it wrong? Should I use the plural?

Willow No. But you said, 'The cow should touch me from Thursday.'

Buffy Maybe that's what I was feeling.

Willow And you said it wrong.

Buffy Oh, je stink.

Willow You're just not focused. It's Angel missage.

Buffy Well, he didn't say for sure. It was a 'maybe see ya there' kinda deal.

Xander Guys, I'm all alone out there. Somebody has to dance with me.

Willow Well, we are studying.

Xander C'mon, one dance. You've been studying nearly twelve minutes.

Buffy No wonder my brain's fried.

She gets up. Willow starts to protest, but Buffy and Xander drag her along with them.

Buffy Come on.

Spike walks up to their table and watches them dance as the band starts a new song, "Stupid Thing".

Lyrics I did a stupid thing last night / I called you / A moment of weakness / No, not a moment / More like three months of weakness

Spike walks along the edge of the dance floor and studies Buffy intently. Xander and Buffy dance lively. Willow doesn't move much, but smiles widely, enjoying herself.

Lyrics I'm one step away from crashing to my knees / One step away from spilling my guts to you

Spike goes over to vampire#1 at the bar.

Spike Go get something to eat.

Lyrics I'm doing all right / No, don't feel sorry for me / Really I'm all right / I'm one step away from crashing to my knees

He comes back to some people near where Buffy, Willow and Xander are dancing and speaks loudly so that Buffy is sure to overhear.

Spike Where's the phone? I need to call the police. There's some big guy out there trying to bite somebody.

Buffy runs from the dance floor. Spike watches her go.

Cut outside to the alley. Vampire#1 has found a young woman. She trembles with fear as he grabs her neck and moves in for the bite. Buffy grabs him by the shoulder and pulls him off of her. He somersaults and rolls up to his feet.

Vampire#1 Slayer!

Buffy Slayee!

She does a roundhouse kick to his face. He only flinches a bit. He swings at her, but she sidesteps the blow. She swings back, and he grabs her arm, swings her around and throws her into a metal roll-up door. She hits it high and hard and falls to the ground, but quickly gets up again. He swings again and hits the metal door with his fist when she ducks the punch. Xander and Willow arrive. Buffy blocks the vampire's punch and holds on to his arm. She looks behind her at the others.

Buffy Get her out of here!

She turns her attention to punching the vampire repeatedly in the face. Willow grabs the woman and pulls her away and out of danger.

Buffy to the rhythm of her punches And a **stake** would be **nice**!

Xander runs to find a stake. Spike looks on from the side. Cut inside to the table. Xander goes through Buffy's purse. He pulls out a yo-yo and sets it aside. He pulls out a tampon and quickly drops it like a hot potato. He finds a stake, and rushes back out.

Cut to the alley. Buffy punches the vampire's face again and then his chest. He gets loose from her and lands a punch on her face. She goes spinning down to the ground and lies there, momentarily stunned. The vampire looms over her.

Vampire#1 I don't need to wait for St. Vigeous. You're mine.

He bends down to get her, and she kicks him in the face. He staggers backward as she maneuvers to his feet.

Vampire#1 Spike! Gimme a hand!

Buffy looks over at Spike in the shadows. Xander is back with the stake.

Xander Buffy!

She turns to him and he throws her the stake. She catches it out of the air, and in a smooth, swift motion plunges it home into the vampire's chest. He doesn't even have time to fall before he crumbles to ashes. Spike comes out of the shadows slowly clapping his hands. Buffy looks at him with a confused expression on her face. Willow and

Xander see him, too.

Spike Nice work, love.

Buffy Who are you?

Spike You'll find out on Saturday.

Buffy What happens on Saturday?

Spike I kill you.

Buffy is speechless and just watches him leave.

Part 2

The alley outside the Bronze. Sheila comes out with two guys and they walk along the alley.

Sheila Alright. Which one's Dwayne and which one's Dell? *hic* Don't tell me. Dell's the one with the tattoos. You guys weren't lyin' about havin' a Cadillac, were you? 'Cause I'm crazy about a Cad. Just the feel of the leather makes me wanna...

She's gotten a bit ahead of Dwayne and stops to look back at him. She sees he's gone.

Sheila Where'd you go?

She looks the other way at Dell, and he's gone, too.

Sheila What's going on? *starts walking slowly, looking around* Where are you guys? Not funny!

She turns around and is startled by Spike.

Sheila Who are you?

Spike Who do you want me to be?

Sheila Did you see...

Spike ...those two losers who thought they were good enough for you?

Sheila What happened to 'em?

Spike They got sleepy.

Sheila Huh?

Spike And you got something a whole lot better.

He slowly walks past her and down the alley. She follows him with her gaze.

Sheila Hey, wait up! What's your name?

She starts after him. The camera follows her, but then pans down to Dwayne and Dell, dead in a pile of trash.

Cut to the library. The table is full of books, and Xander, Willow and Jenny are looking through them doing research.

Giles Spike. That's what the other vampire called him? That's a little unorthodox, isn't it?

Buffy Maybe he's reformed.

Giles Perhaps he went by another name in... times past.

Jenny Well, whoever he is, we'll need all the help we can get come this Saturday.

Xander So, this night of St. Vigeous deal. If they're gonna attack in force, aren't we thinkin' vacation?

Willow We can't run, that would be wrong. Could we hide? I mean, if that Spike guy is leading the attack, *shudders yeeehhehehe*.

Giles Well, he can't be any worse than any other creature you've faced.

Angel suddenly appears He's worse. *they all look at him*

Once he starts something he doesn't stop until everything in his path is dead.

Xander Hmm. So, he's thorough, goal-oriented.

Buffy We were at the Bronze before. Thought you said you might show.

Angel You said you weren't sure if you were going.

Buffy I was being cool. C'mon, you've been dating for, what, like, two hundred years? You don't know what a girl means when she says maybe she'll show?

Willow Wow, two centuries of dating. If you only had two a year, that's still, like, four hundred *Buffy gives her a look* dates with four hundred different... *looks at the mace on the table* Why do they call it a mace?

Giles Uh, we do have slightly more urgent matters to discuss.

Buffy Yeah, like keeping my mom away from Principal Snyder tomorrow night?

Jenny And not dying Saturday.

Giles Angel, do you know if this Spike fellow goes under any other name?

They all look where he was, but he has disappeared. The library doors finish shutting.

Xander Okay, that's it. I'm puttin' a collar with a little bell on that guy.

Cut to Drusilla's room. There is chanting going on elsewhere. The camera pans from her bed past her TV and lamp and over to her collection of dolls. She lifts one and turns it to face away.

Drusilla Miss Edith speaks out of turn. She's a bad example, and will have no cakes today. Shhhh.

Spike comes up behind her Darling, are you going to eat something?

Drusilla I'm not hungry. I miss Prague.

Spike You nearly died in Prague. Idiot mob. This is the place for us. *leads her to the bed* The Hellmouth will restore you, put color in your cheeks, metaphorically speaking, and in a few week's time...

Drusilla lies back on the bed The stars will align, and smile down on us.

Spike leans over her And then, God, this town will burn.

Drusilla giggles A pretty fire!

He rolls over her and lies down next to her.

Drusilla hears the chanting They're preparing.

Spike St. Vigeous is coming up. Should be a party. *Sheila is tied up and gagged with her hands hanging from a hook above her.*

Drusilla You should go up with them and cleanse.

Spike Dru...

Drusilla The boy doesn't trust you. They follow him. *sits up* I think sometimes that all my hair will fall out and I'll be bald.

Spike *sits up* Never happen. Alright. *gets off of the bed* I'll go up and get chanty with the fellas, but **you** goes to Sheila got to do me one favor. *takes Sheila off of the hook* Eat something. *hands Sheila to Drusilla and leaves*

Drusilla *turns Sheila to the dolls* You see, Miss Edith? *cut to the doll facing away* If you'd been good you could *cut to Drusilla in her game face* watch with the rest.

Sheila looks at Drusilla, but can't scream because of her gag. Drusilla roars and moves in for a quick, violent bite.

Cut to the school the next day. Willow checks the cross-bow. Jenny walks behind her with extra pieces of wood to make stakes and sets them on the table between Cordelia and Xander, who are whittling away. Jenny continues walking over behind Buffy. Buffy holds up a large sharp machete, then starts chopping something with it. The camera pans down to show that it's a cucumber. She's preparing a vegetable tray.

Giles For three nights the unholy ones scourge themselves into a fury, um, culminating in a savage attack on the night of St. Vigeous.

Xander Does anybody remember when Saturday night meant date night?

Cordelia You sure don't.

Buffy Ooo! Parents start arriving in an hour. Okay, so, um, banners are in place, the lounge is comfy... What am I forgetting?

Willow Punch?

Buffy Punch. I need, I need punch!

Cordelia My fingers are cramping. How long have I been doing this?

Xander Three minutes.

Cordelia So, can I go now? She doesn't need this many stakes. I mean, if this guy Spike is as mean as you all said, it should be over pretty quickly. *Buffy looks up at her* We're still all rooting for you on Saturday. I'd be there for you myself if I didn't have a leg wax.

Buffy You guys hold down the fort. I'm punch bound. *She leaves the library. As soon as she's gone Xander and Cordelia both reach over and grab something off of the vegetable tray. Buffy sticks her head back in the door.*

Buffy No!

Cut to later at Parent-Teacher night. Buffy is doling out the punch into cups. Willow comes over.

Willow What kinda punch did you make?

Buffy Uh, lemonade. *hands her a cup* I made it fresh and everything.

Willow How much sugar did you use? *takes a sip*

Buffy Sugar?

Willow grimaces at the incredibly sour taste, and puts the cup down.

Willow It's very good.

Buffy Okay, now all I have to do is keep my mother and Snyder from crossing paths for the rest of the night.

Willow *sees Joyce* Hi, Mrs. Summers.

Joyce Hi, Willow. Hi, honey. Did you, uh, do all this?

Buffy Yeah! Um, *picks up a cup* here, have some lemonade. *sees Snyder* Right after Willow shows you the library. I have to stay here and hostess. *puts the cup back down*

Willow Great, the library. *puts her arm around Joyce's shoulder* Uh, um, ooo, no, G-Giles and everyone...

Buffy ...is locked in there studying. Right. French class it is!

Willow leads Joyce away. Snyder comes up to Buffy.

Snyder Was that your mother?

She grabs a cup and a ladle full of lemonade and turns toward him.

Buffy Here. *fakes a spill* Oh! Oh, sorry! Um, yeah! Yeah, I was gonna introduce you, but, um, she wouldn't have said much. Y'know, she doesn't speak a word of English. *Snyder doesn't believe a word of it, and makes tracks to follow Joyce and Willow. Buffy lets out a worried moan and looks up at the clock. 6:15. Dissolve to 8:45. Cordelia comes walking in.*

Cordelia Giles has us locked up in that library working on **your** weapons. Even slaves get minimum wage. *She stares at Buffy's face.*

Buffy What?

Cordelia You're starting to look a little slagged. What, are you just skipping foundation entirely now?

Buffy Cordelia, I have at least three lives to contend with, none of which really mesh. It's kind of like oil and water and a... third unmeshable thing.

Cordelia Yeah, and I can see the oil. *sees Joyce talking to Willow* Is that your mom? *Buffy looks* Now that is a woman that knows how to moisturize. Did it, like, skip a generation?

Joyce *comes over* Well, I believe that I have seen every classroom on campus, and just as I get there all your teachers miraculously have stepped out.

Willow smiles over Joyce's shoulder, proud of herself.

Buffy Oh! *notices Snyder coming back into the room* Oh. Um, but you haven't seen the boiler room yet. And, you know, that's really interesting, what with the boiler being in the room and all. *laughs nervously* *Snyder comes up to the group. Joyce offers her hand to him.*

Joyce Hi. I'm Joyce Summers. I'm Buffy's mother.

Snyder *ignores her hand* Principal Snyder. I'm afraid we need to talk. My office is down here.

Joyce follows Snyder to his office. Cordelia watches them go with a huge smile on her face.

Buffy *worried* He didn't look very happy.

Willow But you did such a good job.

Cordelia When they're done talking...

Buffy What?

Cordelia My guess? Tenth high school reunion, you'll still be grounded.

Buffy gives her a look.

Willow Cordelia, have some lemonade.

Cordelia heads over to the punch table.

Cut to the library. Giles and Jenny continue their research while Xander keeps whittling.

Giles Oh, there you are.

Jenny There who is?

Giles Our new friend Spike. He's known as 'William the Bloody'. Earned his nickname by torturing his victims with railroad spikes. Very pleasant. Well, here's some

good news he's barely two hundred. He's not even as old as Angel is. *frowns* Oh.

Xander That's a bad look, right?

Giles I think your suggestion of running away this Saturday might've been a good one. Spike has fought two Slayers in the last century, and... he's killed them both.

Cut to the lounge. Buffy and Willow see Snyder come back in with Joyce. She comes up to her daughter.

Joyce In the car, now.

Buffy and Willow exchange a concerned look. Buffy starts to follow her mom out. She turns her head to look back at Snyder, who's going around turning off the lights. Joyce waits for Buffy to join her, and they walk out of the room. Snyder goes to another switch by the back wall next to a large window and turns it off. Two vampires suddenly come crashing through the window. Buffy looks back into the room. Several more vampires follow, and they storm into the room. The people panic and begin to run around. Buffy comes back into the room. The vampires have lined themselves up.

Spike What can I say? I couldn't wait.

Part 3

The lounge. Spike attacks. Buffy grabs a chair and throws it at him, tripping him up. She runs back out of the room and grabs her mother's hand. She turns down the hall to the right, but more vampires come in that way, so she goes the other way. In the lounge Spike grabs hold of a man.

Spike Nobody gets out! Especially the girl!

Cut to the hall. Another vampire is guarding an exit. Buffy heads in another direction.

Buffy Everybody, this way! C'mon! C'mon!

Snyder and several others run past her as she shoves a cleaning cart into the two vampires chasing them. Willow and Cordelia come running out of the lounge and nearly trip over them. They head to their right, but a vampire grabs Cordelia and she screams. Willow grabs a bust from a display pedestal and wields it back for a swing.

Willow Hey!

The vampire looks up and Willow swings the bust hard into his face, knocking him off of Cordelia. Willow grabs her hand and pulls her into a closet.

Cut to the hall outside the library. Giles, Jenny and Xander come running out.

Giles What the hell...?!

They see Buffy's group running toward them.

Buffy Spike and an army! Look out!

They look behind them and see a vampire. Jenny screams.

Giles Back!

They run back into the library and hold the door shut as the vampire slams into it. Buffy opens the door to the science classroom.

Buffy In here! Now!

The people all run into the room. Buffy follows them in last and closes the door as the two vampires come running into the hall and begin banging on the door. Cut inside the classroom. Snyder and another man maneuver a storage cabinet in front of the door. Buffy runs over to the other door and closes and locks it. The power goes out.

Cut to the library. Giles, Jenny and Xander look up from barricading the doors as the lights go off and the emergency lights come on.

Cut to the hall outside the lounge. Spike is still holding on to the man.

Vampire#2 We cut the power. Nobody got out.

Spike And the Slayer?

Vampire#2 She either went that way *points to his right* or that way. *points to his left* I saw two others.

Spike You don't know?! *lets go of the man* I'm a veal kind of guy. You're too old to eat. *grabs his head and snaps his neck* But not to kill. *looks at vampire#2* I feel better.

Cut to the library. Giles tries the phone, but it's dead.

Giles They've cut the phones. *has an idea* Wait a minute. There's an old boarded up-cellar behind the stacks. You can get out that way. *to Xander* Find Angel. He knows about Spike. We need him.

Xander No, I'm not going anywhere until I know that Buffy and Willow are alright.

Giles No one will be alright unless we get some help!

Xander gives in and goes. Cut to the classroom.

Man Who are those people, and what do they want?

Joyce I didn't get much of a look, but is there something wrong with their faces? I...

Snyder Yes! PCP! It's a gang on PCP! We've gotta get out of here.

He grabs a desk, sets it in front of a window and starts climbing.

Buffy You can't go outside! They'll kill you!

Snyder You don't tell me! I tell you!

Buffy *pulls him down* They will kill everybody in this room. Nobody goes out, nobody comes in until I say so. Do you hear me?

Snyder Who do you think you are?

Buffy I'm the one that knows how to stop them.

She looks up and walks across the room, trying to find a way into the ceiling. Joyce grabs her by the shoulders.

Joyce Buffy, are you crazy? Look, I know you've been accused of fighting and other things, but those guys are serious. You can't go out there.

Buffy I know. That's why I'm going up there.

She grabs a stool, sets it on a lab table, climbs up and pushes a ceiling panel aside. She looks down at her mom.

Buffy Don't worry, Mom.

She lifts herself up into the ceiling.

Cut to the halls. Spike is looking for Buffy.

Spike Slaaayer! Here, kitty, kittyyy. I find one of your friends first, I'm gonna suck 'em dry. And use their bones to bash your head in. *kicks a door open*

The camera closes on the closet where Willow and Cordelia are hiding. Cut inside. Cordelia is holding a broom for defense.

Spike Are you getting a word picture here?

Cordelia *whispers* Oh, God, oh, God!

Willow clasps her hand around Cordelia's mouth to keep her quiet. Cut to the hall. Spike is about to kick the closet door open when he's distracted.

Vampire#2 Spike! Listen...

They listen and hear activity in the ceiling. Cut to Buffy crawling through the ceiling space. Cut to the hall.

Spike *sing-song* Someone's in the ceeeeeeiling!

Cut to the library. Giles stuffs several stakes into his jacket pockets, grabs a battle-ax from the table and heads toward the door.

Jenny Hey-hey-hey-hey! What are you doing?

Giles starts to push his way through the barricade they constructed.

Jenny There are at least three vampires in that hall! God only knows how many others in the building!

Giles *looks at Jenny* Listen! I am the Watcher! I am responsible for her, and I have, I have to go!

He starts pushing things aside again.

Jenny Rupert!

He looks back at her again.

Jenny Be careful.

Giles Push these back as soon as I...

Buffy breaks through the ceiling and drops to the floor.

Jenny steps back in surprise. Giles lifts his ax.

Giles Buffy! *lowers the ax* You're all right!

Buffy takes off her outer sweater.

Jenny How are the others?

Buffy Principal Snyder, my mother and four others are locked in the science room across the hall. Willow and Cordelia ran the other way. *puts on Xander's bag* I don't know if they're... Where's Xander?

Giles He got out through the stacks. He's getting Angel.

Jenny helps Buffy put crosses and stakes into the bag.

Buffy Good. Okay, I'm gonna take the vamps out in the hall. After that you get my mother and the others out the same way.

Giles Let me help you.

Buffy Giles, my mother's in that room. If I don't make it out of here, I know you'll make sure she does.

Giles Bloody right, I will. Fair enough. What's your plan?

Buffy Well, they split up to hold us here, so I'm gonna take 'em one on one. Set 'em up and knock 'em down.

She grabs a stool and positions it under the hole in the ceiling. She gets up on the stool and lifts herself back up.

Giles Watch your back!

Cut to the science classroom. Snyder is pacing.

Joyce Why don't you sit down?

Snyder This is my school. What I say goes, and I say this is **not** happening.

Joyce Well, then I guess the danger's over!

Man I'm not waiting for them to open the doors. I'm gettin' out!

Joyce Don't be an idiot!

Snyder I'm beginning to see a certain mother-daughter resemblance.

The man climbs up to the window and lifts the sash.

Joyce No! Look, you heard what Buffy said!

Snyder She's a student. What does she know?

He takes off his jacket and goes to help the man. The two of them begin bending back the metal slats blocking the window.

Cut to the hall. A vampire throws himself against the science classroom door. It doesn't budge. He sees Spike looking at him.

Vampire Yeah. Door's solid.

Spike Use your head.

He grabs the vampire by the shoulder and shoves his head into a fire emergency case containing an ax. He pulls the ax out, thrusts it into the vampire's hands and continues down the hall. He passes two others pounding on another door.

Spike You! Come with me!

One of the vampires follows him.

Cut to the science classroom. The vampire begins swinging the ax at the door. Joyce casts a worried look at Snyder and the other man. They get two slats bent aside.

Snyder grunts I did it!

The man starts to pull himself through the opening. Snyder helps, but lets go when the man begins to kick and scream while struggling with something outside. Snyder watches as the man is pulled through the window and then steps down. Joyce quickly climbs up, bends the slats back and closes the sash.

Cut to the hall. Spike is listening for activity in the ceiling. He pinpoints her sound. Cut to the ceiling space. Buffy is making her way through it.

Cut outside. The man lies dead on the grass. Xander and Angel see him.

Xander You know a lot about this Spike guy, so, um... you got a plan?

Angel grabs Xander by the throat.

Xander Good plan.

Angel drags him into the building.

Cut to the closet.

Cordelia whispers I think he's gone. *reaches for the door*

Willow whispers He could come back!

Cordelia looks at Willow What are we gonna do?

Willow Pray.

Cut to the ceiling space. Buffy keeps crawling. Cut to the lounge. Spike finds two metal poles and throws one to the other vampire as he goes back into the hall. He listens for a moment and then shoves the pole up into the ceiling. The other vampire follows suit. Cut to the ceiling space. Buffy sees a pole poke through right in front of her. She begins backing up.

Cut to the hall. The vampire has almost chopped through the door to the science classroom. He steps around the corner to warn the other vampire.

Vampire Hey! Guard the door! I'm almost finished!

He goes back to chopping when Buffy breaks through the ceiling behind him. She pulls him down with her as she drops from the ceiling and quickly dispatches him with a stake. Joyce is looking through the hole in the door,

but can't see much of anything. Buffy gets up and looks through the hole.

Joyce Buffy! Are you okay?

Buffy I'm fine, mom.

Joyce Buffy, look, uh, get out of here, okay? We'll be alright!

Buffy Look, just hang on for one more minute until I tell you to open the door.

She quietly makes her way to the other hall, stake in hand. She peeks around the corner and see the other vampire standing there with his back to her. She hears a noise behind her and looks.

Buffy Sheila! Where've you been?

Sheila Sorry I'm late. There's some really weird guys outside.

Buffy Shh! Yeah, I know. They're trying to kill us.

Sheila picks up the ax and smiles This should be fun.

Buffy slowly heads back to the other hall.

Cut to Spike still poking the poles into the ceiling. Angel comes into the hall with Xander. Spike sees him.

Spike Angelus!

Angel wraps his arm around Xander's neck.

Angel Spike!

Spike I'll be damned!

He tosses his pole aside and they greet each other with a hug and a laugh.

Angel I taught you to always guard your perimeter. Tsk, tsk, tsk. You should have someone out there.

Spike I did. I'm surrounded by idiots. What's new with you?

Angel Everything.

Spike Yeah. Come up against this Slayer yet?

Angel She's cute. Not too bright, though. Gave the puppy dog 'I'm all tortured' act. Keeps her off my back when I feed! *laughs*

Spike laughing People still fall for that Anne Rice routine. What a world!

Xander I knew you were lying.

Angel gives Xander a squeeze to shut him up.

Xander Undead liar guy.

Angel grabs him by the hair and shirt and holds up his exposed neck.

Angel Wanna bite before we kill her?

Cut to Buffy. She and Sheila are about to round the corner.

Buffy whispers Stay behind me.

She goes into the other hall and quietly makes her way to the vampire, holding her stake up and ready. Behind her Sheila vamps out and raises the ax.

Part 4

The halls. Sheila raises her ax. Giles sees through the round library door window behind her and yells out a warning.

Giles Buffy! Look out!

She spins around and grabs the ax from Sheila in mid-swing. She swings it around and hits Sheila in the jaw with the butt of the handle. The other vampire attacks and ducks as Buffy swings the ax at him. The ax gets buried in the wall. The vampire smiles as he straightens back up, thinking he avoided her blow, but then looks down at the stake protruding from his chest. He collapses to the floor and bursts into ashes. Buffy looks over at Sheila and watches her run from the hall, then rushes back to the classroom door.

Buffy Mom, now!

Joyce opens the door Okay, come on, let's go!

Everyone rushes out of the classroom and into the library.

Joyce C'mon! Hurry!

Buffy to Giles Get them out!

Joyce You're coming too!

Buffy In a minute! Go! *rushes off*

Joyce watching her go Buffy!

Cut to Spike and Angel.

Spike I haven't seen you in the killing fields for an age.

Angel I'm not much for company.

Spike No, you never were. So, why're you so scared of this Slayer?

Angel Scared?

Spike Yeah. Time was you would've taken her out in a heartbeat. Now look at you. I bet this, uh, tortured thing is an act, right? You're not... housebroken?

Angel I saw her kill the Master. Hey, you think you can take her alone? Be my guest. I'll just feed and run. *roars and bends to Xander's neck*

Spike holds up his hand Don't be silly! We're all friends. We'll do it together. Let's drink to it.

They both slowly lean in to Xander's neck. At the last moment Spike punches Angel in the face, making him stagger back.

Spike You think you can fool me?! You were my sire, man! You were my... Yoda!

Angel Things change.

Spike Not us! Not demons! Man, I can't believe this. You Uncle Tom! *grabs his pole from the floor* Come on, people! This isn't a spectator sport!

The vampires roar and attack. Xander barges out the door behind him and runs. Angel follows as the other vampires give chase. Spike senses someone behind him and looks up.

Spike Fe, fi, fo fum. I smell the blood of a nice ripe turns to face Buffy girl.

Buffy holding the ax Do we really need weapons for this?

Spike I just like them. They make me feel all manly.

He drops the pole and slowly steps toward Buffy. She drops the ax.

Spike The last Slayer I killed... she begged for her life.

Buffy slowly walks to the middle of the hall, watching him intently.

Spike You don't strike me as the begging kind.

Buffy You shouldn'ta come here.

Spike No. I've messed up your doilies and stuff. But I just got so bored. *smirks* I'll tell you what. As a personal favor from me to you I'll make it quick. It won't hurt a bit.

Buffy No, Spike. It's gonna hurt a lot.

They start to fight. Cut outside. Angel and Xander fight the other vampires. Cut to the hall. Buffy and Spike exchange several blows. He throws her into the wall. Cut to the library. Joyce is following everyone out through the stacks when she stops and wonders what happened to her daughter.

Giles Come on, everyone. This way!

Cut outside. Xander avoids several punches and kicks. His own punch misses, and he gets kicked to the ground from behind. Cut to the hall. Buffy and Spike keep fighting. Cut outside. A vampire has Xander by the neck. Angel punches her off of him. The others get up again and run from the fight. Cut to the hall. Buffy ducks a punch and lands four of her own in a row. Spike grabs her arm and shoves her into the wall. She slides down it quickly, and Spike's next punch goes through the wall. She gets behind him and kicks him high and hard in the neck.

Spike Now, that hurt!

He pulls his arm out of the wall, ripping a stud out with it, and swings it into Buffy's face. She flies back and lands on the floor, stunned.

Spike But not as much as this will.

He stands over her and wields back the stud to slam it into her, but he gets hit in the head with the ax. He goes sprawling to the floor and looks up at his attacker. Joyce stands above him with the ax in her hands, ready to swing again.

Joyce You get the hell away from my daughter!

Spike holds the stud above himself to protect against any blows. Buffy gets to her feet.

Spike Women!

He gets up and runs through the lounge and out the broken window.

Joyce exhales and drops the ax Nobody lays a hand on my little girl.

They embrace. Buffy looks out the window.

Cut to later outside. The police are everywhere. The camera pans down to the Police Chief talking to an officer.

Chief Take care of this.

The officer nods and leaves. The Chief walks over to his car. Snyder comes up to him.

Snyder Hello, Bob.

Chief It's over. They all got away. I got a body inside, and I got another one on the south lawn. And it looks like he was pulled right through the window.

Snyder I told him not to go through that window.

Cut to Giles and Jenny coming out of the building.

Jenny Well, another wonderful fun-filled evening.

Giles Uh, yes. You know, um, I will understand if you decide to start avoiding me.

Jenny takes Giles' arm, and they walk off together.

Cut to Angel and Xander.

Xander So, when you gave him my neck to chew on, why didn't you clock him before he had a chance to clock you?

Angel I told you. I couldn't make the first move. I had to see if he was buying it or not.

Xander A-and if he bit me, what then?

Angel We would've known he bought it.

Xander stops as Angel continues on.

Xander Hey, what's the deal with you being Spike's sire? What's a sire?

Cut to Snyder and the Chief.

Chief I need to say something to the media people.

Snyder So?

Chief So? You want the usual story? Gang-related? PCP?

Snyder What'd you have in mind? The truth?

Chief *considers* Right. Gang-related. PCP.

Cut to Buffy and Joyce.

Buffy So, what did you and Principal Snyder talk about anyway?

Joyce Principal Snyder said you were a troublemaker.

Buffy looks down in shame.

Joyce And I could care less.

Buffy looks back up.

Joyce I have a daughter who can take care of herself. Who's brave and resourceful and thinks of others in a crisis. No matter who you hang out with or what dumb teenage stuff you think you need to do, I'm gonna sleep better knowing all that.

Buffy About how long till this wears off and you start ragging on me again?

Joyce Oh, at least a week and a half.

Buffy Very cool!

Cut to later. The last Police car leaves the school. Cut to the hall. The camera pans over to the utility closet. Cut inside. Cordelia is kneeling in prayer. Willow stares at her in disbelief.

Cordelia And if you get me out of this, I swear I'll never be mean to anyone ever again. Unless they **really** deserve it. Or if it's that time of the month, in which case I don't think you or anyone else can hold me responsible...

Willow Ask for some aspirin.

Cordelia And can you please send some asp... Hey!

Cut to morning. The sun comes up over the complex where the vampires gather. The camera pans over to their warehouse. Cut inside. Sunlight is streaming through a high window. Spike is standing by a cage. Drusilla walks around the cage to him.

Drusilla Spike, did she hurt you?

Spike It was close, baby, but...

Drusilla Oh, come here.

She pulls his head down onto her shoulder and strokes his cheek and neck.

Spike A Slayer with family and friends. That sure as hell wasn't in the brochure.

Drusilla You'll kill her, and then we'll have a nice celebration.

Spike Yeah, a party.

Drusilla Yeah. With streamers... and songs.

Spike *lifts his head from her shoulder* How's the annoying one?

Drusilla He doesn't wanna play.

Spike Figures. Well, suppose I better go make nice.

He walks over to Collin and kneels before him.

Collin You failed.

Spike I, uh... I offer penance.

Vampire#2 Penance?! You should lay down your life! Our numbers are depleted, the feast of St. Vigeous has been **ruined** by your impatience!

Spike I was rash, and if I had to do it all over again... *breaks out in laughter* Who am I kidding? *stands up* I would do it exactly the same, only I'd do this... *grabs Collin*

Collin No!

Spike ...first!

He carries Collin over to the cage. Vampire#2 tries to stop him, but Spike kicks back and knocks him out. He sticks Collin in the cage and closes and locks the door. Drusilla watches as Spike starts pulling a chain, lifting the cage up from the floor.

Spike From now on, we're gonna have a little less ritual... *stops pulling the chain* ...and a little more fun around here.

He gives the chain a final strong pull, and the cage is lifted into the sunlight. Collin screams. Drusilla smiles at Spike. He smiles back. They step closer together and hold hands.

Spike Let's see what's on TV.

The camera pans up to the cage as they go. The last residue of Collin is still steaming.

Inca Mummy Girl

Written by **Matt Kiene & Joe Reinkemeyer**

Directed by **Ellen Pressman**

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Inca Mummy Girl". It also includes descriptions of the settings, ac-

tion scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.09.29

This episode was originally broadcast on October 6, 1997.

Copyright (C) 1997 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Outside the museum. Buffy, Willow and Xander are walking past the rose gardens toward the building.

Buffy This is so unfair.

Willow I don't think it's that bad.

Buffy It's the Ueber-suck. Mom could've at least warned me.

Xander Well, a lot of parents are doing it this year. It's part of this whole cultural exchange magilla. The exhibit, the dance...

Willow I have the best costume for the dance!

Buffy A complete stranger in my house for two weeks. I'm gonna be insane! A danger to myself and others within three days, I swear.

Xander I think the exchange student program's cool. *gets a look from Buffy* I do! It's a beautiful melding of two cultures.

Buffy Have you ever done an exchange program?

Xander My dad tried to send me to some Armenians once. Does that count?

They climb the steps to the building entrance and the cultural exchange exhibit. Cut inside. Cordelia and two other girls are looking over the pictures of the exchange students.

Cordelia Ooo! There's mine! Sven. Isn't he lunchable? Mine's definitely the best.

She walks past Buffy.

Buffy What're you lookin' at?

Cordelia Pictures of our exchange students. Look. 100% Swedish, 100% gorgeous, 100% staying at my house! So, how's yours? Visually, I mean.

Buffy I don't know. Guy like?

Xander By guy-like we are talking big, beefy, guy-like girl, right?

Buffy I was just told 'guy'.

Cordelia You didn't look at him first? He could be dogly. You live on the edge. *walks off*

Xander Hold on a sec. So, this person who's living with you for two weeks is a man. With man parts. This is a terrible idea.

Willow What about the beautiful melding of two cultures?

Xander There's no melding, okay? He better keep his parts to himself.

They stop at the end of a row of display cases, and Buffy notices Rodney scraping a mask.

Buffy What's he doing?

Xander Uh, that's Rodney Munson. He's God's gift to the bell curve.

Another student goes up to Rodney and gets growled at.

Xander What he lacks in smarts he makes up in lack of smarts.

Willow You just don't like him 'cause of that time he beat you up every day for five years.

Buffy giggles to herself.

Xander Yeah. I'm irrational that way.

Buffy smiles I better stop him before he gets in trouble.

Willow I got it. The non-violent approach is probably better here. *goes over to Rodney*

Buffy I wasn't gonna use violence. I don't always use violence. *looks up at Xander* Do I?

Xander The important thing is **you** believe that.

Cut to Rodney. He's still scraping the mask.

Rodney What're you... *looks up* Oh. Willow, hi.

Willow That's probably not something you're supposed to be doing. You could get in trouble.

Rodney facetiously Oh, no. And they might kick me outta school?

Willow smiles Are we still on for our chem tutorial tomorrow?

Rodney Yeah. I think I got almost all fourteen natural elements memorized.

Willow There're a hundred and three.

Rodney suddenly looks worried. Cut to the museum guide.

Guide Welcome, students. We shall now proceed into the Incan burial chamber. The human sacrifice is about to begin.

Cut to the entry to the Inca exhibit. They all walk in.

Xander Typical museum trick. Promise human sacrifice, deliver old pots and pans.

Guide Five hundred years ago, the Incan people chose a beautiful teenage girl to become their princess.

They take the steps up to a platform where the Incan stone coffin and mummy are on display.

Willow I hope this story ends with, 'And she lived happily ever after.'

Xander *looks into the coffin* No, I think it ends with, 'And she became a scary, discolored, shriveled mummy.'

Guide The Incan people sacrificed their princess to the mountain god Sebancaya, an offering buried alive for eternity in this dark tomb.

Willow They could've at least wrapped her in those nice white bandages, like in the movies?

Guide The princess remained there protected only by a cursed seal placed there *points to the plate in the*

mummy's hands as a warning to any who would wake her.

Cordelia and a few other girls are still looking at the exchange student pictures and laughing.

Xander So, Buffy, when's exchange-o boy making his appearance?

Buffy His name's Ampata. Gonna be at the bus station tomorrow night.

Xander Ooo. The Sunnydale bus depot. Classy! What a better way to introduce someone to our country than with the stench of urine.

Guide Now, if you'll follow me this way, please.

They all walk past the coffin and follow the guide to the next destination on the tour.

Cut to later. The exhibit is deserted now except for Rodney, who cautiously looks around and makes his way back up to the mummy. He looks into the stone coffin and sees the plate with the seal.

Rodney Aha. Cool.

He reaches in and yanks at the plate, trying to wrest it from the mummy's grip. He gets it out of one hand, and yanks it hard to get it out of the other. It comes loose, and he pulls it up too fast, breaking it against the side of the coffin.

Rodney Oh! Damn!

He reaches in to collect the pieces. The mummy's arms reach up and grab him by the neck. Its eyelids open to reveal empty sockets as it pulls him in closer.

Part 1

Sunnydale High. Students are arriving for school. Cut to the library. Buffy and Giles are training. Xander is studying at the table.

Buffy So, can I go?

Giles I think not.

Buffy lands four hard hits on the training pad Giles is holding. He flinches at her blows, and after she's done puts the pad down in favor of a much thicker one.

Buffy *pouts* How come?

Giles Because you are the Chosen One.

Buffy Mm. Just this once I'd like to be the Overlooked One.

Giles Well, I'm... afraid that is not...

Buffy kicks the pad hard, making Giles stagger back a few steps.

Giles You have responsibilities that other girls do not.

Buffy Oh! I know this one! Slaying entails certain sacrifices, blah, blah, bity blah, I'm so stuffy, gimme a scone.

Giles *sarcastically* It's as if you know me.

Buffy continues kicking. Xander winces at each blow.

Giles Your secret identity is gonna be difficult enough to maintain while this exchange student is living with

you.

Xander gets up and separates them.

Xander Nooot... **with** her. In the same house as her. Am I the only one who's objective enough to make that distinction? *goes to the counter*

Buffy So! I think going to the dance like a normal person would be the best way to keep that secret. Giles, come on, budge! No one likes a non- budge.

Giles doesn't say a word. She steps back and comes at him for an especially hard kick.

Giles FINE!

Buffy stops her kick at the last instant.

Giles Go.

Buffy *smiles* Yay! I win.

Giles I'll just go and introduce my shoulder to a, an icepack.

Xander *hops off of the counter* So, I guess we're dance-bound. Cool. I think I can get my mom's car, so I'm wheel man.

Buffy I thought you were taking Willow.

Xander Well, yeah, I'm gonna take Willow, but I'm not gonna **take** Willow. In the sense of 'take me'. See,

with you we're three and everybody's safe. Without you, we're two.

Buffy Ah, and we enter dateville. Romance, flowers...

Xander Lips.

Willow comes into the library, but Xander's back is to the door so he doesn't see her. Buffy pretends not to notice her.

Buffy Oh, come on. In all the years you've know Willow, you've never thought about her lips?

Xander Buffy, I love Willow.

Willow smiles widely.

Xander And she's my best friend. Which makes her not the kind of girl who I think about her lips that much.

Willow's smile fades to disappointment.

Xander She's the kind of girl that... I'm best friends with.

Willow Hey guys.

Xander Willow! *goes to her* Hi! We were just talkin' about happy things.

He puts his arm around her and pulls her over to Buffy at the table.

Xander Like the three of us going to the dance together. See? *laughs* Happy!

Willow isn't smiling.

Xander Not happy.

Willow No. Uh, oh, y-yes. No. Rodney's missing.

Giles *comes out of his office with an ice pack* Trouble with Mr. Munson again? *puts it on his shoulder*

Willow His parents say he never came home last night.

Buffy Y'know, I don't think I remember seeing Rodney on the bus back from the field trip.

Willow I didn't either. I hope he didn't get in trouble at the museum.

Xander *chuckles* Hey, maybe he awakened the mummy.

Willow *giggles* Right, and it rose from its tomb.

Buffy *smiles* And attacked him. *nods*

Their smiles fade as they all realize that that may not be so far- fetched.

Cut to the Inca exhibit at the museum. They all come walking in.

Willow On the other hand, maybe Rodney just stepped out for a smoke.

Xander For twenty-one hours?

Willow It's addictive, you know.

Giles We'll deal with that when we've... ruled out evil curses.

They climb the steps to the platform where the coffin is on display.

Buffy One day I'm gonna live in a town where evil curses are just generally ruled out without even saying.

Giles There was a seal?

Buffy steps up to the coffin and looks in.

Buffy It was right here. And it's broken. *picks up the largest piece*

Willow Does that mean the mummy's loose?

Buffy No, comfy as ever. *hands the piece to Giles*

Giles Look at this series of pictograms.

A man comes out of nowhere and yells, jumps up behind Xander and swings at him with a knife. Xander ducks the blow and gets behind him. The man swings back the other way again blindly, looks into the coffin and is surprised by what he sees there. Xander jumps onto the man's back. He knocks Xander off, and runs off of the platform and away. Xander quickly gets up.

Xander Okay, I just saved us, right?

Buffy Something did.

Giles Well, we'll fret about the details later. Let's just get out of here before he comes back.

They all hurry down the steps to leave except Willow, who's noticed something about the mummy.

Willow Giles, were the Incas very advanced?

Giles Yes, yes, very.

Willow Did they have orthodontists?

Cut to the mummy. There are metal braces on its teeth.

Cut to the library. They all come in.

Willow Rodney looked like he had been dead for five hundred years. How could that be?

Xander Maybe we should ask that crazy man with the big old knife.

Buffy I don't think he seemed overly chatty.

Willow The way he bolted when he saw Rodney, I'd say he was as freaked as we were.

Giles My resources on this subject are extremely limited. I-I gather that this particular mummy was from the Sebanaya region of eastern Peru. It's very remote. Now, if there's an answer, then it's, it's locked in the...

Buffy ...in the seal.

Giles *looks at the seal* It's gonna take me weeks to... translate these pictograms. Well, we'll start tonight with...

Buffy Ampata!

Giles I was gonna suggest hunting.

Buffy No, I'm late. I told my mom I'd pick him up.

Xander Uh-uh-uh, Buffy? Where are your priorities? Tracking down a mummifying killer or making time for some Latin lover whose stock in trade is the breakage of hearts?

Buffy Ampata's there alone. And I-I don't know how good his English is. He's here from South A... South America. Hey, y'know, maybe he could translate the seal.

Xander Oh, yeah. Fall for the old 'let me translate that ancient seal for ya' come on. Tsh. D'ya know how many times I've used that?

Cut to the bus stations. Ampata is standing there alone waiting and looking around for his ride. He hears a whisper.

Mummy Ampata...

He starts walking in the direction of the voice, passing several parked busses. He hears the voice again, louder this time.

Mummy Ampata...

He walks between two busses, looking around for whoever it is.

Ampata Hello?

He sees the mummy come toward him, and is surprised and frightened but doesn't scream or yell. The mummy reaches out, grabs him by the neck, pulls him in and kisses him. Ampata begins to shrivel and dry up as the mummy draws his life force from him.

Cut to later. Buffy, Willow and Xander arrive at the bus station and look for him.

Buffy Forty minutes late. Welcome to America!

Willow What if he left already?

Willow finds the door to the station building locked.

Buffy calls out Ampata? Ampata Gutierrez?

Xander So, do we have to speak Spanish when we see him? 'Cause I don't know anything much besides Doritos and Chihuahua.

Buffy Ampata?

Ampata Here!

The mummy had regained her appearance of a young teenage girl. She comes walking out from between two busses.

Ampata Hello.

Xander is instantly taken with her beauty. She comes over and stands before them.

Ampata I am Ampata.

Xander Ay caramba! I can also say that!

Buffy and Willow are also surprised to find that Ampata is a girl. Willow looks up at Xander and sees how he's looking at her.

Part 2

The Summers house. Buffy is showing Ampata around the house.

Buffy Dining room...

They come into the kitchen from the dining room.

Buffy And this *turns on the light* is the kitchen.

Ampata *amazed* It's very good!

Buffy Yeah, you got your stove, your fridge, it's fully functional. We're very into it.

Xander *slow and over-pronounced* Would you like a drink? *gestures*

Buffy *opens the fridge* Uh, let's see, we've got milk, and, uh, oh, older milk... Juice?

Ampata Please.

Willow So, Ampata. You're a girl.

Ampata Yes. For many years now.

Willow And not a boy, 'cause we thought a boy was coming, and here ya are in a girl way!

Xander It's just one of those crazy mix-ups, Will.

Buffy So, have you ever been to America before? *sets out glasses*

Ampata Uh, I, I have toured.

Xander *slow English again* Where did... you go?

Buffy gives Willow a look, and goes to get something to munch on as Willow pours the juice.

Ampata I was taken to Atlanta, Boston, New York.

Willow New York! That's exciting. What was that like?

Ampata I did not see so much.

Xander Your English is... very bueno.

Buffy and Willow exchange another look at Xander's deliberately slow speech.

Ampata I listened much.

Xander Well, that works out well, because I talk much. *they laugh*

Cut to later in Buffy's room. Ampata sits down on her bed, surprised at the springiness of it.

Buffy Hey! Sorry about the teeniness of the room.

Ampata My old one was much smaller.

Buffy *sits on her bed* What's it like back home?

Ampata Cramped, and... very dead.

Buffy Well, you'll feel right at home in Sunnydale.

Ampata Oh, no! Ohhhh! *gets up* But... but you have so **much** here! *picks up a picture*

Buffy How 'bout friends?

Ampata They are... *puts the picture down* It is just me.

Buffy I've been there. But, hey! You'll meet lots of people tomorrow.

Ampata Thank you. *goes back to her bed* You must teach me everything about your life. I want to fit in, Buffy. Just like you. A normal life.

Buffy One normal life. Comin' up.

She reaches over to turn off her light. Cut outside. The man from the museum is hidden there looking in through the window from the bushes.

Cut to outside the school the next morning. Cordelia and Devon come down some stairs to Oz's van.

Cordelia Devon, I told you I'd be at the dance tonight, but I am **not** one of your little groupies. I won't be all doe-eyed looking up at you, standing at the edge of the stage.

Devon Got it.

Cordelia So, I'll see you afterwards?

Devon Sure. Where do you wanna meet?

Cordelia I'll be standing at the edge of the stage.

Devon *looks over at Sven* With that guy?

Cordelia *looks also* Sven! Momento! Needa! *to Devon* This whole student exchange thing has been a horrible nightmare. They don't even speak American. So, I'll see you later? *she allows him a kiss on the cheek* Bye!

She starts back up the stairs toward the school. She turns back when she notices that Sven isn't following.

Cordelia Sven! Come?

Sven starts to follow her. Devon smirks and goes over to Oz, who's dealing with their equipment.

Devon Oz, man! What do you think?

Oz Of what?

Devon Cordelia, man!

Oz She's a wonderland tour.

Devon You gotta admit, the girl is hot!

Oz Yeah, she's a hot girl.

Devon Let me guess: not your type? What does a girl have to do to impress you?

Oz Well, it involves a feathered boa and a theme to 'A Summer Place'. I can't discuss it here.

Devon You're too picky, man. Do you know how many girls you could have? You're lead guitar, Oz. It's currency!

Oz I'm not picky. You're just impressed by any pretty girl that can walk and talk.

Devon She doesn't have to talk.

Oz just smirks.

Cut to Willow and Xander walking.

Willow I worked really hard on my costume. It's pretty cool.

Xander Okay, but what about me? I've gotta think.

Willow Well, it's a celebration of cultures. There are lots of dress- up alternatives.

Xander And a corresponding equal number of mocking alternatives. All aimed at me.

Willow Bavarians are cool.

Xander Okay, no shirts with ruffles, no hats with feathers and definitely no lederhosen. They make my calves look fat.

Willow Why are you suddenly so worried about looking like an idiot? That came out wrong.

Xander didn't take offense because he's too busy looking at Buffy and Ampata arriving for school. Willow notices and looks also. Cut to Buffy and Ampata.

Buffy Your first day of school. Nervous?

Ampata It is just more people than I have seen in a long time.

Buffy Ah, don't worry. You will have no problems making friends. As a matter of fact, I know someone who's dying to meet you.

Cut to the library. Giles gets right to it.

Giles *shakes her hand, smiles* How do you do?

Ampata Hi.

Giles I was, I was wondering if you could, um, translate this? *shows her the seal*

Buffy That was in no way awkward.

Ampata takes it and looks at it in disbelief.

Buffy Something wrong?

Ampata Uh, No! Uh, it is... Uh, why are you asking me?

Giles Well, uh, uh... *coughs* It's, well, it's an artifact... from, from, uh, your... region. I-it's, uh, from the tomb of a-an Incan mummy, a-a-actually. We were trying to translate it, uh, um, as a-a project for our, um...

Willow Our archeology club.

Giles *impressed with her quick thinking* Very good.

Ampata It is broken. Where are the other pieces?

Buffy That's all we found.

Ampata Hmm. It is very old and valuable. *to Giles, holding the seal out to him* You should hide it!

Giles Is, is, uh, anything you recognize here? Um, um, this, this, um... this ch-chap here with the knife, for instance?

Ampata Well, I-I do not know exactly, but... I-I-I think this represents, I believe the word is... 'bodyguard'?

Giles *takes the seal* Bodyguard? Interesting.

Ampata Legend has it that he guards the mummy against those who would disturb her.

Giles Well, uh, yes, well, that's, um, that's a very good starting point for our, um... club. *looks at Buffy* Um...

Buffy Oh, and, uh, a-as club president, I have, um, lots to do. Lots of... stuff. Dull stuff. Uh, oh, Willow, maybe you could...

Xander Stay with Ampata for the day. I'd love to. *bows slightly and smiles*

Ampata *smiles* Yes! That will be fun.

Xander gestures for Ampata to go ahead of him. As she walks out he turns to Buffy and Willow, lets out a breath, and follows her. Willow watches them go.

Giles Right. I'll, uh, continue with the translation. Buffy, you research this, uh, bodyguard thing, and, uh, Willow... *turns around* Willow?

Willow *still staring after them* Boy. They really like each other.

Cut to the bleachers on the football field. Xander and Ampata are sitting about two-thirds of the way up.

Xander And this *reaches into his satchel* is called a snack food. *holds up a Twinkie*

Ampata Snack food?

Xander Yeah. It's a delicious, spongy, golden cake stuffed with a delightful creamy, white substance of goodness. And here's how you eat it.

He stuffs the whole thing into his mouth. Ampata laughs at the sight.

Xander Mm-hm.

Ampata Oh, but now I cannot try it.

Xander *with a full mouth* That's why you bring two. *He produces another one from his bag and hands it to her.*

Ampata Oh! *studies it* Here goes!

She pulls her windswept hair back from her face and proceeds to stuff most of the Twinkie into her mouth. She laughs with delight.

Xander *mouth still full* Good, huh? And the exciting part is that they have no ingredients that a human can pronounce. So it doesn't leave you with that heavy... food feeling in your stomach.

She squeals with laughter.

Ampata *mouth full* You are strange.

Xander Girls always tell me that. Right before they run away.

Ampata I like it!

Xander I like you like it!

She can't help but laugh more at that.

Xander Please, don't learn from my English.

Cut to the library. Buffy is inspecting the seal under a magnifying lamp.

Buffy Ha! Or possible ha. *to Willow* Do you think this matches?

Willow is off in her own world, idly playing with her stuffed frog.

Buffy Hey!

Willow Oh! Yes. I'm caring about mummies.

Buffy Ampata's only staying two weeks.

Willow Yeah. And then Xander can find someone else who's not me to obsess about. At least with you I knew he didn't have a shot. Well, you know, I have a choice. I can spend my life waiting for Xander to go out with every other girl in the world until he notices me, or I can just get on with my life.

Buffy Good for you.

Willow Well, I didn't choose yet.

Giles *inspecting the seal* Good Lord! *to Buffy* Good work!

Buffy My work?

Giles Yes. This is most illuminating. It seems Rodney's killer might be the mummy.

Willow Where does it say that?

Giles Well, here. It implies that the mummy is capable of... feeding on the life force of a person, effectively freeze-drying them, you might say. Extraordinary.

Buffy So, then we just have to stop the mummy. Which leads to the **question** how do we a) find, and b) stop the mummy?

Giles Well, the answer to that is somewhere still in here. Or in the rest of the seal.

Cut outside to the bleachers. The bodyguard attacks Xander with his large knife. Ampata screams as she and Xander quickly move apart and the knife hits the seat between them.

Bodyguard You stole the seal! Where is it?!

He swings again, but Xander scoots back more and then rolls down two levels of seats. The bodyguard comes at him again and tries to stab him, but Xander catches his arm and stops him. Ampata screams again. The bodyguard looks back at her and recognizes her.

Bodyguard It is you!

Xander kicks him off, and he rolls down the bleachers and to the ground. Ampata grabs Xander's satchel, helps him up and they run away.

Cut to the library. Giles comes out of his office with a cup of tea, and sets it on the table in front of Ampata.

Giles Here you are.

Ampata Thank you.

Willow Why's this guy so into us? I mean, what's he want?

Xander He said, 'Give me the seal.'

Giles Apparently this is more popular than we realized. I just don't know what we, we should do with it.

Ampata Destroy it. *gets a surprised look from Giles* If you do not, someone could die.

Giles I'm afraid someone already has.

Ampata You mean the man with the knife killed someone?

Buffy Uh, no. Well, not exactly.

Ampata You are not telling me everything. *looks at them all*

Xander You're right, Ampata. *takes her hand* And it's time we do. We're not an archeology club. We're in, uh... *Giles interrupts by clearing his throat. Buffy gives him a stern look.*

Xander We're in the crime club. Which is kinda like the chess club, only with crime, and, um... no chess.

Ampata Please understand me. That seal nearly got us killed. It must be destroyed!

She gets up and runs from the library. A moment later Xander gets up and runs out after her.

Xander Ampata!

Buffy and Willow look at each other a bit surprised and confused.

Cut to the hall. Ampata is sitting on a bench. Xander crouches down beside her.

Xander Ampata, listen to me. Nobody's gonna hurt you. I won't let them.

Ampata Your investigation is dangerous. I do not want that. Just normal life!

She gets up and goes over to the drinking fountain. Xander stands back up and follows her, but stays back and

lets her drink. Willow comes out of the library.

Willow Is she okay?

Xander Wiggled. I'm tryin' to convince her that our lives aren't just danger and peril around here.

Willow looks over at Ampata sympathetically, then back to Xander.

Willow You should take her to the dance.

Xander That's a good idea! We'll all go!

Willow No, I mean just you.

Xander But you were psyched! And your costume!

Willow I'll see you there.

Xander You know what, Willow? You're my best friend.

He goes over to Ampata.

Willow I know. *walks off*
Cut to the library.

Buffy I don't get it. Why would the bodyguard have such a jones for a broken piece of rock?

Giles Well, um, perhaps... he needs to put it together with the other pieces.

Buffy If he has them. I mean, we didn't find them.

Giles And if he didn't then, then they'd still be at the museum.

Buffy So, maybe we should go there and find them. And odds are he'll show up, too, right?

Giles And hopefully we'll be ready.

Buffy Hey! Look at us! We came up with a plan. A good plan.

Giles Alright. We'll meet there tonight after it closes.

Buffy No! Bad plan. I have other plans. Dance plans. *gets a stern look from Giles exhales* Canceled plans.

Cut to the stairs in the halls. Xander and Ampata are coming down.

Xander Okay, I have something to tell you. And it's kind of a secret, and it's, um, a little bit scary. I like you. A lot. And I want you to go to with me the dance.

Ampata *laughs* Why was that so scary?

Xander Well, because you never know if a girl's gonna say 'yes', or if... she's gonna laugh in your face and pull out your still beating heart and crush it into the ground with her heel.

Ampata Hmm. Then you are very courageous. Can I tell you a secret?

Xander Hmm.

Ampata I like you, too.

Xander Really?

Ampata Really!

Xander That's great! Really?

Ampata Really!

Xander That's great! You're not a praying mantis, are you? *gets a confused look from her* Sorry, someone else.

Ampata I will return to you. *starts away*

Xander Where're you going?

Ampata Where you cannot follow.

He's confused but smiles when he sees her open the girls' restroom door.

Xander I'll wait outside. *smiles*

He sits down on a bench to wait.

Cut inside the restroom. Ampata touches up her lipstick. She steps back from the mirror and sees the bodyguard standing behind her.

Ampata I beg you... *turns to face him* Do not kill me.

Bodyguard You are already dead. For five hundred years.

Ampata But it was not fair. I was innocent.

Bodyguard The people you kill now so that you may live, they are innocent.

Ampata Please! I am in love!

Bodyguard You are the Chosen One. You must die. You have no choice.

He takes a swing at her with his knife. She grabs his arm and twists, forcing him around and pulling him in to her. He looks up at her as she puts her arm around his neck and pulls him in for a kiss.

Ampata Yes, I do.

She kisses him and he mummifies in her arms as she draws out his life force. Cut to the hall. Xander is waiting patiently. Ampata comes back out smiling, and Xander stands up.

Ampata I have thought. The dance?

Xander nods expectantly.

Ampata I will go with you.

Xander breaks into a big smile and laughs delightedly.

Ampata Gladly!

Xander takes her by the hand, and they start walking down the hall.

Part 3

Buffy's room. Ampata comes in wearing her Inca Princess costume.

Ampata Buffy, I do not have any lipstick.

She sees a trunk, a large suitcase and a backpack in the room.

Buffy Oh! You can borrow one of mine. There should be some on the desk.

Ampata What is that? *indicates the trunk*

Buffy The station sent the rest of your stuff.

Ampata Oh. Of, of course. I, I forgot all about it. Uh, I will unpack it later.

Buffy No worries. I can do it.

Ampata Uh, but... you must get ready for the dance!

Buffy I'm not going.

Ampata Why not?

Buffy I have work to do. Crime club work. It's really nothing for you to worry about. *sits on her bed*

Ampata Oh, I am not worried, thanks to Xander. *goes to the desk*

Buffy He seems very happy around you.

Ampata *sits at the desk* I am happy, too.

She opens a lipstick and holds it up for an opinion.

Ampata Mm, this one?

Buffy Ooo, no, that clashes. There should be a gold one in there somewhere.

Ampata Thank you. You are always thinking of others before yourself. **You remind me of someone from very long ago** the Inca Princess.

Buffy Cool! A princess.

She gets up from her bed and opens Ampata's backpack while Ampata tries out a lipstick.

Ampata They told her that she was the only one. That only she could defend her people from the nether world.

Buffy pulls out a pair of boy's briefs and looks at them in confusion.

Ampata Out of all the girls in her generation...

Buffy looks over at Ampata and sees she's about to open the top left drawer where she keeps her Slayer stuff. She rushes over. Ampata pulls open the drawer and looks in curiously.

Ampata ...she was the only one...

Buffy quickly pushes the drawer closed.

Buffy ...chosen.

Ampata *looks up at Buffy* Do you know the story?

Buffy It's fairly familiar. *hands her the gold lipstick*

Ampata She was sixteen, like us. She was offered as a sacrifice and went to her death. Who knows what she had to give up to fulfill her duty to others? What chance at love?

Buffy Who knows? *goes back to Ampata's trunk* I'll just unpack the rest of your stuff for you. *lifts the lid*

Ampata No, really, let me...

The doorbell rings and distracts Buffy, so she doesn't see the mummified corpse in the trunk.

Buffy Oh!

She lets the lid fall back down as she gets up to get the door.

Buffy That's Xander and Willow. I'll get it.

Ampata kneels down and puts the lock back on the trunk.

Cut downstairs. Buffy hops down and opens the door. Xander comes in dressed as Clint Eastwood in a spaghetti western.

Xander I've come for the dance.

Buffy And, uh, what culture are you?

Xander I'm from the country of Leone. It's in Italy pretending to be Montana. *looks Buffy up and down* And where are you from? The country of White Trash?

Buffy Mm. New line-up. You and Willow are taking Ampata. Giles and I are hunting mummies. Where's you and Willow?

Xander She's not coming... with us.

Buffy Oh! On a date. Romance, lips...

Xander takes off his hat when he sees Ampata appear on the stairs. She smiles down at him.

Ampata Hello, Xander.

Xander Hho hee ze thee ai uh...

Buffy I can translate American salivating boy talk. He says you're beautiful.

Xander *to Buffy* Hyav su.

Buffy You're welcome.

Ampata reaches the bottom of the stairs and stands next to Xander, beaming a huge smile. Joyce comes in to have a look.

Joyce Ampata, don't you look wonderful! Oh, I wish you could talk my daughter into going with you.

Ampata I tried, but she is very stubborn.

Joyce Well, I'm glad someone else sees that.

Buffy gives her mother a look and gets it right back. She turns back to Xander and Ampata, smiling.

Ampata Well, good night, then.

Buffy opens the door to let them out. Xander pauses a moment.

Xander Be careful.

Buffy I will. *Xander turns to go* Hey! *he turns back* You look good.

Xander gives her a smile and then leaves. Joyce comes over to the door to watch them go, too.

Joyce Look at that. Two days in America, and Ampata already seems like she belongs here. She's really fitting in. Hmm! *turns and heads up the stairs*

Buffy Yeah. How 'bout that?

Cut to the Bronze. Devon and Oz's band Dingoes Ate My Baby Four Star Mary are playing "Shadows".

Lyrics She's in ecstasy / Her hollowed sky / Pours down heavenly / Fakes desire

A group of girls enters the Bronze. Cordelia comes in behind them and stops to look around.

Lyrics I've been living here / In the red / I've been feeling / I'm dead again

She spots Willow wearing her Eskimo costume.

Cordelia Oh! Near faux pas! I almost wore the same thing.

She continues on her way, leaving Willow standing there alone.

Lyrics We've been bored before
Cordelia finds her friend Dawn.

Cordelia Hey!

Dawn Where's Sven?

Cordelia Ohhh, I keep trying to ditch him. He's like one of those dogs that you leave at the Grand Canyon on vacation? It follows you back across four states. *Sven finds them* See? My own speechless, human boomerang.

Lyrics I have never felt so alone

Dawn He's kinda cute. Maybe it's nice skippin' all that small talk.

Cordelia Small talk? How 'bout simple instruction?

Lyrics Since the time we left ourselves / Half past gone

Cordelia *to Sven* Get punchy. *points at him* You! Fruit drinky!

Lyrics We've been living here / Up against the red

Dawn He can follow me. *takes Sven's hand and leads him away*

Lyrics I've been feeling / I'm dead again / We've been bored before

Xander and Ampata arrive. He takes her hand.

Lyrics We'll be bored again / We've been bored before and again

Ampata looks around and sees Willow in her Eskimo outfit as Xander leads her to the dance floor. Willow is heartbroken to see them together like that.

Willow I think I should've worn something sexy.

Xander spots her and leads Ampata over to her table.

Willow Wow. You guys look great.

Ampata I-I love your costume. It's, it's very authentic.

Willow Thanks.

Xander Yeah, you look, um... snug.

Willow That's what I was going for. Where's Buffy?

Lyrics She's in ecstasy / Her hollowed sky

Willow looks around stiffly. She can hardly move in her outfit.

Cut to the Summers house. Buffy opens the door for Giles.

Giles Thank heavens you're home. *walks in*

Buffy Yup! Not at the dance. Not with my friends. Not with a life. What are you doing here? I thought we were gonna meet at the museum to find the bodyguard.

Giles No, he's already been found. In a school restroom. Mummified.

Buffy Okay, I don't get it. Why would the mummy kill her own bodyguard?

Giles Well, I've cross-referenced, and, uh, I've looked at the pictograms anew. He was a guard alright. But it was his job to insure that the mummy didn't awaken and escape.

Buffy So, Ampata translated wrong.

Giles Perhaps.

Buffy Hold on a sec. She was wiggy about the seal from minute one.

Giles Yes, I suppose she was.

Buffy Her trunks! *runs up the stairs*

Giles I beg your pardon?

Cut to Buffy's room. Giles goes through Ampata's things.

Giles It's certainly all boys' clothes. Why would a girl pack these?

Buffy tears open the lock on the trunk and lifts the lid.

Buffy How 'bout this one? What kind of girl travels with a mummified corpse? And doesn't even pack a lipstick?

Cut to the Bronze. The band is playing a new song, "Fate".

Lyrics Time's healing, I'm ahead / Find a reason once again / Take a moment outta time / I'll be standing back behind

Cut to Xander standing by the stairs with Ampata.

Xander Do you, um... Would you like to, uh... you know...

Lyrics On a wing, so outta line

Ampata I'd love to dance.

He removes his hat and poncho, takes her hand and leads her onto the dance floor.

Lyrics Mm, taken in, so outta time

Willow watches longingly as they walk by her. On the dance floor Xander and Ampata touch hands and slowly intertwine their fingers. Xander smiles at her. Ampata lets go of Xander's hand and slowly moves it around his neck. Cut to the stage. Oz notices a girl in the crowd and stares intently.

Oz Hey.

Devon comes over to him.

Oz That girl. Who is she?

Devon thinks he means Ampata.

Devon She's an exchange student. I think she's from South America.

Oz No, not her. The Eskimo!

Devon goes back to continue singing. Oz is enamored of Willow.

Lyrics Sound the season in my head

Cut to Giles' car.

Buffy Come on! Can't you put your foot down?

Giles It is down.

Buffy One of these days you're gonna have to get a grownup car.

Giles grinds the gears. Buffy shakes her head.

Cut to the dance floor. Xander is looking deeply into Ampata's eyes as they slow dance.

Lyrics ...so outta time / All it takes is living / I want to fly *Ampata leans her head onto his cheek for a moment.*

Lyrics I've never known fate

She pulls her head back and looks back into Xander's eyes.

Lyrics I've never known your name

They move in to kiss.

Lyrics I've never known fate

As they are about to meet, Ampata notices her hand begin to mummify again and pulls back. Xander looks at her in wide-eyed confusion. The song is almost over. She quickly takes her arms off of his shoulders and rushes off. Xander stares after her, thoroughly confused.

Xander Okay, at least I can rule out something I said.

Lyrics Someone take me home / Get me outta here
Ampata reaches the edge of the crowd and looks round. She sees Jonathan sitting alone on the stairs. Cut to Giles' car.

Buffy I should've guessed. Remember Ampata wanted us to hide the seal?

Giles And then she wanted us to destroy it because... Oh wait!

Buffy Uh, waiting...

Giles Well, we already know that the seal was used to contain the mummy. If breaking it freed her...

Buffy ...reassembling it will trap her.

Giles I'll go to the museum. I'll drop you off. I'll try to piece together the fragments there.

Buffy Okay, I'll still get Xander. Before he gets smoochy with Mummy Dearest.

Cut to the Bronze. Xander comes off of the dance floor and stops by Willow.

Xander Have you seen Ampata? *Willow shrugs* What was that?

Willow I shrugged.

Xander Next time you should probably say 'shrug'. *walks off looking*

Willow *watches him go* Sigh.

Sven and Dawn walk by in front of her.

Sven I thought this exchange student thing would be a great deal. But look what I got stuck with! 'Momento!' 'Punchy fruity drinky!' Is Cordelia even from this country?

Cut to a back room. Ampata has led Jonathan backstage. She takes off his hat and strokes his hair and cheek.

Jonathan Your hands feel kinda... rough.

More of her skin is reverting to its mummy form. She moves in for a kiss.

Jonathan Aren't you with Xander?

Ampata *whispers* Does it look like I'm with Xander? *They move in to kiss. Xander calls out, looking for her.*

Xander Ampata!

Jonathan pulls away from her and grabs his hat.

Jonathan That's my cue to leave.

He runs from the room. She stands by the window, looking out. Xander finds her.

Xander There you are. Why'd you run away? *She slowly turns to face him.*

Ampata Because... I do not deserve you.

Xander What, you think that you don't deserve me? *laughs* Man, I love you!

She sheds a few tears and looks up at him sorrowfully. His smile fades.

Xander Are those tears of joy? Pain? Revulsion? *comes closer*

Ampata *crying* I am very happy. And very sad.

Xander Then talk to me. Let me know what's wrong.

Ampata I can't!

She hugs him and cries into his shoulder.

Xander Hey, I know why you can't tell me. *pushes her away to look at her* It's a secret, right? *she nods* And if you told me, you'd have to kill me. *smiles* *She doesn't think it's funny, and hugs him again, crying even harder.*

Xander Oh! That was a bad joke. And the delivery was off, too. I'm sorry. *pushes her away again* I, uh... *He strokes her hair and face gently.*

Xander I'm sorry.

They kiss gently yet tentatively. She reaches her arm around his head and pulls him closer for a harder kiss. His eyes go wide with shock and surprise as he feels his life force begin to drain.

Part 4

The back room at the Bronze. Xander's life force continues to drain. Suddenly Ampata breaks off the kiss, letting Xander fall to the floor.

Ampata No! I can't.

Xander is drained of strength and takes quick, short breaths. She kneels down and pulls him around, laying his head in her lap.

Ampata Xander, I'm so sorry.

Cut to the museum. Giles is reading from a book while assembling the seal.

Giles 'Incan Cosmology unites the bird head with its

paler twin.' *looks around for the proper piece* Um... Oh! Here. Its paler twin.

He tries the fit of the piece, and it's a match.

Cut to the back room at the Bronze. Ampata senses something is wrong.

Ampata The seal!

She lets Xander fall to the floor and runs out of the room. Cut to Willow. Buffy finds her.

Buffy Where's Xander?

Willow He's looking for Ampata.

Buffy We need to find him. Ampata's the mummy.

Willow Oh. *absorbs the information and smiles* Good. *realizes its implication* Xander!

Buffy Where'd they go?

Willow Backstage, I think.

They rush off to find Xander just as Oz comes up to them.

Oz Hey, I... *watches them go in surprise, then smiles* Who is that girl?

Cut to the hall backstage. They find Xander on the floor leaning against the wall.

Buffy Are you okay?

Xander *weakly* I think so. Boy, that was some kiss!

Buffy Where's Ampata?

Xander She said something about the seal.

Buffy The seal! Giles! C'mon.

They help him up.

Xander What's goin' on?

Willow He doesn't know?

Buffy We'll tell him on the way.

Cut to the museum. Giles is trying to put the last pieces of the seal together. Ampata sneaks a peek in from the exhibit entryway and sees him there. She quietly makes her way over to him.

Giles There, that's it. *sniffles* Just one more piece.

Ampata reaches around his shoulder from behind and pulls him up. She takes the seal from his hand and throws it to the floor, smashing it to pieces. She grabs him by the neck and lifts him onto the rim of the stone coffin. Buffy arrives.

Buffy I'll say one thing for you Incan mummies. *Ampata looks at her* You don't kiss and tell.

She makes a long, high leap onto the platform and adopts a fighting stance.

Ampata Looks like you've been keeping secrets from me! *shoves Giles into the coffin* You're not a normal girl.

Buffy And you are?

She does a roundhouse kick to Ampata's face and another kick to her side. She throws a punch, but Ampata is strong, too, and catches Buffy's fist and swings her around onto the rim of the coffin. She grabs Buffy's neck and tries to choke her. Buffy headbutts Ampata, making her stagger back. She tries to kick but Ampata ducks it. Buffy lunges for her, and Ampata grabs her by the shoulder and diverts her into the coffin. She closes the stone lid on the two of them. Willow comes running in as Ampata starts to leave. She grabs Willow by the neck and picks her up.

Ampata This won't hurt!

Willow begins to choke. Ampata moves in to kiss her.

Xander Let her go! *calmly walks in* If you're gonna kiss anybody, it should be me.

Ampata Xander, we can be together. *looks at Willow* Just... just let me have this one.

Xander That's never gonna happen.

Ampata I must do it. I must do it now! Or it is the end for me and for us!

She tries to kiss Willow again, but Xander jumps in to stop her.

Xander NO! *pulls Willow away from her* You want life? You're gonna have to take mine. Can you do that?

Ampata looks into his eyes as she considers. Her skin has mummified up to her neck.

Ampata Yes!

She grabs his neck and tries to pull him to her as he holds her away by her arms. Buffy kicks at the lid of the coffin and gets it open. Xander keeps holding Ampata at bay and watches as she turns back into a mummy. Buffy comes up behind Ampata and pulls her off of Xander. His grip on her arms is so tight that they are torn from their sockets. Xander is freaked out and drops them. Buffy looks at Ampata's body and drops it, too. The head breaks off of the body as it hits the floor. Buffy is grossed out. Willow just stares at what's left, then looks at Xander and comes over to him. She crouches down next to him, holding his arm and rubbing his shoulder. He looks up at her a moment, then back down at his hands. Giles is out of the coffin now, and he and Buffy collect them to go. Giles looks back briefly as they leave the exhibit.

Cut to school the next day. Buffy and Xander walk along the colonnade.

Xander *exhales* I'm really the Fun-Talking Guy today, huh? Sorry.

Buffy That's okay. You don't have to talk.

Xander I just, present company excluded, I have the worst taste in women of anyone in the world, ever.

Buffy Ampata wasn't evil. At least not to begin with, and... I-I do think she cared about you.

Xander Yeah, but I think that whole sucking the life out of people thing would have been a strain on the relationship.

Buffy She was gypped. She was just a girl, and she had her life taken away from her.

They stop and look at each other.

Buffy I remember how I felt when I heard the prophecy that I was gonna die. I wasn't exactly obsessed with doing the right thing.

Xander Yeah, but you did. You gave up your life.

Buffy I had you to bring me back.

They give each other thin smiles for a moment before continuing on.

Reptile Boy

Written by **David Greenwalt**

Directed by: **David Greenwalt**

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB television network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Reptile Boy". It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes

and camera movements where I felt they were needed. I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.09.30

This episode was originally broadcast on October 13, 1997.

Copyright (C) 1997 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

The Summers house at night. Cut to Xander in Buffy's room. Weird Hindi music and singing is coming from the TV.

Xander Is she dying?

The camera pans past Willow over to Buffy. She and Xander are lying on the bed. Willow is sitting on the floor letting them braid her hair.

Buffy I think she's singing.

Xander To a telephone in Hindi. Now that's entertainment!

The Hindi woman on TV dances around the room while singing into the phone.

Xander Why is she singing?

Willow She's sad because her lover gave her twelve gold coins, but then the wizard cut open the bag of salt, and now the dancing minions have nowhere to put their big maypole... fish thing. *takes a sip of her drink*

Xander Uh-huh. Why is she singing?

Buffy Her lover? I thought that was her chiropractor.

Willow Because of that thing he did with her feet? No, that was personal.

Xander Hmm. And we thought just because we didn't have any money or anyplace to go this would be a lack-luster evening.

Willow I know! We could go to the Bronze and sneak in our own tea bags and ask for hot water. *smiles*

Xander Hop off the outlaw train, Will, before you land us all in jail.

Buffy I, for one, am giddy and up. There's a kinda hush all over Sunnydale. No demons or vampires to slay, I'm here with my friends... *tilts her head at the TV* So, how does the water buffalo fit in again?

Xander shakes his head.

Cut to the lawn in front of the Delta Zeta Kappa fraternity house. The camera pans along the grass and then up to the house.

Cut to the balcony. A girl crashes through the glass door. She rolls over the balcony railing and doesn't hesitate to drop to the ground below. A fraternity brother in a dark hooded robe rushes out onto the balcony after her. When he sees that she jumped he quickly goes back inside.

Cut to the girl on the ground now. She gets up, apparently not hurt in the fall, and begins to run as fast as she can. Five brothers, all wearing robes, come streaming out of the house after her. She runs into the trees, looks around for which way to go and makes tracks for the wall to the north. Just as she reaches it she trips and falls, but quickly gets up, climbs a low tree branch and jumps over to the wall. She shimmies over the top and drops down the other side into the cemetery. The fraternity brothers follow her over the wall one by one. She runs through the cemetery for all she's worth as the boys give chase. One of the brothers is waiting ahead of her, and she runs into him and screams.

Richard Callie! Callie, where're you going? The party's just getting started.

She sobs uncontrollably as he shoves her over to the others, and they take her away. He has a look around to make sure no one saw, pulls his hood over his head and follows them back to the house.

Part 1

Sunnydale High School. Cut to the hall. Cordelia is demonstrating her fake laugh to another girl.

Cordelia *fake laughter* See? Dr. Debi says when a man is speaking you make serious eye contact, and you really, really listen, and you laugh at everything he says. *laughs again*

Cut to the stairs. Willow and Buffy come down and head down the hall.

Willow You dreamed about Angel again?

Buffy Third night in a row.

Willow What did he do in the dream?

Buffy Stuff.

Willow *smiles wide* Oh! Stuff! *Buffy smiles* Was it one of those vivid dreams where you could feel his lips and smell his hair?

Buffy It had surroundsound. I'm just thinking about him so much lately.

Willow You two are so right for each other. Except for the, uh...

Buffy Vampire thing.

Willow That doesn't make him a bad person. Necessarily.

Buffy I'm brainsick. I can't have a relationship with him.

Willow Not during the day, but you could ask him for coffee some night. It's the non-relationship drink of choice.

Xander comes out of a classroom, sees them and hurries to catch up.

Willow It's not a date, it's a caffeinated beverage. Okay, sure, it's hot and bitter like a relationship that way, but...

Xander What's like a relationship?

Buffy Nothing I have. Coffee?

Xander Huh?

He stops by Cordelia as Willow and Buffy get a drink at the fountain.

Cordelia *to the girl* There's really no comparison between college men and high school boys. *looks up at Xander* I mean, look at that.

Xander So, Cor, you're datin' college guys now.

Cordelia Well, not that it's any of your business, but I happen to be dating a Delta Zeta Kappa.

Xander Oh! An extra-terrestrial. So that's how you get a date after you exhausted all the human guys.

Cordelia You'll go to college someday, Xander. I just know your pizza delivery career will take you so many exciting places.

Xander has no comeback for that, and joins the girls at the drinking fountain. Buffy and Willow have smiles on their faces from overhearing. The bell rings.

Buffy *remembering* Oh! I told Giles I'd meet him in the library ten minutes ago! Aw, he won't be upset. There hasn't been much paranormal activity lately.

She heads for the library.

Cut to the library. Giles paces while he lectures her.

Giles Just because the paranormal is more normal and less... para of late is no excuse for tardiness or letting your guard down.

Buffy I haven't let my guard down.

Giles Oh, really? You yawned your way through weapons training last week, you, you, you, you skipped hand-to-hand entirely... Are you gonna be prepared if a demon springs up behind you and does this?

He swings his arm over her shoulder from behind, but she grabs it and pulls it behind his back, forcing him to bend over and wince in pain. She has a bored look on her face.

Giles *in pain* Yeah, well, I'm, I'm not a demon. Which is why you should let go now.

She lets him go.

Giles *quietly* Thank you.

He straightens up and rubs his wrist.

Giles When you live on top of a... a mystical convergence it's only a matter of time before a fresh hell breaks loose. Now is the time that you should train more strictly, you should hunt and patrol more keenly, you should hone your skills day and night.

Buffy And the little slice of life that still belongs to me from, I don't know, seven to seven-oh-five in the morning, can I do what I want then?

Giles Buffy, you think I don't know what it's like to be sixteen?

Buffy No. I think you **don't** know what it's like to be sixteen. And a girl. And the Slayer.

Giles Fair enough, no, no, I-I don't.

Buffy Or what it's like to have to stake vampires while you're having fuzzy feelings towards one?

Giles Uh...

Buffy Digging on the undead doesn't exactly do wonders for your social life.

Giles That's exactly where, where being... different, uh, comes in handy.

Buffy Right! Who needs a social life when you've got your very own Hellmouth?

Giles Yes! Y-you, you, you have a duty, a-a-a purpose, y-y-you have a commitment in life. Now how many people your age can say that?

Buffy We talkin' foreign or domestic? How 'bout none?

Giles *he's had enough* Well, here's a hard fact of life: we all have to do things we don't like! And you have hand-to-hand this afternoon and patrol tonight. So I, I suggest you come straight here at the end of, of period six a-and you get your homework done. And don't dawdle with your friends. *Buffy pouts* And, and don't think sitting there pouting is gonna get to me, because it won't.

She gives him her best pouty look.

Giles looks away *It's not getting to me.*

Cut to the front of the building after school. Buffy is sitting on the railing of the stairs to the street. Xander and Willow are walking toward her.

Xander Boy, what a long day.

Willow And you skipped three classes.

Xander Yeah, and, of course, **they** flew by. *they reach Buffy Buffy!*

Willow Aren't you supposed to be doing your homework in the library?

Buffy I'm dawdling *takes Xander's arm with my friends. Cordelia comes walking by and bumps into Willow. She continues down the stairs without so much as an acknowledgment.*

Xander Works for me.

A black BMW pulls up to the curb. The windows are all darkly tinted.

Buffy to Willow You okay?

Willow Jeez.

They all watch Cordelia. Cut to her reflection in the car window. She pushes her sunglasses on top of her head as the driver's window lowers.

Richard Cordelia.

Cordelia Hi, Richard. Nice car.

Tom in the passenger's seat notices Buffy sitting on the railing and points her out to Richard.

Richard So, uh, we're having a little get-together tomorrow night at the house, and it's gonna be a really special evening.

Cordelia does her fake laugh. Richard and Tom don't get it.

Richard Excuse me?

Cordelia Oh! I would, I would love, **love** to go!

Richard So, who's your friend? *indicates Buffy*

Cordelia looks Her? Oh, she's not my friend.

Tom She's amazing!

Cordelia She's more like a sister, really! We're that close.

Richard Well, why don't you introduce us?

Cordelia realizes she's trapped herself Okay. *goes to get Buffy*

Cut to Buffy, Xander and Willow.

Xander Okay, so tonight, channel fifty-nine, Indian TV, sex, lies, incomprehensible story lines. I'll bring the beetle nuts.

Cordelia reaches for Buffy's hand Come on. Richard and his fraternity brother wanna meet you.

Buffy Well, I don't really wanna meet any fraternity boys.

Cordelia pulls her And if there was a God, don't you think he'd keep it that way?

Willow and Xander watch as Cordelia drags Buffy away.

Xander Uh, I-I believe we were dawdling here!

Cordelia brings Buffy up to Richard.

Richard Hi, sweetheart. I'm Richard. And you are?

Buffy So not interested. *tries to leave*

Cordelia grabs Buffy's hand Heh, she's such a little comedienne.

Richard What, she likes to play hard to get?

Tom No, Richard. I think you're playing easy to resist.

Buffy starts to leave again. Tom paces her.

Tom Ah, feel free to ignore him. I do all the time. *she stops* I'm Tom Warner. I'm a senior at Crestwood College, and I... and I just feel like a complete dolt meeting you this way, so... *crosses his arms* here I stand in all my doltishness.

Willow and Xander are within earshot of Tom and Buffy and overhear the conversation.

Xander Huh-huh-huh, right. Like she's gonna fall for that.

Buffy I'm Buffy Summers.

Tom Oh, nice to meet you. Are you a senior here?

Buffy Junior.

Tom Oh, me, too. Except that I'm a senior and I'm in college. So we have that in common, and... I major in history.

Buffy Mm. History stumps me. I have a hard enough time remembering what happened last week.

Tom No, nothin' happened last week, don't worry, I was there.

Xander She's gonna walk away. *pauses* Now.

Tom So, uh, my friend invited your friend to a party we're having this weekend.

Cordelia does her fake laugh loudly for Richard.

Tom You know, actually he's not even really my friend. I only joined the fraternity because my father and grandpa were in it before me. Y'know, it meant a lot to them.

Xander Okay, boots, start a-walking.

Tom Oh, I know, I talk too much anyway. They're really dull parties full of really dull people, so... would you like to come and save me from a really dull fate?

Buffy Oh, I wish I could, but I'm sort of involved.

Tom Well, sure, of course you are. Well, thanks for letting me ramble.

Buffy Y'know, people underestimate the value of a good ramble.

Giles spots her talking to Tom and calls out to her.

Giles Buffy!

She turns to look and sees him pointing at his watch and walk off to the library.

Buffy Oh, I gotta go. *turns to go but stops and smiles* It was nice to meet you.

Tom Oh. Same here.

Buffy hops up the stairs. Xander hands her bag to her, and she runs off to the library. Tom watches her go.

Xander I hate these guys. Whatever they want just falls into their laps. Don't you hate these guys?

Willow Yeah, with their charmed lives and their movie star good looks and more money than you can count? I'm hating.

Cut to the library. Giles comes out of the cage holding a sword in one hand and a stick in the other.

Giles I'm going to attack you. A word of warning: for your own good, I won't be pulling any punches. *adopts a fighting stance*

Buffy Please don't.

She kicks the sword out of his left hand. He looks at her a bit dismayed, but quickly swings the stick at her. She sidesteps him, and the end of the stick hits the floor. She pins his arm down and stomps on the stick, breaking it. He tries to lunge at her, but she sidesteps again, and he runs into the table and slides across the top.

Giles Good. So, um, you're on patrol and, uh, I'll see you in the morning.

Cut to the cemetery at night. Buffy strolls through, keeping a careful watch. She spots a bracelet on the ground and bends down to pick it up. Angel suddenly appears behind her.

Angel There's blood on it.

Buffy *gets up startled and faces him* Hi. It's nice to... Blood?

Angel I can smell it.

Buffy Oh. *looks at the bracelet* It's pretty thin. It probably belonged to a girl.

Angel Probably.

Buffy *exhales* I-I was... just thinking, wouldn't it be funny some time to see each other when it wasn't a blood thing. *smiles briefly* Not funny ha, ha.

Angel What are you sayin', you wanna have a date?

Buffy No.

Angel You don't wanna have a date?

Buffy Who said 'date'? I-I-I never said 'date'.

Angel Right. You just wanna have coffee or somethin'.

Buffy *hopefully* Coffee?

Angel I knew this was gonna happen.

Buffy What? What do you think is happening?

Angel You're sixteen years old. I'm two hundred and forty-one.

Buffy I've done the math.

Angel You don't know what you're doing, you don't know what you want...

Buffy Oh. No, I, I think I do. I want out of this conversation. *starts to walk past him*

Angel *bumps into her* Listen, if we date you and I both know one thing's gonna lead to another.

Buffy One thing already has led to another. You think it's a little late to be reading me a warning label?

Angel I'm just tryin' to protect you. This could get outta control.

Buffy Isn't that the way it's supposed to be?

He grabs her by the shoulders and pulls her closer. She draws a startled breath.

Angel This isn't some fairy tale. When I kiss you, you don't wake up from a deep sleep and live happily ever after.

Buffy No. When you kiss me I wanna die.

She pulls herself free and runs off.

Cut to school the next morning. Cut to a classroom. Class is over and the students are leaving. Buffy slowly gets up from her desk and gathers her things. Cordelia comes into the room.

Cordelia Buffy! Did you lose weight? And your hair... Alright, I respect you too much to be dishonest. The hair's a little... *smiles widely* Well, that really isn't the point here, is it? The Zeta Kappas have to have a certain balance at their party, and Richard explained it all to me, but I was so busy really listening that I didn't hear much. Anyway, the deal is they need you to go. And if you don't go, I can't. And I'm talking about Richard Anderson, okay? As in Anderson Farms, Anderson Aeronautics *becomes emotional* and Anderson Cosmetics. *sobs* Well, you see why I **have** to go. Buffy, these men are rich. And I am **not** being shallow. Think of all the poor people I could help with all my money!

Buffy *off in her own world* I'll go.

Cordelia *surprised* You'll go? *huge smile* Great! I'll drive. Oh, Buffy, it's like we're sisters! With really different hair. *She turns to leave and can't believe she just said what she did. Buffy can't believe it either.*

Cut to the fraternity house basement. A pledge is taking the oath of brotherhood.

Richard I pledge my life and my death...

Pledge I pledge my life and my death...

Richard To the Delta Zeta Kappas, and to Machida whom we serve...

Pledge To the Delta Zeta Kappas, and to Machida whom we serve...

Richard On my oath before my assembled brethren.

He starts to carve a symbol into the pledge's chest with the tip of a sword.

Pledge *ignores the pain* On my oath before my assembled brethren...

Richard I promise to keep our secret from this day until my death.

Pledge I promise to keep our secret from this day until my death.

Richard is finished carving and lowers the sword.

Richard In blood I was baptized. In blood I shall reign.
In his name.

Pledge In blood I was baptized, and in blood I shall reign. In his name.

Richard You are now one of us.

Pledge In his name!

Brothers In his name.

Richard puts the sword aside and shakes the pledge's hand.

Richard Brewski time!

A brother tosses him a beer. As he opens it he walks over to Callie, who is shackled to the wall.

Richard So what's a girl like you doing in a place like this?

Callie *begs* Let me go.

Richard Let you go? Okay, let me think. Um, no! *laughs* God, I love high school girls. Mm!

He walks off to join the party. Callie lowers her head and weeps.

Part 2

The lounge. Willow gathers her things to go to class.

Willow You're going to the fraternity party? What made you change your mind?

Buffy Angel.

Willow He's going with you? *to Xander* She's got a date with Angel! Isn't that exciting?

Xander I'm elated. *gets up from the couch*

Buffy I-I'm not going with Angel. I'm going with – ye gods – Cordelia. *starts out of the lounge*

Willow Cordelia?! *to Xander* Did I sound a little jealous just then, 'cause I'm not really... *runs after Buffy* Cordelia?!

Xander Cordelia's much better for you than Angel. *hurries after them*

Willow *catches up* What happened with Angel?

Buffy Nothing, as usual. A whole lotta nothing with Angel.

Xander Bummer.

They head down the hall.

Willow I don't understand. I mean, he likes you. More than likes.

Buffy Angel barely says two words to me.

Xander Don't you hate that?

Buffy And when he does, he treats me like I'm a child.

Xander That bastard!

Buffy You know, at least Tom can carry on a conversation.

Xander Yeah! Tom? Who's Tom?

Willow The frat guy.

Xander Oh, Buffy, I don't think so. Frying pan, fire? You know what I'm sayin'.

Cut to the library. Giles comes out of his office carrying a sword behind his back and looks around. Seeing there's no one there he starts practicing a few thrusts to his front and back. He spins around and thrusts again.

Giles Will you be ready if a vampire's behind you?

He thrusts the sword behind him, pretending he just jabbed one. He raises the sword above his head to stab his pretend fallen victim. Buffy, Willow and Xander come in through the door and see him. He hears the door

and looks back. When he sees it's them he tries to make like nothing's going on.

Giles I didn't see you three... creeping about.

He tosses the sword through the open cage door and kicks the door shut.

Giles Um, how did it go last night?

Buffy Found this. *gives him the bracelet*

Giles *reads the inscription* E-N-T.

Willow I've seen something like that before.

Buffy It's broken in two. I don't know what the rest of the letters might have spelled. And there's blood on it.

Giles Uh, I didn't see any.

Buffy Angel showed up. He could smell it.

Xander The blood? There's a guy you wanna party with.

Giles Blood.

Willow In Sunnydale. What a surprise.

Xander Okay, here's what we're gonna do: she should probably make the rounds again tonight, and we should try to figure out who that bracelet belongs to.

Giles Yes, good idea, yes. She'll patrol, and, and we'll reconvene...

Buffy *interrupting* Uh, hello? She's standing right here? And she's not available.

Giles Why not?

Xander Buffy, this is a little more important than...

Buffy I've got a mountain of homework to do, and, um... my mom's not really feeling well, and she could probably use my help, and, um, to be truthful I'm not really feeling all that well myself.

Willow can't believe what she's hearing and stares at Buffy.

Giles Oh, w-w-well, um, sorry, of course. If-if-if you're not well.

Buffy Oh, I'll take an early pass this evening, and, um, one later on, but for the bulk of the evening...

Giles Oh, you should stay home with your mother.

Cut to the halls. The three of them come out of the library. Xander gives Buffy a stern look.

Buffy Well, say it.

Xander I'm not gonna say it.

Willow You lied to Giles.

Xander 'Cause she will.

Buffy Look, I wasn't lying. I was just... protecting him from information that he wouldn't be able to... digest properly.

Xander Like a corn dog.

Willow Like you don't have a sick mother, but you'd rather go to a frat party where there's gonna be drinking and older guys and probably an orgy.

Xander Whoa! Whoa-ho-ho, rewind. Since when do they have orgies, and why aren't I on the mailing list?

Buffy There's no orgies!

Willow I heard a lot of wild things go on at frat parties.

Buffy Okay, you know what? Look, seven days a week I am busy saving the world. Once in a great while I wanna have some fun. And that's what I'm gonna have tonight. Fun!

Cut to later in the lounge. Buffy and Cordelia are sitting at a table.

Cordelia This isn't about fun. This is about duty, your duty, to help me achieve permanent prosperity. Okay? Do's and don't's: don't wear black, silk, chiffon or spandex. These are my trademarks. And don't do that weird thing with your hair.

Buffy What weird thing with my...

Cordelia Don't interrupt. Do be interested if someone should speak to you. It may or may not happen, but do be polite. And laugh at the appropriate intervals. *demonstrates* Do lie to your mom about where we're going. It's a fraternity, and there will be drinking.

Xander and Willow come over to the table. Xander is munching on a power bar. Willow has a Coke.

Xander So, Cor, you printing up business cards with your pager number and hours of operation, or just going with a halter top tonight?

Cordelia Oh, are we feeling a little envious? You could belong to a fraternity of rich and powerful men. In the Bizarro world.

Xander has no comeback again.

Buffy Do you guys wanna join us?

Xander Nah, I gotta... digest and all.

He and Willow go up to the couches and sit down.

Cordelia Makeup, makeup... Well, give it your all, and keep to the shadows. We're gonna have a blast! *smiles*
Buffy lets her head fall to the table. Cut to Xander and Willow on the couch.

Willow I can't believe she lied to Giles. My world is all askew.

Xander Buffy's lying, Buffy's going to frat parties... That's not askew, that's cockeyed.

Willow Askew means cockeyed.

Xander Oh.

He grabs her Coke and takes a swig. She grabs his bar and breaks off a piece.

Willow Well, there's nothing we can do about it. We'll help Giles.

Xander I'm goin' to the party.

Willow What?

Xander I gotta keep an eye on Buffy. Those frat guys creep me.

Willow You wanna protect her?

Xander Mm-hm.

Willow And prove that you're just as good as those rich, snotty guys?

Xander Mm-hm.

Willow Maybe catch an orgy?

Xander If it's on early.

Willow nods her head and pops the piece of power bar into her mouth. Xander takes another swig of her Coke.

Cut to the street in front of the fraternity house that night. Cordelia comes screeching in to park and smacks the car in front of her. Cut inside the car.

Cordelia Ohh! Why do they park so darn close to you? Are you ready for this? *checks her hair*

Buffy I dunno. Maybe this wasn't such a good idea.

Cordelia Me, too. Let's go!

She gets out of the car and closes the door.

Cordelia C'mon!

Cut inside the fraternity house. Two girls come in through the door and walk through the room. A couple of fraternity brothers watch them walk by.

Tackle Beaucoup babes!

Linebacker Ooo, yeah!

The camera slowly pans across the room to Buffy and Cordelia.

Cordelia You know what's so cool about college? The diversity. You've got all the rich people, and all the other people. *spots Richard* Richard!

Richard Welcome, ladies. *hands them drinks*

Cordelia Thank you.

Buffy Oh, i-is there alcohol in this?

Richard Just a smidge.

Cordelia C'mon, Buffy, it's just a smidge.

Buffy I'll just... *sets the drink down*

Richard I understand. When I was your age I wasn't into grownup things either. Have you seen our multi-media room?

Cordelia Oh, the one with the cherry walnut paneling and the two forty-eight-inch televisions on satellite feed? No. Wanna show me? *smiles*

Richard What about...

Cordelia Oh, her? She's happiest by herself.

They go off and leave Buffy standing there by herself.

Cut to a side window. Xander pokes his head in, looks around and climbs in. "Wolves", by Shawn K. Clement and Sean W. Murray, plays on the stereo.

Lyrics Her name is Alexandra / She walks into the room
He loses his balance and falls through the window onto the floor.

Lyrics All the eyes, eyes, are upon her
He hops back up and takes a drink from a tray that's being passed around by a half-naked pledge.

Xander Cheers!

Lyrics Well the girl / I think she's got her hungry eyes on you

Xander walks into the room and has a look around.

Lyrics Yeah, on you, you
He looks at a girl as she walks by. He continues through the room.

Lyrics She says she runs with the wolves
He comes into the next room, but doesn't notice Buffy behind him. She's looking the other way and doesn't see him either. He looks at another girl passing by, but is distracted by a tray of hors-d'oeuvres being carried around by another pledge in drag. He reaches for the tray and follows it away.

Lyrics She thinks she runs with the wolves
Buffy turns around. She's bored and lonely and fidgets with her hands. She looks down at her drink and picks it up again.

Lyrics Love is in the air
She stirs it idly for a moment, then realizes she really doesn't want it and puts it back down. She looks around the room at the people dancing. A new song starts, "She", by Louie Says.

Lyrics Bend and I'll break you
The dance crowd separates for a moment and a handsome Young Man on the other side of the room looks at her. He raises his drink to her. Tackle and Linebacker are standing behind him, watching.

Lyrics Leave and I'll take you back again
She notices him, picks up her drink again and raises it to him. She takes a small sip as he raises his drink for a sip also. Tackle is drunk. He notices Buffy and starts to stagger toward her.

Tackle New girl!

He grabs the Young Man for balance and pulls him away before he even gets his drink to his lips.

Young Man Easy, man!

Tackle Dance!

Lyrics So bend and I'll break you
Buffy looks up from putting her drink back down and stares at him in wide-eyed surprise when she sees him coming for her.

Tackle laughs and staggers over to her C'mon, sweetheart, ha, ha, yeah!

Lyrics Leave and I'll take you back again

Tom appears in the nick of time and takes her arm.

Tom Can I have this dance?

Tackle C'mon!

Tom pulls her away to the dance area just as Tackle is about to crash into her. He looks up surprised at her disappearance. He sees another girl walk by and follows her instead.

Lyrics If she bends, then she breaks

Buffy Thanks.

Lyrics She loves you, but then she takes it away

Tom No. We're not all a bunch of drunken louts. Some of us are sober louts.

Lyrics She bends and she bows

Tom I'm really glad that you decided to come.

Lyrics She's cold, but she melts like snow

Buffy looks down.

Tom And you're not.

Buffy No, it's... I shouldn't be here.

Lyrics Bend and I'll break you

Tom Because you're seeing someone.

Buffy No.

Tom You're not seeing someone?

Lyrics Sleep and I'll wake you tonight

Buffy Someone's not seeing me.

Tom So, why shouldn't you be here?

Lyrics Hey, don't you want to understand / Understand that

Buffy Because I have obligations. People that I'm responsible for, or to, or... *Tom laughs and so does she with, or... It's complicated.*

Lyrics If she bends, then she breaks

Tom You're big on responsibility. I like that. But there's such a thing as being too mature.

Lyrics She loves you, but then she takes it away

Tom You should relax. Enjoy yourself once in a while.

Lyrics She bends and she bows

Buffy You think I'm too mature?

Tom chuckles I talk too much. Have you picked up on that yet?

Lyrics She's cold, but she melts like snow

Tom Anyway, the, uh, the Hulk is gone, so you don't have to dance with me.

Lyrics She bends, she breaks

Buffy He might come back.

Lyrics She hates you, but then she makes a mistake
She continues dancing with Tom. Cut to Xander talking to two girls. Another hors-d'oeuvre tray passes by, and he grabs another one.

Lyrics Confused and a lot to take / And where to fall out and when

Xander *playing with his hors-d'oeuvres* Godzilla's attacking downtown Tokyo! Argh! Argh!

Richard is watching Xander. Tackle and Linebacker join him.

Lyrics Hey, yes

Tackle Who's this dork?

Lyrics She won't be good to you

Richard Never seen him before in my life.

Lyrics And I hate the way that I am

Linebacker We got us a crasher!

The three of them come up to Xander.

Lyrics I hate the way I am

Xander *to the girls* So, have either of you seen a pair of girls here? One's about so high... *notices the guys* Hey, guys!

Tackle New pledge.

Linebacker New pledge!

Tackle *grabs Xander and yells* New pledge!

Together *dragging him off* New pledge! New pledge!

New pledge! New pledge! New pledge!

Cut outside to the patio. Buffy strolls out of the house alone. It's chilly, and she rubs her arms a bit and crosses them. She steps on a piece of glass and looks down. There are several small pieces there and she crouches to pick one up. She looks up above her and notices the door to the balcony has been boarded up. Tom is outside now, too, and notices her as she stands back up.

Tom You okay?

Buffy *drops the piece of glass and exhales* Yeah. I was... just thinking.

Richard finds them there, too, and hands them both drinks.

Richard To my Argentinean junk bonds that just matured into double digits!

Tom Uh, to maturity.

Buffy What the hell. I'm tired of being mature.

She gulps the drink. The two boys raise their eyebrows and drink theirs also.

Cut to the library. Willow and Giles are playing word games, trying to figure out what the word on the bracelet might be. Willow types the words as they think of them.

Willow Bent.

Giles Sent.

Willow Rent.

Giles Uh, Lent. Dent.

Willow Went. Kent. Kent! That's it!

Giles Her boyfriend's name was Kent?

Willow No! Kent Preparatory School. Just outside of town. That's where I've seen these bracelets.

Giles Wh-what are you doing?

Willow Pulling up their school newsletter for the past few months. See if there's anything about...

Giles A missing girl.

The most recent issue of the newsletter has a picture of Callie on the front page. The title of the article reads 'Callie Our Hearts & Prayers Are With You'.

Cut to the fraternity house. Xander is being hazed. Linebacker grabs his cheeks to pucker his lips and smears lipstick on them. Everyone is laughing hysterically. "Bring Me On", by Act of Faith, is playing on the sound system.

Lyrics Say what you say when you say what you've gotta say / Do you fear what you hear are you gonna fear / Do you know what you know when you gotta know / No, No, No

Tackle C'mon, dance, pretty boy!

The camera pulls back from Xander's face. They've put a skirt and a huge bra on him. He does his usual lame dancing while the party guests cheer him on.

Tackle Keep it movin'! *laughs* C'mon! Shake it, don't break it! Wrap it up and I'll take it!

Xander *nervous* Okay, big fun guys. Uhhh, who's next?

Tackle puts a blonde wig on his head.

Tackle You are, doll face! Keep on dancin'! Ah, alright!

Cut to Buffy at the front door. She's woozy from the drink and steadies herself against the wall.

Tackle Oh! Keep it up! Yes! C'mon! Keep it goin'! Ah, ha! *Buffy makes her way over to the stairs. She knocks down a drink, but can't react fast enough to catch it. She looks up at the commotion in the next room.*

Buffy Tom?

Through hazy eyes and a wobbly head she sees Xander dancing with his back to her. Slowly she starts to make her way up the stairs to find a place to rest. In the other room Tackle and Linebacker continue to goad Xander on. Cut upstairs to a bedroom. Buffy pushes open the door, comes in and bumps into a sculpture.

Buffy Ooo! Ooo, sorry...

She steadies herself and heads for the bed.

Buffy Okay. *crawls onto the bed* Nice bed. Just need to stop spinning for at least...

She lies down and falls asleep. Richard shows up at the door. He pushes it open and peeks in. He comes in when he sees Buffy asleep on the bed. He rolls her over onto her back and smiles as he brushes his hand along her neck. He's suddenly pulled away from her and shoved against the wall.

Tom Get away from her!

Richard I wasn't doing anything!

Tom I saw what you were doing.

Richard I was just having a little fun.

Tom Well, she's not here for your fun, you pervert. She's here for the pleasure of the one we serve.

Richard *ashamed* In his name.

Tom And that goes for the other one, too.

The camera pans from Tom down to Buffy on the bed and continues to Cordelia on the floor.

Part 3

The library. Giles picks up the printout of the Newsletter's front page.

Giles Callie Megan Anderson. Missing for over a week. No one's seen her, no one knows what happened to her.

Willow This being Sunnydale and all I guess we can rule out something good.

Giles I'm calling Buffy.

Willow No!

Giles Why not?

Willow *nervous* Because Buffy... a-a-and her mother...

Giles Are sick. No, you're quite right. No, there's no point in disturbing them until we know more.

Willow turns her attention back to the PC. Some more information comes up.

Willow You mean, like, if there're others? Brittany Oswald, junior at St. Michael's, disappeared a year ago. So did Kelly Percell, sophomore at Grant.

Giles A year.

Willow Almost to the day.

Giles An anniversary or perhaps some other event significant to the killer.

Willow Killer? Now there's a killer? We don't know that there's a...

Giles No, but this being Sunnydale and all.

Willow Gulp.

Giles *exhales* We need to know where Buffy found that bracelet, and then we can begin our search there. *reaches for the phone*

Willow Good idea. Call Angel. *gets a confused look from Giles* Uh, he was there when Buffy found it. We're gonna need all the help we can get.

Giles agrees with her logic.

Cut to the fraternity house front door. The party is over. Tackle shoves Xander out of the house. Linebacker throws him his clothes.

Linebacker Party's over, jerkwater.

Xander Wait, a friend of mine was here.

Tackle Y'know, in that light, with that wig on and all... you're still butt-ugly!

They laugh and close the door in Xander's face. He drops his clothes, pulls off the wig, and throws it down. He undoes the bra, takes it off and throws it down, too.

Cut to the basement. Richard takes a sword and walks behind a kneeling Tom. Tom has a series of symbols carved onto his chest. Richard begins to carve another one on Tom's back. The camera pans over to the three girls shackled to the wall.

Cordelia Buffy? Where are we?

Buffy In the basement, far as I can tell.

Cordelia What's happening? What did they do to us?

Buffy They drugged us.

Cordelia Why? What are they gonna do to us?

Buffy I don't know.

Cordelia *whines* I wanna go home.

Callie No one's going home. Ever. Look, one of them's different than the others. *looks at Tom* Nicer.

Buffy *whispers* Tom.

Richard is finished carving Tom's new symbol. He gets up and turns to the girls. Two brothers help him on with his robe.

Callie He's the one to watch out for.

Buffy shakes her chain a bit and looks up where it's anchored. Tom looks at her.

Tom She's last.

Cordelia Last? For what?

Tom walks over to the well and picks up a bag.

Cordelia Who's first?! Answer me! Who's first?!

Tom lets three stones drop out of the bag and into his hand.

Buffy Three stones. *looks at Cordelia and Callie* Three of us.

Cordelia *beginning to panic* Buffy...

Buffy Stay calm. We'll get outta this.

Tom pours water over the stones.

Cordelia Why'd I ever let you talk me into coming here? *Buffy can't believe her ears. Tom is done with his stone-cleansing ritual and faces the girls. He stares at Buffy.*

Cut to the library.

Angel She found the bracelet in the cemetery. Near the south wall.

Giles South wall.

Willow stares at the window in fascination. Angel casts no reflection in it.

Giles to Willow What are you doing?

Willow Oh! Sorry. The reflection thing that you don't have. Angel, how do you shave? *the men exchange a look* South wall. That's near the college and... the fraternity house!

Giles A fraternity?

Willow nods nervously.

Angel Could they be taking these girls? *Willow nods again* Let's get out there!

Giles and Angel start to go. Willow holds back.

Willow Buffy!

Giles Wwww don't know that it's concrete. Uh, let's not disturb her until...

Willow Is there! With Cordelia. They went to a party at the Zeta Kappa house.

Giles She lied to me?

Willow *nervous* Well...

Angel Did... she have a date?

Willow Well... *Angel huffs* Well, why do you think she went to that party? Because you gave her the brush-off! *to Giles* And you never let her do anything except work and patrol! And I know she's the Chosen One, but you're killing her with the pressure! I mean, she's sixteen going on forty! *to Angel* And you! I mean, you're gonna live forever! You don't have time for a cup of coffee?!

Angel and Giles are speechless.

Willow Okay, I don't feel better now, and we've gotta help Buffy.

She hurries out of the library. Giles and Angel follow shortly behind.

Cut to the street in front of the fraternity house. Xander walks past a few cars. He's still wearing the skirt and carries his clothes in a bundle.

Xander One day I'll have money. Prestige. Power. And on that day they'll still have more.

He walks past Cordelia's car, and it looks familiar to him. He checks the license plate and it reads 'QUEEN C'. It's Cordelia's car, alright. He looks back up at the house a moment, and then makes his way back to it.

Cut to the basement. The ritual is continuing. Tom is standing on the basement stairs holding the sword.

Tom Machida. *starts down*

Brothers In his name.

Tom We who serve you, we who receive all that you bestow, call upon you in this holy hour.

Brothers In this holy hour.

He turns to walk toward Richard, holding the sword horizontally in both hands.

Tom We have no wealth, no possession... except that which you give us.

Brothers Except that which you give us.

He places the sword on Richard's arms.

Tom We have no power, no place in the world... except that which you give us.

Brothers Except that which you give us.

Richard hugs the sword to his chest, crossing his hands over his heart.

Cordelia What are they, some kind of cult or something?

Buffy Yeah, a psycho cult.

Cordelia You've gotta do something.

Tom It's been a year since our last offering.

Richard lowers the sword and rests the tip on the floor.

Tom A year in which our bounty overflowed. We come before you with fresh offerings.

Cordelia Offerings? He's talking about us?

Callie Do you see anyone else chained up in here?

Tom Accept our offering, Dark Lord, and bless us with your power. Machida!

Brothers Machida!

Tom tosses the stones into the well at the center of the basement one at a time.

Cordelia *frightened* What's down there?

Tom Come forth, and let your terrible countenance look upon your servants, and their humble offering. We call you, Machida.

Brothers In his name. Machida.

Cordelia There's something down there and he's gonna throw us down there with it.

Buffy I don't think so.

Cordelia No? Well, that's good! That, that's...

Buffy I don't think we go to it. I think it comes to us.

Cordelia *terrified* Ooohhhhhh! No!

Tom looks up, awaiting Machida's arrival. The camera closes in on the well, and suddenly Machida rises out of it.

Cordelia Oh, my God! *screams*

It's a half-man, half-snake, green and scaly. He growls as he looks at the girls. Cordelia keeps screaming at the top of her lungs. Buffy stares at Machida in wide-eyed horror.

Part 4

The basement. Buffy tries to yank her chains from the ceiling.

Cordelia C'mon, Buffy! Oh, my God! Oh, c'mon! Oh!

Machida remains stationary and spreads his arms.

Tom For he shall rise from the depths, and we shall tremble before him.

The camera pans down and over to Tom.

Tom He who is the source of all we inherit and all we possess. Machida.

Brothers Machida.

Tom And if he is pleased with our offerings, then our fortune shall increase.

Brothers Machida. Let our fortunes increase.

Tom And on the tenth day of the tenth month he shall be enhungered. And we shall feed him.

Machida gazes over at the girls.

Cordelia Feed him?

Machida rises before her.

Cordelia Feed him?!

Buffy renews her efforts to break the chains from the ceiling.

Cordelia Oh, no!

Cut outside. Angel, Willow and Giles walk through the bushes from the street to the lawn.

Willow Looks like everyone's gone.

They look up at the house as a robed figure comes up behind them. The figure steps on some foliage, and Angel instantly spins around to confront him.

Angel Hey!

Xander Hey! *lifts the hood from his eyes* What are you guys doing here?

Willow A bunch of girls are missing, and the Zeta Kappas may be involved, and Buffy. Are you wearing makeup?

Xander smears the lipstick off with his fingers.

Xander No. I think Buffy's still inside somewhere with Cordelia. Her car's still here.

Giles Why are you wearing that? *indicates the robe*

Xander Oh, I found it in their trash. I saw them through the window. They were wearing robes and went down to the basement. I was gonna use it to sneak in.

Giles They may be involved in some kind of ritual.

Willow With the missing girls.

Angel *growls, vamped out* With Buffy!

Xander Okay, that **is** the guy you wanna party with.

Cut to the basement. Machida closes in on Cordelia and she screams.

Buffy Hey, reptile boy! *gets his attention*

Tom No woman speaks to him!

Buffy You don't want her. Look at her. She's all skin and bones. Half an hour later you'll be hungry.

Tom *comes over to Buffy* I told you to shut up!

He backhand punches her and holds up his sword.

Tom You speak again and I'll cut your throat.

Cut upstairs. Xander steps up to the door holding his head down and knocks. Tackle comes to the door to answer.

Xander Got locked out dumping the trash. Let me in. I don't wanna miss the, uh...

Tackle opens the door and waves him in.

Tackle Come on.

Xander ...you know what. *throws back his hood* Where are they?!

He punches Tackle in the face and knocks him down, but has really hurt his hand doing it. Angel comes in behind him and punches out Linebacker. Willow and Giles follow them in.

Cut to the basement. Two brothers unchain Cordelia and hold her. Tom hears the commotion upstairs.

Tom Something's going on upstairs. *to the brothers* Go. Go!

Several of them rush upstairs to see what's going on. Buffy looks up at her chains again, then back at Machida.

Tom Feed, Dark Lord!

Machida rises above Cordelia, then moves in to take her from the brothers' grip. She screams loudly and struggles. Buffy yanks hard at her chains again, and they finally break loose from the ceiling. She quickly steps over to Machida and punches him in the face. He pulls back away from them, holding the side of his face. Buffy starts fighting the brothers. Tom takes a swing at her with his sword.

Cut upstairs. Angel throws a brother to the floor. Willow jumps over him, runs to the basement door and goes in. Xander is on Tackle's back, punching him.

Xander That's for the wig! *punches again* That's for the bra!

Giles struggles with a door. A brother tries to grab him from behind, but he elbow-punches him and knocks him out. Willow comes back out of the basement door.

Willow Some guy's attacking Buffy with a sword! Also there's a really big snake!

Angel punches another brother and sends him reeling into the sill of an opening in the wall. Willow screams and backs off as the brother falls to the floor. Xander keeps punching Tackle.

Xander That's for the makeup! *punches again, knocking him out* And that's for the last sixteen and a half years!

Willow Guys! Buffy! Snake! Basement! Now!

She heads back into the basement as the others jump to follow. Angel punches out a brother who is giving chase. Cut to the basement.

Tom You bitch! I'll serve you to him in pieces.

He attacks her with the sword, but she catches the blade in her chains, throws a loop of it around his neck and pulls him in.

Buffy Tom, you talk too much.

She shoves him away, and he rolls over a table, knocking everything off of it. Machida grabs Cordelia and starts to drag her away as the others come down the stairs. Buffy picks up the sword and jumps up onto the edge of the well. She holds the sword above her head, ready to strike.

Buffy Let her go, wormy!

Machida doesn't heed her warning and continues to hold on to Cordelia, so Buffy wields back the sword and slashes it into him. He drops Cordelia and rears back, screaming in pain. A moment later he drops to the floor dead. Buffy makes a face at the grossness of it. Willow comes down the rest of the steps and goes over to free Cal-lie. Buffy comes down to look at what's left of Machida.

Angel is behind her. Giles helps Cordelia up.

Cordelia You did it! You saved us! *grabs Angel in a tight hug* I've never been so happy to see anyone in my whole... *lets go* You guys. *cries* I just... hate you guys! The weirdest things always happen when you're around!

Angel brings Tom over. Cordelia grabs him by the shirt.

Cordelia And you! You're going to jail for fifteen thousand years!

She lets go of him and starts up the stairs. Angel shoves Tom up the stairs ahead of him. Giles puts his fists on his hips and gives Buffy a stern look. She looks down in shame.

Buffy I told one lie, I had one drink.

Giles Yes, and you were very nearly devoured by a giant demon snake. The words 'let that be a lesson' are a tad redundant at this juncture.

Buffy I'm sorry. *looks at him for forgiveness*

Giles So am I. I... I drive you too hard because I-I know what you have to face. From now on no, no more pushing, no more prodding. Just, uh, an inordinate amount of nudging.

Buffy smiles up at him and then starts up the stairs. Giles takes her arm and goes up with her.

Cut to the Bronze. Jonathan is at the bar anxiously waiting for a large cup of cappuccino.

Jonathan C'mon, hurry!

Barmaid Here you go.

She hands him the large cup and saucer and he takes it and a plate with a muffin over to Cordelia.

Cordelia Thank you, Jonathan. *looks at the cappuccino* Did we forget something?

Jonathan Um... Cinnamon, chocolate, half-caf, nonfat. *Cordelia just looks at him. He realizes his mistake.*

Jonathan Extra foam!

Cordelia grabs the muffin and waves the cappuccino away. She steps over to Xander, Willow and Buffy at their table. Xander is reading the Sunnydale Press.

Cordelia Young men are the only way to go. *leaves*

Xander Says here that they've all been sentenced to consecutive life sentences. Investigators found the bones of missing girls in a huge cavern beneath the frat house. And older bones dating back fifty years.

Buffy and Willow exchange a grossed-out look.

Xander A surprising number of corporations whose chairmen and founders are former Delta Zeta Kappas are suffering from falling profits, IRS raids... Ooo, and suicides in the boardroom. Hmm. Starve a snake, lose a fortune. Boy, I guess the rich really are different, huh?

Willow to Buffy Have you heard from Angel? When he got so mad about you being in danger, and changed into a *makes a face* grr, it was the most amazing thing I ever saw. I mean, how many guys can...

Angel comes down the stairs and over to stand behind Xander.

Xander Angel, Angel, Angel. Does every conversation we have have to come around to that freak? *notices Angel* Hey, man, how you doin'?

Angel Buffy.

Buffy Angel.

Xander *in a deep voice* Xander! *shakes his head*

Angel I hear this place, uh, serves coffee. *Xander looks up at him* I thought maybe you and I should get some. Sometime. If you want.

Buffy permits herself a bit of a smile.

Buffy Yeah. Sometime. I'll let you know.

Angel eyes her suspiciously. Buffy gets up and leaves with a smile on her face.

Halloween

Written by **Carl Ellsworth**

Directed by **Bruce Seth Green**

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB television network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Halloween". It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes

and camera movements where I felt they were needed. I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.01

This episode was originally broadcast on October 27, 1997.

Copyright (C) 1997 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Pop's Pumpkin Patch. The camera pans down from the sign over the stand past another one counting off the days until Halloween to a pumpkin on the ground aglow with a candle. Buffy lands flat on her back on top of it. She looks up at the vampire that just threw her and sees him coming toward her. She grabs a squash lying on the ground behind her and throws it at him, hitting him in the forehead. She follows it up with a pumpkin. The vampire staggers back a few steps. Buffy hops back to her feet. She pulls a stake out of her shirt and launches it at him. He grabs the scarecrow and pulls it over in front of him so the stake impales it instead. He shoves the scarecrow aside and comes at her with a roundhouse kick. They start fighting hand-to-hand.

Cut to a view of them through a camcorder. The 'record' light is on. Cut to another vampire taping the fight. He gets closer for a better view. Cut to the view through the camcorder. Buffy continues to fight the first vampire. The 'battery low' indicator starts flashing. A moment

later the view becomes snowy, and the vampire takes the camcorder away from his eye. He jostles it, and it starts working again. He raises it back to his eye to continue recording.

The fight goes on, and a few hits later the first vampire knocks Buffy into the hay wagon. She holds onto the side of the wagon and kicks the vampire to the ground. She turns around with her back to the wagon and grabs the railing as the vampire gets back up. She raises her legs and grabs the vampire's head in a scissor hold. She twists her body and flips him over sideways onto the ground. Stepping away from the wagon, she spies the sign and then looks down at the vampire. He tries to grab for her legs, so she jumps over him and somersaults to the countdown sign. She pulls it out of the ground and swings it at his legs as he comes for her, knocking them out from under him. She raises the sign and jams the end of the signpost into his chest. The vampire bursts into ashes. Buffy leaves the sign stuck in the ground at its new location and walks out of the pumpkin patch. The second vampire lowers the camcorder and slowly backs away as he watches her go.

Part 1

The Bronze. A waitress picks up a tray of cappuccino and cupcakes. The camera follows her as she heads to her table. She turns to her right, but the camera continues through the crowd over to Angel sitting alone at a table, looking very bored. A huge spider web and other Halloween decorations adorn the staircase behind him. Cordelia spots him with his bored look and comes over to his table. "Shy", by Epperley, is playing.

Lyrics I don't say much but I, but I like to sing

Cordelia I know. Is the Bronze so not happening? Or what? sets down her drink and sits

Angel Oh. Hi.

Lyrics Won't tell you what I'm thinking

Cordelia Hi!

Angel I'm waiting for Buffy.

Lyrics Just have to wait and sing

Cordelia Great! I'm supposed to be meeting Devon, but he's nowhere to be seen. It's like he thinks being in a band gives him an obligation to flake.

Angel smiles at the joke.

Cordelia Well, his loss is your incredible gain!

Cut to the door. Buffy comes in, looks around and sees Angel at the table with Cordelia, laughing. Cut to Angel's table.

Cordelia So I told Devon, 'You call that leather interior? My Barbie Dream Car had nicer seats!' *they both laugh*

Lyrics I have no skin left on my, on my fingertips
Cut to Buffy. She's upset seeing Angel there with Cordelia and turns around to leave. Angel notices her as she's about to go.

Angel Buffy?

He gets up and hurries over to her.

Angel Buffy!

Lyrics But still my heart pours out, out from my lips

Buffy turns back around Hi! I'm...

Angel Late.

Buffy Rough day at the office.

Angel reaches up to her hair and pulls out a piece of straw.

Angel So I see.

Lyrics Well I'm mute, but I'm not quite mute

Buffy Hey, it's a look. A seasonal look.

Lyrics And I say the things you want to hear

Cordelia appears behind Angel Buffy. Love the hair. It just screams street urchin. *leaves*

Lyrics I'm mute, but I'm not quite mute

Buffy smiles Know what? I need to go... *loses the smile*
put a bag over my head. starts to go

Lyrics And I keep to myself to defend

Angel grabs her arm Don't listen to her. Please. You look fine.

Lyrics Yeah I'm alright

Buffy You're sweet. A terrible liar, but sweet.

Lyrics Oh now don't want to fight

Angel I thought we had...

Buffy A date. So did I. But who am I kidding?

Lyrics I'm an angel burning out / Oh now

Buffy Dates are things normal girls have. Girls who have time to think about nail polish and facials. You know what I think about? Ambush tactics. Beheading. Not exactly the stuff dreams are made of. *turns and goes out the door*

Cordelia comes back Cappuccino?

She holds the cup up to him. He looks at her, down at the cappuccino and then back at the door.

Cut to school the next day. Sign-ups are being taken for the volunteer safety program for Halloween. Principal Snyder takes one of the clipboards and looks around the hall. He grabs the next girl that walks by and pulls her aside.

Girl Hey!

Snyder You're volunteering.

He holds out the clipboard and pen to her. Willow, Buffy and Xander come in from the other hall.

Girl But I have to get to class.

Snyder just shrugs. The team walks past him.

Willow Snyder must be in charge of the volunteer safety program for Halloween this year.

Xander Note his interesting take on the volunteer concept.

Buffy What's the deal?

They've reached Willow's locker, and she works the combination.

Xander Oh, a bunch of little kids need people to take them trick-or-treating. Sign up and get your own pack of sugar-hyped little runts for the night.

Buffy Yikes. I'll stick to vampires.

Snyder puts his hand on her shoulder, and she spins around to face him.

Snyder Miss Summers. Just the juvenile delinquent I've been looking for.

Buffy Principal Snyder!

Snyder Halloween must be a big night for you. Tossing eggs, keying cars, bobbing for apples, one pathetic cry for help after another. Well, *leads her to the sign-up table* not this year, missy.

Willow and Xander come stand behind her.

Buffy Gosh, I'd love to sign up, but I recently developed carpal tunnel syndrome, and can tragically no longer hold a flashlight.

Snyder holds up the clipboard and pen.

Snyder The program starts at four, the children have to be back at six.

Buffy reluctantly grabs the pen and clipboard and signs herself up. Xander thinks it's funny and smiles back at Willow. Willow has a concerned look on her face. Snyder holds pens out to Willow and Xander, too. They both look at him, begging not to be put through this. Willow gives in and takes the pen. Cut to another part of the hall.

Xander I can't believe this. We have to get dressed up and the whole deal?

Willow Snyder said costumes were mandatory.

Buffy Great. I was gonna stay in and veg. The one night a year things are supposed to be quiet for me.

Xander Halloween quiet? Oh, I figured it'd be a big old vamp scare-apalooza.

They walk into the lounge.

Buffy Not according to Giles. He swears that tomorrow night is, like, dead for the undead. *the girls sit* They stay in.

Xander smiling Those wacky vampires! That's why I love 'em! They just keep you guessing!

He puts his satchel down on the table and heads over to the soda vending machine. He puts in his coins and hits a button. Nothing. He hits another one. Still nothing. He hits the machine in the front and on the side. Larry

comes up to him and puts his hand on Xander's shoulder.

Larry Harris!

Xander Hey, Lar. You're lookin' Cro-Mag as usual. What can I do you for?

Larry You and Buffy, you're just friends, right?

Xander I like to think of it less as a friendship and more as a solid foundation for future bliss.

Larry So, she, she's not your girlfriend?

Xander Alas, no.

Larry looks over at Buffy as he walks around Xander.

Larry Do you think she'd go out with me?

He turns to face Xander with Buffy to his back now.

Xander Well, Lar, that's a tough question to... No. Not a chance.

Larry Why not? I heard some guys say she was fast.

Xander I hope you mean like the wind.

Larry Yeah, you know what I mean.

Xander That's my friend that you're talkin' about!

Larry Oh, yeah? Well, what're you gonna do about it?

Xander I'm gonna do what any man would do about it: *grabs Larry by the shirt* somethin' damn manly.

Larry smiles and laughs. He knocks Xander's hands away and grabs him by the shirt with his right hand. He balls his left hand into a fist and draws back for a punch. Buffy grabs his wrist, pulls it behind his back and slams his head into the vending machine. A Diet Dr Pepper rolls into the slot.

Buffy Get gone.

She pulls Larry back from the machine and shoves him away. She notices the soda can.

Buffy Ooo! Diet! *grabs the can*

Xander Do you know what you just did?

Buffy Saved you a dollar?

Xander No, but Larry was about to pummel me!

Buffy Oh, that? Forget about it! *heads back to the table*

Xander Oh, I'll forget about it. *follows her* In maybe fifteen, twenty years when my rep for being a sissy man finally fades!

Buffy *stops and faces him* Xander, don't you think you're...

Xander *interrupts* A black eye heals, Buffy, but cowardice has an unlimited shelf life. Oh, thanks! Thanks a lot for **your** help.

He grabs his bag from the table and walks off in a huff. Buffy moans and sits back down with Willow.

Buffy I think I just violated the guy code big time.

Willow Poor Xander. Boys are so fragile. Speaking of, how was your date last night?

Buffy Misfire. I was late due to unscheduled slayage. Showed up looking trashed.

Willow Was he mad?

Buffy Actually he was pretty unmad. Which probably had something to do with the fact that Cordelia was drooling in his cappuccino.

Willow Oh, Buffy. Angel would never fall for her act.

Buffy You mean that 'actually showing up, wearing a stunning outfit, embracing personal hygiene' act?

Willow You know what I mean. Uh, she's not his type.

Buffy Are you sure? I mean, I don't know what his type is. I've known him less than a year, and if you haven't noticed, he's not exactly one to over share.

Willow True. It's too bad we can't sneak a look at the Watcher diaries and read up on Angel. I'm sure it's full of fun facts to know and tell.

Buffy Yeah. It's too bad. That stuff is private.

Willow Also Giles keeps them in his office. In his personal files.

Buffy Most importantly, it would be wrong.

Cut to the library. Willow and Buffy look in through the round door window. They don't see Giles and give each other a look. Buffy quietly opens the door and goes in. She looks back at Willow, who gives her encouragement. The door closes and Willow looks in through the glass. Buffy quietly makes her way up to the counter and looks around again for Giles. Satisfied that he's not there she heads for his office.

Giles Buffy!

She spins around and sees him in the cage getting some old books.

Giles Excellent!

Buffy Nothing! Hi!

Giles Yes, I-I just wanted to talk to you about tomorrow night. As it should be, uh, calm, you might work on some new battle techniques.

Buffy You're beginning to scare me, Giles. You need to have some fun.

She waves to Willow to come in as he's looking down at his books. Willow shakes her head and mouths 'no'. Giles looks up, and Buffy pulls her hand back and pretends she was scratching her head.

Buffy You know, there's this place you can go, right, and you sit in the dark, and there are these moving pictures, right, and the pictures tell a story.

Giles Yes, yes, ha, ha, very droll.

Willow quietly comes in.

Giles I'll have you know that I have very, uh, many relaxing hobbies.

Buffy Such as?

Giles Well, um...

Buffy mouths something to Willow to goad her on.

Giles I enjoy cross-referencing.

Buffy Do you stuff your own shirts, or do you send them out?

She grabs a book from the stack he's about to take to his office and walks around him to draw his view away from his office door.

Buffy So! How come Halloween is such a big yawner? I mean, do the demons just hate how commercial it's become? *leafs through the book*

Giles *puts his books down* Um, it's interesting, ac... Not, I suspect, to you. *takes the book from her* What is it you're after?

Willow has made it to the office door.

Buffy Of course, it's of interest to me! I'm the Slayer. I need to know these things. You can't keep me in the dark any longer.

Willow opens the door and starts in. Giles grabs the stack of books again and starts to turn to his office.

Buffy Look at me when I talk to you!

Willow looks over at them anxiously.

Giles I really don't have time for these games.

Buffy Ms. Calendar said you were a babe.

Willow looks back again, but this time gives Buffy a look and shakes her head.

Giles She said what?

Buffy *meekly* Well, she said that you were a... h-hunk of burning... something or other. So, *exhales* whadaya think of that?

Giles Uh, I... *exhales* I don't, um, uh... A burning hunk of what?

Buffy Look. You know how disgusting it is for me to even contemplate you grownups having smoochies, *sees Willow come out of the office with a diary* but I think you should go for it.

Giles Buffy, I appreciate your interest, but...

Willow hurries past the counter.

Buffy But I've overstepped my bounds. It's none of my business, you know. *stammers* What was I thinking? My God! Shame, *Willow goes out the door* shame. I gotta go. *quickly walks out*

Giles *not sure what to make of it* A babe? *smirks* I can live with that.

Cut to the girls' bathroom. Buffy and Willow are sitting on the sinks and looking at a drawing of a noble woman with a tiny waist wearing a billowy gown.

Buffy Man, look at her.

Willow Who is she?

Buffy It doesn't say, but the entry's dated 1775.

Willow Angel was eighteen. And still human.

Buffy So that's the kinda girl he hung around? She's pretty coiffed.

Willow She looks like a noble woman or something. Which means being beautiful is sort of her job.

Buffy And clearly this girl was a workaholic. I'll never be like this.

Willow C'mon! She's not that pretty. I mean, look at her. She's got a funny... uh, waist. Look how tiny that is.

Buffy *sarcastically* Thank you. Now I feel better.

Willow *exhales* No. She's like a freak. A circus freak. Yuk.

Buffy *exhales* Musta been wonderful. Put on some fantabulous gown and go to a ball like a princess, and have horses and servants, and yet more gowns.

Willow Yeah. Still, I think I prefer being able to vote. *Buffy raises her brows* *smiles* Or I will when I can.

Cordelia comes into the bathroom and goes to the mirror.

Cordelia So, Buffy. You ran off last night and left poor little Angel all by his lonesome. But I did everything I could to comfort him.

Buffy I'll bet.

Cordelia *gets out her blush* So, what's his story anyway? I mean, I never see him around. *brushes some onto her cheeks*

Willow Not during the day, anyway.

Cordelia Oh, please. Don't tell me he still lives at home. Like, he has to wait for his dad to get back before he can take the car? *puts the blush away*

Buffy Cordelia, I think his parents have been dead for a couple of hundred years.

Cordelia *touches up her lip gloss* Oh, good. I mean... *faces them* What?

Buffy Angel's a vampire. I thought you knew.

Cordelia *turns back to the mirror* Oh, he's a vampire. *puts away the lip gloss* Of course! But the cuddly kind. Like a Carebear with fangs?

Willow It's true.

Cordelia *steps over to them* You know what I think? *crosses her arms* I just think you're trying to scare me off 'cause you're afraid of the competition. Look, Buffy, you may be hot stuff when it comes to demonology or whatever, but when it comes to dating, I'm the Slayer. *She walks out. Buffy just watches her go.*

Cut to Ethan's Costume Shop. The store is full of mothers with their kids looking for Halloween costumes. Buffy is handling a plastic pumpkin when it suddenly lights up and screams. She quickly puts it back on the counter. Willow comes over to her.

Buffy What'd you get?

Willow A time-honored classic! *holds up a ghost costume*

Buffy Okay, Will, can I give you a little friendly advice?

Willow It's not spooky enough?

Buffy It's just... you're never gonna get noticed if you keep hiding. You're missing the whole point of Halloween.

Willow *smiles* Free candy?

Buffy It's come as you aren't night. The perfect chance for a girl to get sexy and wild with no repercussions.

Willow Oh, I don't get wild. Wild on me equals spaz.

Buffy Don't underestimate yourself. You've got it in you.

Willow Hey, Xander!

He comes up to them.

Willow What'd you get?

He pulls a toy military rifle out of his bag and holds it up for Willow to see.

Buffy That's not a costume.

Xander *gives Buffy a look, then turns to Willow* I got fatigues from an Army surplus at home. Call me the Two-Dollar Costume King, baby!

He smiles at Willow. She smiles back.

Buffy Hey, look, Xander... *he points the rifle at her* I'm... really sorry about this morning.

Xander Do you mind, Buffy? I'm trying to repress.

Buffy Okay, then I promise, from now on I'll let you get pummeled. *puts her chin on his shoulder and pouts*

Xander *rolls his eyes* Thank you. *Buffy smiles* Okay, y'know, actually I think I could've t...

Buffy is distracted by a costume. She slowly starts walking over to it.

Xander Hello! That was our touching reconciliation moment there.

She keeps walking over to a frilly, red, billowy 18th-century gown.

Buffy I'm sorry, it's just... Look at this.

Willow It's amazing.

Xander Too bulky. I prefer my women in spandex.

Ethan notices her looking at the dress and comes over to them.

Ethan Please, let me.

He takes the dress off of its dressmaker's mannequin.

Buffy Oh, i-it's...

Ethan Magnificent. Yes, I know. There. *holds it up to her in a mirror* My. Meet the hidden princess. I think we found a match. Don't you?

Buffy *looks at Ethan* Oh, uh, I-I'm sorry. There's no way I could ever afford this.

Ethan Oh, nonsense. I feel quite moved to make you a deal you can't refuse.

She looks back into the mirror, takes the dress from Ethan and smiles dreamily as she holds it up to her chin.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. He's watching the video that the vampire took of Buffy's fight.

Spike Here it comes. *watches* Rewind that. Let's see that again.

The vampire rewinds the tape as Spikes strolls around to another monitor.

Spike *chuckles* She's tricky. Baby likes to play.

The scene where she stakes the vampire with the sign re-plays.

Spike You see that? The way she stakes him with that thing? That's what's called resourceful. Rewind it again.

Drusilla *comes from the other room* Miss Edith needs her tea.

Spike C'mere, poodle. *holds his hand out to her*

Drusilla *takes his hand* Do you love my insides? The parts you can't see?

Spike Eyeballs to entrails, my sweet. That's why I've got to study this Slayer. Once I know her I can kill her. And once I kill her you can have your run of Sunnyhell. Get strong again.

Drusilla Don't worry. Everything's switching. Outside to inside. *breathes at Spike's neck* It makes her weak.

Spike Really? Did my pet have a vision?

Drusilla Do you know what I miss? Leeches.

Spike Come on, talk to Daddy. This thing that makes the Slayer weak? When is it?

Drusilla Tomorrow.

Spike Tomorrow's Halloween. Nothing happens on Halloween.

Drusilla Someone's come to change it all. Someone new.

Cut to the back room at Ethan's. He comes through the curtain and kneels before his statue of Janus. He presses his hands together and winces in pain. When he pulls them apart there are wounds in his palms, and blood flows freely from them.

Ethan The world that denies thee, thou inhabit.

He dabs the blood from his left hand with his right middle finger and smears it over his right eyelid.

Ethan The peace that ignores thee,...

He dabs the blood from his right hand with his left middle finger and smears it over his left eyelid.

Ethan ...thou corrupt.

He dabs the blood from his left hand with his right middle finger again and smears a cross onto his forehead.

Ethan Chaos. I remain, as ever, thy faithful, degenerate son.

The camera pans over the top of the statue from the woman's face on one side to the man's face on the other.

Part 2

Buffy's room. She's at her long mirror wearing her gown and a long, black wig. She puts on the second of a pair of earrings. Willow is in the bathroom changing.

Willow Where're you meeting Angel?

Buffy Here. After trick-or-treating. Mom's gonna be out.

Willow Does he know about your costume?

Buffy Nope. Call it a blast from his past. I'll show him I can coif with the best of 'em. *turns to the bathroom door* Okay, Willow, come out. You can't hide in there all night.

Willow O-okay, but, but promise you won't laugh?

Buffy I promise.

Willow opens the door and comes out wearing boots, a short, black leather skirt and a burgundy, long-sleeved, V-necked, midriff-baring top. She's uncomfortable, and quickly steps over to her ghost sheet and picks it up.

Buffy smiles Wow! You're a dish!

Willow tries to hide herself with the sheet, but Buffy takes it from her and tosses it aside.

Buffy I mean, really.

Willow is very uncomfortable and tries to cover herself with her arms.

Willow But this just isn't me.

Buffy And that's the point. *walks around Willow to show her the mirror* Look, Halloween is the night that not you **is** you, but not **you**. Y'know?

The doorbell rings.

Buffy Oh! That's Xander. Are you ready?

Willow nervous Yeah. O-o-okay.

Buffy Cool! I can't wait for the boys to go non-verbal when they see you! *goes to get the door*

Willow is still trying to cover herself.

Cut downstairs. Buffy comes down the stairs and opens the door for Xander. He enters saluting with his toy rifle in his hand.

Xander Private Harris reporting for... *sees Buffy in her costume* Buffy! Lady of Buffdom, Duchess of Buffonia, I am in awe! I completely renounce spandex!

Buffy curtsies Thank you, kind sir. *Xander bows* But wait 'til you see...

They turn to look up the stairs at Willow. She has put on the ghost sheet. It says 'BOO!' on the front in large bold letters.

Willow Hi.

Buffy ...Casper.

Xander Hey, Will! That's aaa fine boo you got there.

Buffy is disappointed. Xander just stares.

Cut to the school. Children are arriving in costume to be taken trick- or-treating. Cut inside to the hall by the stairs. Buffy is standing there holding a clipboard, waiting for her charges. Snyder brings them to her.

Snyder This is your group, Summers. No need to speak to them. The last thing they need is your influence. Just bring them back in one piece and I won't expel you. *starts to leave*

Buffy bends down to the kids Hi.

Snyder Ah, ah!

Buffy straightens back up and rolls her eyes. Cut to Xander in his soldier outfit. Larry comes by dressed as a pirate.

Larry Where's your bodyguard, Harris? *Curling her hair?*

He jumps at Xander, making him flinch. He laughs in Xander's face and goes. Xander points his rifle at him, but then dismisses him.

Cut to Oz checking his guitar at his locker. Cordelia comes into the hall wearing a tight-fitting catsuit and walks up to him.

Cordelia Oz. Oz.

Oz looks up at her Hey, Cordelia. Jeez, you're like a great big cat.

Cordelia It's my costume. Are you guys playing tonight?

Oz Yeah, at the Shelter Club.

Cordelia Is Mr. I'm-the-lead-singer-I'm-so-great-I-don't-have-to-show-up-for-my-date-or-even-call gonna be there?

Oz Yeah, y'know, he's just going by 'Devon' now.

Cordelia Well, you can tell him that I don't care, and that I didn't even mention it. And that I didn't even see you. So that's just fine.

Oz So, what do I tell him?

Cordelia Nothing! Jeez! Get with the program. *walks off in a huff*

Oz sarcastically Why can't I meet a nice girl like that?

Willow comes down the hall in her ghost sheet. Oz turns around and bumps right into her.

Oz Oh! I'm sorry.

Willow Sorry.

Oz I'm sorry.

Willow Sorry.

Oz Sorry.

Oz and Willow continue down the hall on their separate ways.

Cut to Xander briefing his group. He's got them all lined up and standing at attention.

Xander Okay, on sleazing extra candy: tears are key. Tears will normally get you the double-bagger. You can also try the old 'you missed me' routine, but it's risky. Only go there for chocolate. Understood?

They all nod their heads.

Xander Okay, troops.

He turns and faces down the hall. The kids follow his lead.

Xander Let's move out.

Cut to the streets. A student dressed as a vampire is escorting a group of kids. They walk by Buffy's group coming back from a house. Buffy crouches down to see what they got.

Buffy What did Mrs. Davis give you?

They all pull out toothbrushes.

Buffy She must be stopped. Let's hit one more house. *gets up* We still have a few more minutes before I need to get you back.

Cut to the back room at Ethan's. He weaves a spell in Latin.

Ethan Janus, evoco vestram animam. Exaudi meam causam. Carpe noctem pro consilio vestro. Veni, appare et nobis monstra quod est infinita potestas.

Translation Janus, I invoke your spirit. Hear my plea. Seize the night for your own reason. Come, appear and show to us that which is infinite power.

Cut to a house. Willow follows her charges along the porch to the door.

Willow C'mon, guys.

One of the kids wearing a green monster mask on his head rings the bell and steps back. An old lady answers the door. The kid with the mask pulls it down over his face.

Kids Trick-or-treat!

Lady Oh, my goodness, aren't you adorable!

Cut to Ethan's.

Ethan Persona se corpum et sanguinum commutandum est. Vestra sancta praesentia concrescet viscera. Janus! Sume noctem!

Translation The mask transforms itself into flesh and blood. Your holy presence curdles the heart. Janus! Take the night!

Cut to Buffy. A wind begins to blow. She senses something isn't quite right.

Cut to the Lady with Willow's kids. She looks into her empty candy bucket.

Lady Oh, dear! Am I all out?

Cut to Ethan's. He raises his head.

Ethan Showtime!

Cut to the Lady's house.

Lady I could've sworn I had more candy.

The kid wearing a red rubber cap with horns morphs into a horned, red skinned monster.

Lady I'm sorry, mister monster. *bends down* Maybe I... *The kid with the green mask has changed into a monster also, and grabs the lady by the neck and begins to choke her. The other kids scream and run away.*

Willow No! Let her go!

The red monster attacks the green one, and he lets go of the lady. The two monsters are at each other's throats.

Willow Stop! What're you doing?!

The lady runs into the house and slams the door shut.

Willow Stop! Hey!

The two monsters keep fighting. Willow suddenly starts to feel weak.

Cut to the street. Xander is standing there watching all the parents and children running around him. Things are being thrown and windows are being broken.

Cut to Willow. She staggers a bit as the two monsters keep fighting.

Willow Ohmigod! Can't breathe...

She collapses to the floor.

Cut to Xander. He jerks back like he's just been hit by something. He bends over slightly, looks down and lowers his toy rifle. Slowly he straightens back up and surveys the scene around him. He raises his rifle again and cradles the fully automatic M-16 in his hands. He shoulders the weapon and spins around, scanning for a target. When he doesn't immediately find one, he takes the rifle from his shoulder and holds it ready.

Cut to Willow on the porch. She gets up out of her body and looks down at it. She's only wearing her sexy outfit now without the sheet.

Willow Ohmigod! I'm a real ghost!

She hears automatic rifle fire and turns to look.

Willow Xander?

She runs out into the street and comes up behind him.

Willow Xander!

He spins around and points his M-16 at her.

Willow It's me, Willow!

Xander I don't know any Willow.

Willow Xander, quite messing around. This is no time for jokes.

Xander What the hell's going on here?

Willow You don't know me?

Xander *lifts the rifle away from her* Lady, I suggest you find cover. *starts walking past her*

Willow *gets in front of him* No, wait!

Xander walks right through her. They're both surprised by the experience.

Willow Oh!

Xander turns around and points his weapon at her again. She turns to face him.

Xander What are you?

Willow Xander, listen to me. I'm on your side, I swear! Something crazy is happening. I was dressed as a ghost for Halloween, a-and now I am a ghost. And you were supposed to be a soldier, and now I, I-I guess you're a real soldier.

Xander You expect me to believe that?

A monster appears across the street, growling. Xander points his rifle at it. It runs away. Willow jumps in front of him.

Willow No! No guns! That's still a little kid in there!

Xander Step out of the way!

Willow No guns! That's an order!

He lowers the rifle.

Willow We just need to find... *sees her Buffy!*
She runs across the street over to Buffy. Xander follows.
Willow Buffy! Are you okay?
The monster is back with a friend, and they both roar as they approach. Xander shoulders his M-16 again and

takes aim.
Xander This could be a situation.
Willow Buffy, what do we do?
Buffy faints and falls to the ground.

Part 3

The street. Xander fires off a couple dozen rounds at the approaching monsters. They turn and run. Xander lowers his rifle. The camera pans down from him to Willow kneeling beside Buffy, who's lying against a tree.

Willow Buffy, are you alright?

Buffy What?

Xander Are you hurt?

Willow Buffy, are you hurt?

Buffy *sits up* Buffy?

Willow *to Xander* She's not Buffy.

Xander Who's Buffy?

Willow Oh, this is fun. *to Buffy* What year is this?

Xander takes Buffy's hand and helps her up.

Buffy 1775, I believe. *confused and hyperventilating* I-I don't understand. Who are you?

Willow We're friends.

Buffy F-friends of whom? Y-your dress... Everything is strange! How did I come to be here?

Willow Breathe, okay, breathe. You're gonna faint again. *to Xander* How are we supposed to get through this without the Slayer?

Xander What's a Slayer?

A monster comes around the tree behind Buffy and roars, fangs bared and claws raised to attack. Buffy screams and backs off. Xander jumps in and whacks the monster across the face with the butt of his rifle, knocking it down and out.

Xander I suggest we get inside before we come across anything...

Buffy *screaming* A DEMON! A DEMON! *gets behind Xander* A DEMON!

A sport utility vehicle comes driving down the street with its headlights on.

Willow That's not a demon. It's a car.

Buffy What does it want?

Xander Is this woman insane?

Willow She's never seen a car.

Xander She's never seen a car?

Willow She's from the past.

Xander And you're a ghost.

Willow Yes! Now let's get inside.

Xander I just want you to know that I'm taking a lot on faith here. Where do we go?

Willow *thinks* Where's the closest... We can go to a friend's.

Cut to the Summers house. Cut to the kitchen. Xander opens the door and scans the room.

Xander All clear!

Willow *walks in* Hello? Mrs. Summers? *no response*
Good, she's gone.

Xander closes the door.

Buffy Where are we?

Willow Your place. Now we just need to...

There's a banging at the front door. Xander goes to investigate, and Willow and Buffy follow.

Willow Don't open it!

Xander Could be a civilian.

Willow Or a mini demon.

Buffy notices a picture on a table and goes over to look. She picks it up, and sees it's of her wearing a spaghetti strap top. She turns around as Willow comes over to her.

Buffy This... this could be me.

Willow It is you. Buffy, can't you remember at all?

Buffy No! I, I don't understand any of this! Uh, uh, th... This is some other girl! *puts the picture back* I would never wear this, that low apparel, and I don't like this place, and I don't like you, and I just wanna go home!

Willow You **are** home!

Buffy is practically in tears. Willow turns back to Xander.

Willow She couldn't've dressed up like Xena?

Xander scans the outside through one of the small windows in the door. He moves away just as a monster punches through the glass and reaches for him. It pulls its hand back as Xander raises his M-16.

Willow Not a civilian!

Xander Affirmative! *takes aims through the broken portal*

Willow Hey! What did we say?!

Xander lets loose a volley of bullets. Willow winces at the noise. Buffy bows her head and covers her ears. Xander rolls away from the door when he's finished his burst.

Xander Big noise scare monster, remember?

Willow Got it.

They hear a woman screaming outside. Xander looks out again.

Xander Damn it!

He opens the door and goes out to rescue whomever it is, pulling the door closed behind him. Buffy runs up to Willow.

Buffy Surely he'll not desert us!

Willow *shakes her head* Whatever.

She rolls her eyes and heads into the living room. Buffy is wide-eyed with fear.

Cut outside. Cordelia screams as she runs from a sasquatch.

Cordelia Somebody help me!

She looks back at the monster chasing her and screams.

When she turns back around again she runs into Xander.

Cordelia Xander! Help me!

Xander Come inside!

He takes her by her elbow and leads her to the house.

Cut inside. Willow watches through the window. Xander and Cordelia quickly come in through the door.

Willow Cordelia!

Cordelia Wait a... What's going on?

Willow Okay, your name is Cordelia, you're not a cat, you're in high school, and we're your friends. Well, sort of.

Cordelia That's nice, Willow. And you went mental when?

Willow You know us?

Cordelia Yeah. Lucky me. What's with the name game?

Willow A lot's going on.

Cordelia No kidding. I was just attacked by Jo-Jo, the Dog-Faced Boy. Look at my costume! *shows the torn sleeve* Do you really think that Partytown's gonna give me my deposit back? Not on the likely.

Xander has taken his shirt off and puts it around her shoulders.

Xander Here.

Cordelia Thanks.

Willow Okay. You guys stay here while I get some help. If something tries to get in, just fight it off.

Buffy Well, i-it's not our place to fight. Uh, surely some men will protect us.

Cordelia What's that riff?

Willow I-it's like amnesia, okay? They don't know who they are. Just sit tight. *starts to go*

Cordelia Who died and made her the boss?

Willow walks through the wall behind Cordelia. Buffy stares in wide-eyed amazement.

Cut outside. Several monsters are chasing people down the street past Spike.

Spike Well! This is just... neat!

Cut inside. Xander brings a chair over from the dining room.

Xander to Cordelia You! Check upstairs. Make sure everything's locked up.

He positions the chair to help hold the table they've up-ended against the window in place. Cordelia heads upstairs.

Buffy Surely there's somewhere we can go. A safe haven.

Xander Lady said stay put.

Buffy You would take orders from a woman? A-are you feeble in some way?

Xander Ma'am, in the Army we have a saying: sit down and shut the...

He sees a picture on the floor

Xander Whoa!

He picks it up. It's of the three of them.

Xander She must be right. We must have some kind of amnesia.

Buffy I don't know what that is, but I'm certain I don't have it. I bathe quite often!

Xander How do you explain this?

Buffy I don't! I was brought up a proper lady. I-I wasn't meant to understand things. I'm just meant to look pretty, and then someone nice will marry me. Possibly a Baron.

Xander This ain't no tea party, princess. Sooner or later you're gonna have to fight!

Buffy Fight these low creatures? *snotty* I'd sooner die. *crosses her arms*

Xander Then you'll die.

Angel comes in from the kitchen.

Angel Oh, good! You guys are alright. It's total chaos out there.

They both look at him.

Buffy and Xander Who are you?

Cut to the library. Giles is going through a stack of cards he's pulled from the card catalog. He hears yelling and sirens outside and looks up, wondering what's going on. He sees Willow come through the wall and jumps in complete surprise, letting the cards fly all over the place.

Giles Jeez!

Willow Hi.

Giles *calms down a bit* Uh... ah... *speechless* huh...

Cut to Buffy's house.

Angel Okay, somebody wanna fill me in?

Xander Do you live here?

Angel No, and you know that. Buffy, *she jumps* I'm lost here. You... What's up with your hair?

Cordelia *comes back in* They don't know who they are, everyone's turned into a monster, it's a whole big thing. *smiles* How are you?

The lights go out. Buffy grabs Cordelia in fright.

Cordelia Do you mind?

Buffy lets go of her.

Xander to Angel You take the princess and secure the kitchen. Catwoman, you're with me.

Cordelia follows Xander as Angel heads for the kitchen.

Buffy But I don't wanna go with you! I-I like the man with the musket!

Angel *takes her arm* C'mon.

Buffy Do you have a musket?

They go into the kitchen. Angel sees that the door is open.

Angel I didn't leave that open.

He quietly moves toward the door as he looks around for an intruder. He closes the door. The basement door behind Buffy opens, and a vampire attacks her. She tries to push the door closed on him. Angel grabs the vampire and wrestles him to the floor. It's the student escort in a vampire costume.

Angel A stake!

Buffy A what?

Angel Get me a stake!

Buffy looks around and grabs a knife she sees on the counter.

Angel Hurry up!

He turns to look what's keeping her and has his game face on. Buffy screams at the top of her lungs. She runs for the door.

Angel Buffy, no!

She opens the door and runs out.

Cut to the library. Giles is in the cage getting a stack of old papers. He blows the dust off of them and comes back out. Willow is looking at a book.

Willow I don't even know what I'm looking for. Plus I can't turn the page.

Giles Well, alright, I-let's, let's, let's review. *sets the papers on the table* Um, so everybody became, uh, whatever they were masquerading as.

Willow Right. Xander was a soldier and Buffy was an 18th-century girl.

Giles *confused* A-and, uh, your, your costume?

Willow I'm a ghost!

Giles Yes. Um... w, uh, uh, uh, the ghost of what, exactly?

Willow *covers her midriff with her arms* Well, this is nothing. You should see what Cordelia was wearing. A-a, a unitard with cat things, like ears and stuff.

Giles Good heavens. Uh, sh-sh-she became an actual feline?

Willow No! She was the same old Cordelia. Just in a cat costume.

Giles She didn't change.

Willow No. Hold on... Partytown. She told us she got her outfit from Partytown.

Giles A-a-and everyone who changed, they, they, they, they acquired their costumes where?

Willow We all got ours at a new place. Ethan's.

Cut to an alley. Buffy runs between all the trash that's piled up there.

Cut to the street. Cordelia, Angel and Xander are looking for Buffy. Xander has his rifle raised and ready. The camera follows them as they walk.

Xander Are you sure she came this way?

Angel No.

Cordelia She'll be okay.

Angel Buffy would be okay. Whoever she is now, she's helpless. C'mon!

The camera moves behind a tree where Spike is hiding and overhearing their conversation. He turns to the child monsters Willow was chaperoning.

Spike Do you hear that, my friends?

The monsters nod and growl.

Spike Somewhere out here is the *cut to Buffy running down the alley* **tenderest** meat you've **ever** tasted, and all **we** have to do is find her first!

Buffy has stopped running and leans against a crate. She sniffs and looks around, frightened.

Part 4

The alley. Buffy looks around, trying to decide what to do. She lifts her skirt a bit and starts to walk. She turns around to look behind her and takes a few steps backward. When she turns back around Larry, who has turned into a pirate, startles her. He smiles widely at her, showing his rotten teeth.

Larry Pretty, pretty!

Buffy tries to run away, and Larry gives chase.

Cut to Ethan's Costume Shop. Giles looks around as he and Willow come in.

Giles Hello! Anyone home?

Willow sees the curtain to the back room partially open.

Willow Giles...

They slowly go in and see the statue of Janus there. Its eyes glow green.

Giles Janus. Roman mythical god.

Willow What does this mean?

Giles Primarily the division of self. Male and female, light and dark.

Ethan *appears* Chunky and creamy. Oh, no, sorry, that's peanut butter.

Giles stares at Ethan as though he's seen a ghost.

Giles Willow, get out of here, now.

Willow But...

Giles Now!

She obeys him and goes.

Giles Hello, Ethan.

Ethan Hello, Ripper.

Cut to the alley. Buffy backs away from Larry. She turns to run, but trips and falls. Her gown billows out around her. Larry grabs her as she tries to get up and shoves her against a crate. He pushes her hair away from her fright-

ened face and moves in to kiss her. Xander comes running and tackles Larry down to the pavement. He gets up and pulls Larry up and into a metal warehouse door. He punches him in the face and gut. Larry pushes him off and into the opposite alley wall and punches him back in the gut. Xander grabs Larry's arm and pulls it behind his back, forcing him to bend over, and knees him in the stomach. Cordelia arrives behind Buffy with Angel.

Cordelia Buffy! Are you okay?

Buffy sees Angel, yelps and cowers behind a box.

Cordelia What's your deal? Take a pill!

Larry attacks Xander with his pirate's sword. Xander sidesteps him, grabs him by the wrist and twists his arm around, making him drop the sword. He lifts Larry back up and punches him, sending him sprawling into a pile of trash.

Buffy He's, he's a vampire!

Cordelia *to Angel* She's got this thing where she thinks... *exasperated* Uhhh, forget it. *to Buffy* It's okay. Angel is a good vampire. He would never hurt you.

Buffy *slowly stands up* Really?

Cordelia Absolutely. He's our friend.

Angel heads over to Xander fighting Larry. Xander punches Larry, sending him into the pile of trash and a stack of boxes again. Several boxes fall off of the top and onto Larry. He is knocked out cold.

Xander *to Angel* It's strange, but beating up that pirate gave me a weird sense of closure.

Willow comes running down the alley from the other end.

Willow Guys!

Xander Willow!

Willow Guys, you gotta get inside.

She looks back and they see Spike and his monster gang coming.

Xander We need a triage!

Angel *points the other way* This way! Find an open warehouse.

Xander turns and picks up his rifle.

Xander Ladies, we're on the move!

He quickly heads down the alley. Cordelia and Willow follow him. Angel lifts Buffy and carries her away. Spike and the monsters walk after them at a quick, deliberate pace.

Cut to Ethan's.

Ethan What? No hug? Aren't you pleased to see your old mate, Rupert?

Giles I'm just surprised I didn't guess it was you. This Halloween stunt stinks of Ethan Rayne.

Ethan Yes, it does, doesn't it? Don't wish to blow my own trumpet, but it's genius. The very embodiment of 'be careful what you wish for'.

Giles It's sick, brutal, and it harms the innocent.

Ethan Oh, and we all know that you are the champion of innocents and all things pure and good, Rupert. It's quite a little act you've got going here, old man.

Giles It's no act. It's who I am.

Ethan Who you are? The Watcher, sniveling, tweed-clad guardian of the Slayer and her kin? I think not. I know who you are, Rupert, and I know what you're capable of. *considers* But they don't, do they? They have no idea where you come from.

Giles Break the spell, Ethan. Then leave this place and never come back.

Ethan Why should I? What's in the bargain for me?

Giles You get to live.

Ethan Oh, Rupert, you're scaring me.

Giles punches him in the gut with a left, making him double over, and follows up with a right to the face.

Cut to the alley. Angel has gotten ahead of the others and finds an open warehouse.

Angel Over here!

Xander pushes the door aside, and they all hurry in.

Xander Check if there are any other ways in!

He slides the door closed again as Angel sets Buffy back down on her feet next to Cordelia.

Angel Just stay here.

The monsters arrive and start pounding on the door from outside. Xander picks up a large grate and sets it in front of the door on top of some barrels he's already moved into place. Buffy is holding on tightly to Cordelia.

Cordelia Oh, faboo, more clinging.

Xander picks up another grate and sets it behind the first one as the monsters get the door open. They pound against it as he tries to hold it in place.

Xander GOOOOO!

They all start running again, and Xander follows when he can no longer hold the grating against the monsters.

The grates fall to the floor as two monsters come in and push the barrels aside. Spike follows them in and looks around. He leads the monsters off after them.

Cut to Ethan's. Ethan is on the floor, severely beaten up.

Ethan And you said the Ripper was long gone.

Giles Tell me how to stop the spell.

Ethan Say 'pretty please'.

Giles kicks him hard in the kidney, and he yells out in pain.

Cut to the warehouse. Spike has caught up with them, and the monsters hold Xander and Angel. He slowly closes in on Buffy as she backs away, trembling.

Spike Look at you. Shaking. Terrified. Alone. Lost little lamb.

Buffy has backed up against a crate and can't go any further. Spike slaps her across the face with the back of his

hand.

Spike I love it.

Angel struggles with the two monsters holding him.

Angel Buffy!

Spike puts his left hand around her throat and bends her backward onto the crate. He strokes her forehead with his right hand. Xander struggles with his two captors. Spike grabs Buffy's hair and closes in for the bite.

Cut to Ethan's. Giles kicks him again.

Giles Now, tell me how to stop the spell.

Ethan Janus. Break its statue.

Giles grabs the statue and lifts it over his head to smash it.

Cut to the warehouse. Xander gets free of the monsters and punches one in the face, the other in the gut, and then shoves the second monster into the first. Spike closes in on Buffy. Xander turns his attention to Spike.

Willow Now that guy you **can** shoot.

Xander grabs his M-16.

Cut to Ethan's. Giles throws the statue hard to the floor, smashing it into tiny pieces.

Cut to the warehouse. Xander shoulds his toy rifle.

Xander What the...

The monsters have all turned back into children and student escorts. The kids are frightened, and begin to cry and complain.

Kid I'm scared! I want my mommy!

Spike looks back at them and straightens up. He pulls on Buffy's hair to pull her up and finds he just has a wig in his hands. He looks at Buffy. She gets up off of the crate and smiles at him.

Buffy Hi, honey. I'm home.

She punches him in the gut, twice in the face, and kicks him in the chest, making him stagger back into a set of mobile stairs. He grabs a length of pipe that's leaning there and swings it at her. She catches the end of it and pulls him around and into the crate he had her against. She uses the pipe like a quarterstaff and swings it into his jaw and jabs him in the stomach. He doubles over in pain.

Buffy You know what? It's good to be me.

She brings the pipe up into his chin from underneath. He flies back onto the crate, then slides off onto the floor. Cut to Ethan's. Giles looks behind him and sees that Ethan has gone.

Cut to the warehouse. Buffy is through fighting. Spike gets up and growls at her, then makes a hasty retreat. Buffy drops the pipe and turns to the others. Xander comes over to her.

Xander Hey, Buff. Welcome back.

Buffy Yeah! You, too.

Cordelia You guys remember what happened?

Xander It was way creepy. It's like I was there, but I couldn't get out.

Cordelia Yeah, I know the feeling. This outfit's totally skintight.

She looks up at Angel as he comes over to Buffy.

Angel You okay?

Buffy Yeah.

He puts his arm around her shoulders and leads her away.

Cordelia Hello?! It felt like I was talking, my lips were moving and...

Xander *shakes his head.* Give it up, Cordy. You're never gonna get between those two. Believe me, I know.

Cordelia Well, *indicates the kids* I guess you better get them back to their parents.

Xander *looks around* Yeah, everybody seems to... Where's Willow?

Cut to the house where Willow collapsed. The camera pans from the pumpkin over to her. She wakes and gets up, pulling the ghost sheet off. She's a bit out of breath. She realizes how she's dressed and starts to put the sheet back on, but thinks better of it and throws it into a trash-can as she walks off the porch.

Cut to the street. Oz is driving along in his van. He pulls to a stop at an intersection and sees Willow cross the street in front of him. He watches her as she continues away. "How She Died", by Treble Charger, plays on the van's stereo.

Lyrics You got the best of me / And, gee, you took so long / The things you put me through / Seemed to be so wrong

Oz Who is that girl?

Lyrics You took your...

Cut to the Summers house. Cut to Buffy's room. Angel is lounging on her bed. She opens the door and comes in wearing a tank top and sweatpants.

Buffy Tada. Just little old 20th-century me.

Angel Sure you're okay?

Buffy I'll live.

She walks over to him, and he sits up on the bed.

Angel I don't get it, Buffy. Why'd you think I'd like you better dressed that way?

Buffy *sits next to him* I just wanted to be a real girl for once. The kind of fancy girl you liked when you were my age.

Angel *ironically* Oh, ho.

Buffy What?

Angel I hated the girls back then. Especially the noble women.

Buffy *nods* You did.

Angel They were just incredibly dull. Simpering morons, the lot of them. I always wished I could meet

someone... exciting. *looks her in the eyes* Interesting.

Buffy Really? Interesting how?

Angel You know how.

Buffy Still, I had a really hard day. You should probably tell me.

Angel *smiles and draws nearer* You're right. I should.

Buffy *gets closer* Definitely.

They kiss gently yet passionately. She cradles his face in her hands.

Cut to Ethan's. The place has been emptied. Giles comes in the front door. He walks over to the main counter and looks around. He sees a note propped up on another counter and goes over to it. He picks it up and reads it.

Note Be seeing you...

Lie to Me

Written by **Joss Whedon**

Directed by **Joss Whedon**

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB television network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Lie To Me". It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes

and camera movements where I felt they were needed. I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.02

This episode was originally broadcast on November 3, 1997.

Copyright (C) 1997 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Sunnydale Park after dusk. The playground is deserted. The carousel slowly turns, and the swings move in the light evening breeze. The only person there is a boy sitting on the jungle gym, waiting for his ride home.

James C'mon, Mom. She's always late.

The camera pans around him until Drusilla can be seen slowly walking toward him from behind.

Drusilla Are you lost?

James looks back at her No. My mom's just supposed to pick me up is all. *climbs out of the gym*

Drusilla Do you want me to walk you home?

James No, thank you.

Drusilla touches the gym *My mummy used to sing me to sleep at night. slowly walks around the gym as she sings Run and catch / The lamb is caught in the blackberry patch... She had the sweetest voice. What will your mummy sing when they find your body?*

James looks at her nervously *I'm not supposed to talk to people.*

Drusilla Oh. Well, I'm not a person, see, so that's just...

Angel suddenly steps between her and the boy.

Angel to the boy, sternly *Run home.*

The boy only hesitates for a moment before running off. Drusilla watches him run away in dismay. Angel takes a breath and turns around to face her.

Drusilla My Angel!

Angel Hello, Drusilla.

Drusilla slowly approaches *Do you remember the song mummy used to sing me? Pretty.*

Angel I remember.

Drusilla senses *Yes, you do.*

Angel Drusilla, leave here. I'm offering you that chance. Take Spike and get out.

Drusilla Or you'll hurt me?

Angel looks down at the ground.

Drusilla senses *No. No, you can't. Not anymore.*

Angel If you don't leave it'll go badly. For all of us.

Drusilla My dear boy's gone all away, hasn't he? To her. *Cut to the roof of the building across the street from the park.*

Angel Who?

Buffy walks along the roof keeping watch.

Drusilla The girl. The Slayer.

Buffy senses something and heads for the edge of the roof. Cut to the park.

Drusilla Your heart stinks of her. *puts her hand on his chest Poor little thing. cut to Buffy She has no idea what's in store.*

Buffy looks over the edge and sees them standing close together. She can overhear.

Angel This can't go on, Drusilla. It's gotta end.

She tilts her head and reaches up for a kiss.

Drusilla Oh, no, my pet. This is just the beginning.

She pulls away without kissing and gives him an evil smile. She keeps her head turned to him as she slowly walks away. Buffy swallows at what she sees. Angel watches Drusilla go for another moment, then turns to leave also. Buffy steps away from the edge of the roof and runs off.

Part 1

Sunnydale High School the next morning.

Jenny It's a secret!

Cut inside. Jenny and Giles come down the stairs.

Giles What kind of a secret?

Jenny Uh, the kind that's secret. You know, where I don't actually tell you what it is.

Giles I think it's customary that when two people are going out on an evening that they, they both have an idea of where they're going.

Jenny Oh, come on! Where is your sense of adventure?

Giles Well, I, I... Uh, how will I know what to wear?

Jenny *looks at his tweed suit* Do you own anything else?

Giles Uh, w-well, not as such, no, um...

Jenny *laughs* Rupert, you're gonna have to trust me.

Giles Alright, alright, I p-put myself in your hands.

Jenny That sounds like fun. *starts on her way* Okay, tomorrow night, 7:30, right?

Giles Yes.

Buffy comes up to him as Jenny leaves.

Buffy Hey.

Giles Hello. *they start to the library* Um, did we hunt last night?

Buffy I did a couple quick sweeps downtown.

Giles Any encounters?

Buffy Nothing vampirey.

Giles Uh, I've been researching your friend Spike. Uh, the profile is fairly unappetizing. But I-I still haven't got a bead on why he's here.

Buffy You'll figure it out.

Giles You alright? You seem a little glum.

Buffy I'm fine.

They stop outside the library.

Giles Why don't you take the night off?

Buffy Okay. That'd be nice.

Giles Yes. You could spend some time with Angel.

Buffy I don't know. He might have other plans.

She walks off to class. Giles wonders what that was all about.

Cut to class. Buffy opens a note from Willow.

Note Do you know who she was?

Boy Well, it seems like Louis XVI was just sort of a weak king.

Buffy and Willow glance at each other. Buffy starts to write an answer to the note.

Teacher That's fair enough. Uh, any other impressions? *The camera pans forward to Cordelia sitting in front of Buffy. Xander is across from her in front of Willow, and looks over at Cordelia with his head propped up on his fist.*

Cordelia I just don't see why everyone's always picking on Marie Antoinette. I can so relate to her. She worked really hard to look that good, and people just don't appreciate that kind of effort.

Buffy has finished her answer to Willow's note.

Answer No Dark hair Old dress pretty

Cordelia And I know the peasants were all depressed...

Xander I think you mean 'oppressed'.

Cordelia Whatever. They were cranky.

Buffy folds the note and hands it back to Willow.

Cordelia So they're, like, 'Let's lose some heads'. Uhhh! That's fair. And, and Marie Antoinette cared about them. She was gonna let them have cake!

The camera pans over to Willow finishing another note.

Teacher Yes, well, that's a very interesting perspective. *Willow hands Buffy the note.*

Teacher Um, would anyone else like to comment?

Buffy opens the note.

Note Vampire?

The bell rings. Cut to the hall. Buffy, Willow and Xander come out of class.

Buffy I don't know. I don't think so. They seemed pretty friendly.

Xander Who's friendly?

Buffy No one.

Willow Angel and a girl.

Buffy Willow, do we have to be in total share mode?

Xander Hey, it's me. If Angel's doing somethin' wrong, I wanna know. 'Cause it gives me a happy! *smiles*

They head into the lounge.

Buffy Mm, I'm glad someone has a happy.

Xander Aw, you just need cheering up. And I know just the thing! *does a wild move* Crazy dance party at the Bronze!

Buffy I dunno. *crosses her arms, depressed*

Xander Very calm dance party at the Bronze? *Buffy gives him a glum look* Moping at the Bronze.

He sits on a couch next to Willow. Ford walks up the steps behind Buffy.

Ford I'd suggest a box of Oreos dunked in apple juice, but maybe she's over that phase.

Buffy uncrosses her arms and turns around.

Buffy Ford?

Ford Hey, Summers!

They embrace.

Ford How ya been?

Buffy Oh, my God! What are you doing here?

They let go and hold both hands.

Ford Uh, matriculating.

Buffy Huh?

Ford I'm finishing out my senior year at Sunnydale High. Dad got transferred.

Buffy This is great!

Ford I'm glad you think so.

Xander is not pleased.

Ford I didn't think you'd remember me.

Buffy Remember you? Duh! We only went to school together for seven years. You were my giant fifth grade crush.

Xander So! You two know each other.

Buffy Oh! *turns to Xander and Willow* I'm sorry. Um, this is Ford! Uh, Billy Fordham, this is Xander and Willow!

Buffy and Ford go to sit on the other couch.

Xander Hi.

Ford Hey.

Willow Nice to meet you!

Buffy Uh, Ford and I went to Hemery together in L.A. *to Ford* And now you're here. For real?

Ford Dad got the transfer, and boom, he just dragged me outta Hemery and put me down here.

Buffy This is great! Well, I mean, it's hard, sudden move, all your friends, delicate time, very emotional, but let's talk about me! *puts her hand on his knee* This is great!

Willow *smiles* So, you two were sweeties in fifth grade?

Buffy Not even. Ford wouldn't give me the time of day.

Ford Well, I was a manly sixth-grader. I couldn't bother with someone that young.

Buffy It was terrible. I moped over you for months. Sitting in my room listening to that Divinyls song 'I Touch Myself'.

She realizes how what she just said could be taken and casts a nervous look at Xander and Willow.

Buffy Of course, I had no idea what it was about.

Ford nervously scratches his temple with his finger. Xander just smiles and nods.

Buffy *to Ford* Hey, are you busy tonight? We're going to the Bronze, it's the local club, and you have to come.

Ford I'd love to! But if you guys already had plans... Would I be imposing?

Xander No, only in the literal sense.

Ford Okay, then! I, I gotta find the admissions office, *gets up* uh, get my papers in order.

Buffy Well, you know what, *gets up* I'll take you there, and I'll see you guys in French! *takes Ford's arm*

Ford It was good to meet you. *they go*

Xander smiles at them until they've gone. Next to him Willow has a thoughtful look on her face.

Xander *sarcastically* This is Ford, my bestest friend of all my friends! Jeez, doesn't she know any fat guys?

Willow *realizes* Oh, that's what that song is about!?

Cut to the Bronze. Xander, Willow and Ford are playing pool. Ford sinks his shot and sets up for another as Buffy arrives at the table.

Buffy Ford! You made it.

Ford Wasn't hard to find.

Willow Buffy, Ford was just telling us about the ninth grade beauty contest, and the, uh, swimsuit competition.

Buffy Oh, my God, Ford, stop that! The more people you tell, the more people I have to kill.

Ford You can't touch me, Summers. I know all your darkest secrets.

Xander Care to make a small wager on that?

Buffy I'm gonna go get a drink. Ford, try not to talk. *She heads for the bar and finds Angel there.*

Buffy Hi.

Angel Hey! I was hoping you'd show.

Buffy *sees he has a drink* You drink! I mean, drinks. Non-blood things.

Angel There's a lot about me you don't know.

Buffy I believe that.

Cut to the pool table. They're racking them up. Ford sees Buffy with Angel.

Willow That's Angel.

Xander He's Buffy's beau. *sarcastically* Her special friend.

Ford He's not in school, right? He looks older than her.

Xander You're not wrong.

Cut to the bar.

Buffy So. What'd you do last night?

Angel Nothin'.

Buffy Nothing at all. You ceased to exist?

Angel No, I mean I stayed in, read.

Buffy Oh.

She goes back to the pool table without another word. Angel stands there confused for a moment, then follows her.

Ford Didn't want that soda after all?

Buffy Not thirsty.

Willow Hey, Angel.

Ford Hi.

Buffy *turns to Angel* This is Ford. We went to school together in L.A.

Angel Nice to meet you. *shakes Ford's hand*

Ford Whoa! Cold hands!

Xander You're not wrong.

Buffy gives Xander a look.

Angel So, you're here visiting Buffy?

Ford No, I'm actually here to stay. Just moved down.

Willow Hey, Angel? Do you wanna play?

Buffy Y'know, it's getting really crowded in here tonight. Um... I'm a little hot. *to Ford* You wanna take a walk?

Ford Um, sure! That'd be nice.

Buffy Okay, then, um... *to the others* I'll see ya tomorrow. *leads Ford out past Angel*

Angel Good night.

Ford Take care.

Xander Okay, once more with tension.

Angel He just moved here?

Xander Yeah. And, boy, does he move fast.

Willow Well, Angel, we could still play.

She moves the rack into position, and when she looks back up Angel is gone.

Willow See, you made him do that thing where he's gone.

Xander dismisses her comment and gets ready to break.

Cut outside to the alley. Buffy and Ford stroll slowly along.

Ford So, that was your boyfriend?

Buffy No. Uh, yeah. Maybe. Could we lay off the tough questions for a while?

Ford Sorry. So! What else do you do for fun around here?

She hears noises coming from around the corner and suspects a vampire.

Buffy Um, my purse. I-I, I left my purse at the Bronze. Uh, could you get it for me?

Ford Uh, okay. *heads back*

Buffy Good. Run! Thanks!

He starts to jog. A second later she starts running in the opposite direction and around the corner. Ford looks back and stops when he sees she's gone. He can hear a woman crying. He starts to walk back. When he's almost there a woman comes running around the corner and past him. He continues on, and is startled by a metal trashcan flying in front of him and into a stack of crates. He can hear punching and grunting. He sees someone hit the pavement face first. He peeks around the corner and sees a vampire get up and take a swing at Buffy. She ducks the punch and kicks the vampire in the face. The vampire swings again, and Buffy grabs his fist and holds on while she punches him in the face. Ford watches as she pulls out a stake and thrusts it into the vampire's chest. He staggers back into the wall and explodes into ashes.

Ford What's goin' on?

Buffy is surprised and spins around to face him.

Buffy Um... uh, there was a, a cat. A cat here, and, um, then there was a-another cat... and they fought. The cats. And... then they left.

Ford Oh. I thought you were just slaying a vampire.

Buffy What? Whating a what?

Ford I know, Buffy. You don't have to lie. I-I've been trying to figure out the right time to, to tell you. I know you're the Slayer.

Buffy is taken aback.

Cut to later in Willow's room. She's on the phone with Buffy.

Willow Just like that he told you?

Buffy Just like that. *cut to her room* Said he found out right before I got booted from Hemery.

Willow Wow! *cut to her* It's neat! Is it neat?

Buffy *cut to her* Yeah, I guess it is. I don't have to constantly worry that he's gonna find out my dark secret. It just makes everything easier.

Cut to an alley. Ford is heading for the Sunset Club. He knocks on a heavy metal door, and the viewport opens. It closes and the door opens to let him in. Cut inside. A welder is cutting the knob off of the inside door. Ford goes down the stairs to the main area. Dark gothic music sets the mood, and everyone is dressed in black and pale makeup. "Never Land", by The Sisters of Mercy, is playing.

Lyrics I had a face on the mirror / I had a hand on the gun

Diego meets him at the base of the stairs.

Diego Ford? Hi, Ford?

Ford Hey!

Diego Well, how'd it go?

Ford It went good.

Diego Good? That's, that's it? That's all we know? Well, when are we...

Ford *interrupts* Soon.

Diego Oh, soon, okay. Y'know, you could gimme a little more information here. I'm trusting you. I'm out on a limb here. Not to mention the lease is almost up on this place. Who's gonna cover that?

Ford Marvin...

Diego Diego! C'mon, man, it's Diego now.

Ford Diego. *takes out a pill* Ritalin. Everything's gonna be fine.

He pops the pill as Chantarelle comes over and hands him a drink.

Ford Just make sure you're ready when I say. True believers only.

Chantarelle *smiles* I can't wait!

Diego Right, whatever, I still think I should be in on the plan.

Ford Diego, you gotta trust me.

He sees a scene from a Jack Palance vampire movie playing on the TV.

TV Alright.

Ford A couple more days and we'll get to do the two things every **American teen should have the chance to do** die young, and stay pretty.

He looks spaced out as he mouths the words of Jack Palance in the movie.

Jack So... You play your wits against mine. Me, who commanded armies hundreds of years before you were born. Fools!

Part 2

Willow's room. It's neat and clean and everything is in place just so, except for some clothes on her bed. She's in her nightshirt brushing her hair. There is a knocking on her balcony door, which catches her off guard. She drops her brush on the bed, goes to the door and pushes the blinds apart to see who it is.

Willow Oh! *opens the door* Angel! What are you doing here?

Angel I wanted to talk to you.

Willow *looks around* Oh, well...

She gestures for him to come in, but he just stays standing there.

Willow Well?

Angel I can't. Unless you invite me, I can't come in.

Willow Oh! *nervous* Well, okay, I invite you. To come in. *She turns around as he comes in, and a look of horror appears on her face when she sees her bra just lying there on her bed out in the open. She quickly rushes over, grabs it and stashes it.*

Angel I-if this is a bad time, I...

Willow No! I just... I'm not supposed to have boys in my room.

Angel I promise to behave myself.

Willow *still nervous* Okay. Good.

Angel I guess I need help.

Willow Help? You mean like on homework? No, 'cause you're old and you already know stuff.

Angel I want you to track someone down. On the 'Net. *eyes her laptop*

Willow *smiles* Oh! Great! I'm so the 'Net girl. *goes to sit at her desk*

Angel I just wanna find everything I can. Records, affiliates, I'm not even sure what I'm looking for yet.

Willow *types* Good. What's the name?

Angel Billy Fordham.

Willow Uh, Angel? If I say something you really don't wanna hear, *faces him* do you promise not to bite me?

Angel Are you gonna tell me that I'm jealous?

Willow Well, you do sometimes get that way.

Angel You know, I never used to. *sits on her bed* Things used to be pretty simple. *Willow types* A hundred years, just hanging out, feelin' guilty... I really honed my brooding skills. Then she comes along. *Willow faces him again* Yeah, I get jealous. But I know people. And my gut tells me this is a wrong guy.

Willow *nods* Okay. *turns back to the laptop* But if there isn't anything weird... Hey, that's weird.

Angel What?

Willow I just checked the school records, and he's not in them. *Angel stands up* I mean, usually they transfer your grades and stuff, but he's not even registered.

Angel He said he was in school with you guys, right?

Willow Let me just see if I can...

Mrs. Rosenberg *off camera* Willow? Are you still up?

Willow *gets up to Angel* Ack! Go! *to her mom* Iiiiiiii'm just going to bed now, mom!

Angel goes back out onto the balcony. Willow holds the door.

Willow Come by tomorrow at sunset. I'll keep looking.

Angel Don't tell Buffy what we're doing, alright?

Willow You want me to lie to her? It's Buffy!

Angel Just don't bring it up until we know what's what.

Willow Okay. I-it's probably nothing.

Angel That'd be nice.

She closes the door and frets a bit, nervous about what she has to do.

Cut to the school the next day. Cut inside to a hall near a drinking fountain. Buffy and Ford come into the hall from outside. Willow wants to get a drink.

Buffy Willow!

Willow doesn't even press the button on the fountain before immediately turning around, hoping to get away. She realizes she'd never be able to get away with it, and so turns to face them. She fidgets nervously with her hands.

Buffy What's up?

Willow Nothing.

Buffy Do you wanna hang? We're cafeteria-bound.

Willow *jumpy* I-I-I'm gonna do work in the computer lab on school work that I have, so I cannot hang just now. Hi, Ford.

Ford Morning.

Buffy Okay, Will, fess up.

Willow What?

Buffy Are you drinking coffee again? 'Cause we've talked about this.

Willow is surprised and happy that an explanation for her nervousness has presented itself, and laughs out loud.

Willow It makes me jumpy. I have to go. Away. *hurries off*

Buffy is taken aback.

Ford Nice girl!

Buffy There aren't two of those in the world.

Giles meets them in he hall.

Giles Buffy! Um... Yes, uh... *sets down his briefcase and searches his pockets* Ms. Calendar and I are going... somewhere tonight, and she's given, *finds the slip of paper* oh, given me the number of her beeper thingy, uh, in case you need me for, um... *eyes Ford* study help, uh, suddenly. *picks up his briefcase*

Buffy He knows, Giles.

Giles What?

Buffy Ford *indicates him* knows I'm the Slayer.

Ford I know.

Giles Oh! Uh, very good, yes. Uh, um, Buffy... *leads Buffy aside to Ford* Excuse me. *aside to Buffy* You are not, by any chance, betraying your secret identity just to impress, um, cute boys, are you?

Buffy *smiles* I didn't tell him. He knew.

Giles Oh! Uh, right then. Well, uh, just remember, if you...

Buffy Go! Experience this thing called fun. I'll try not to have a crisis.

Giles accepts that and heads back to his library.

Cut outside the school at night. Buffy and Ford are strolling along.

Buffy And on your right, once again, the beautiful campus. I think you've now seen everything there is to see in Sunnydale.

Ford Well, it's... really...

Buffy Feel free to say dull.

Ford Okay. Dull's good. *sees two vampires running* Or maybe not so dull. *Buffy sees them, too* Is that more vampires?

Buffy Must be the weather.

She pulls out a stake and a cross, and hands the cross to Ford. He takes it and reaches into his back pocket to pull out a stake of his own. He smiles and waves it about.

Buffy Stay close to me.

She hops up the steps the vampires just ran up and cautiously looks around. Ford is close behind, cross and stake held ready. She looks around a corner and sees nothing.

Ford Maybe they were just passing through.

Buffy turns around I don't think so.

A blonde female vampire grabs her from behind and tries to bite. Ford takes a startled step back. Buffy does a high kick into her face, then grabs her by the arm and flips her over onto her back. A male vampire rushes her and grabs her, pulling her over a railing with him. She lands in a crouch on the grass below and gets up while the vampire rolls to his feet. She kicks him in the jaw, making him fall backward. Ford looks down at his stake and cross and then glances at the fight a moment before quickly approaching the other vampire and holding the cross in her face and the stake up and ready. She hisses at him.

Ford You've got one chance to live. Tell me what I wanna know, and I'll let you go.

Below Buffy knocks the vampire out with a punch to the face and stakes him. She runs back up the stairs to Ford, who's crouched where the vampire was.

Buffy Where's the other one?

Ford I killed her. *coughs* I, I killed her and she just turned to dust. It was... amazing!

Buffy raises her eyebrows in surprise.

Cut to Xander, Willow and Angel walking down the alley to the Sunset Club.

Willow The only thing I could track down was this address. The Sunset Club. Still didn't find anything incriminating.

Angel He leaves no paper trail, no records, that's incriminating enough.

Xander Yeah, I'm gonna have to go with Dead Boy on this one.

Angel Could you **not** call me that?

He knocks on the door. The viewport opens and the doorman looks out.

Angel We're friends of Ford's.

The doorman nods. Cut inside. They walk in through the inside door and look around. It's gloomy in the extreme.

Willow *wearing a colorfully striped shirt* Boy, we blend right in.

Xander In no way do we stick out like sore thumbs.

Angel Let's look around. You guys check out downstairs.

Xander Sure thing, Bossy the cow! *they start down*

Willow Okay, but do they really stick out?

Xander What?

Willow Sore thumbs. Do they stick out? I mean, have you ever seen a thumb and gone, 'Wow! That baby is sore!'

Xander You have too many thoughts.

Willow is a bit hurt by that. Angel looks down from the balcony and continues around. "Reptile", by Creaming Jesus, is playing.

Lyrics The one hungry life / My life with the other
Willow and Xander walk by a man standing in a coffin dressed as a movie vampire.

Man *waves* Hi!

Xander waves back and looks around more.

Xander Are you probably noticing a theme here?

Willow As in 'Vampires! Yay!'

Xander That's the one.

Chantarelle gets up and comes up behind them.

Chantarelle You guys are newbies. I can tell.

Willow turns to face her Oh, no. We come here all the time.

Chantarelle Don't be ashamed! It's cool that you're open to it. We welcome anyone who's interested in the Lonely Ones.

Angel comes down the stairs behind them.

Willow The Lonely Ones?

Angel Vampires.

Xander Oh! We usually call them the nasty, pointy, bitey ones.

Chantarelle So many people have that misconception. But they who walk with the night are not interested in harming anyone. They are creatures above us. Exalted!
Angel You're a fool.

Xander gives him a look.

Chantarelle You don't have to be so confrontational about it. Other viewpoints than yours may be valid, you know. *goes away*

Willow Nice meeting you.

They turn to Angel.

Xander You really are a people person.

Willow Now nobody's gonna talk to us.

Angel I've seen enough. I've seen this type before. I mean, they're children making up bedtime stories of friendly vampires to comfort themselves in the dark.

Willow Is that so bad? I mean, the dark can get pretty dark. Sometimes you need a story.

Angel These people don't know anything about vampires. What they are, how they live, how they dress...

A young man dressed exactly like Angel comes down the stairs behind him and looks him up and down before continuing on. Angel clears his throat. They start up the stairs to get out of the club.

Xander You know, I love a good diatribe. But I'm still curious why Ford, the bestest friend of the Slayer, is hanging with a bunch of vampire wannabes.

Willow Something's up with him, you're right about that.

Diego overheard them and watches them go. The girl talking to him is confused about his reaction.

Girl Are you okay?

Cut to the library. Buffy comes in followed by Jenny and Giles.

Buffy Sorry to beep you guys in the middle of... stuff, but it seemed really weird.

Giles No, you did the right thing. Absolutely.

Jenny stops in her tracks You hated it that much?

Giles No! But, but, uh, vampires on campus is, could have implications. Very, very grave...

Jenny You coulda just said something.

Giles Uh, honestly, I, I've always, I've always been interested in, in, uh, monster trucks.

Buffy You took him to monster trucks?

Jenny I thought it would be a change!

Giles It was a change.

Jenny Look, we could've just left.

Giles Wha-what, and miss the nitro-burning funny cars? No, couldn't have that.

Buffy Okay, can we get back on the vampire tip here? These guys were here with a purpose.

Giles Yes, yes, and, uh, we must, uh, ascertain what that purpose is.

Jenny Where's your friend?

Buffy I sent him home.

Giles sits at the table Oh, uh, good. Yes, the less he's involved in all this, the safer he'll be.

Buffy He did bag a vamp his first time out.

Giles takes an open book from on top of another and exposes an old picture of Drusilla.

Buffy Gotta give him credit for... *notices the picture that.*

Jenny Something wrong?

Buffy picks up the picture Who's this?

Giles Um, she's called Drusilla, a sometime paramour of Spike's. She was killed by an angry mob in Prague.

Buffy Well, they don't make angry mobs like they used to, 'cause this girl's alive. I saw her with Angel.

Giles taken aback With Angel?

Jenny Isn't he supposed to be a good guy?

Buffy puts the picture back down Yeah. He is.

Jenny I think maybe we need to read up on this nice lady.

Giles gets up and heads for his office Well, some of my new volumes may be more helpful. Uh, my own research is...

The blonde vampire runs into him as she runs from his office. Jenny draws a startled breath. Buffy comes to Giles' aid, but is knocked to the floor underneath him when the vampire gives him a hard shove. She jumps up onto the table and leaps over the mezzanine railing, making her escape through the stacks. Jenny helps Giles and Buffy up.

Jenny Are you guys okay?

Giles A book! It took one of my books!

Jenny Well, at least someone in this school is reading.

Buffy He said he killed it. That's the vampire Ford said he killed.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. Drusilla is talking to her bird as the camera pans around the cage.

Drusilla You sing the sweetest little song. Won't you sing for me, hmm? Don't you love me anymore?

The bird is lying dead at the bottom of the cage. Spike comes into the room behind Drusilla.

Spike Darling! I heard a funny thing just now. Lucius tells me that you went out on a hunt the other night.

Drusilla My tummy was growly. And you were out. *to the bird* Come on. *whistles* I'll pout if you don't sing.

Spike puts his arms around her You, um, meet anyone? Anyone interesting? Like Angel?

Drusilla Angel.

Spike Yeah. So... *kisses her forehead* What might you guys have talked about, then? Old times? Childhood pranks? It's a little off, you two so friendly, him being the enemy and all that.

Drusilla to the bird I'll give you a seed if you sing.

Spike The bird's dead, Dru. You left it in a cage, and you didn't feed it, and now it's all dead, just like the last one.
Drusilla cowers and whines.

Spike Oh, I'm sorry baby. I'm a bad, rude man. I just don't like you goin' out, that's all. You are weak. *takes her hand* Would you like a new bird? One that's not dead? *sucks on her finger*

Ford This is so cool!

Spike looks up to see him standing among some crates.

Ford I would totally live here.

Spike *loudly* Do I have anyone on watch here? It's called security, people. Are you all asleep? *walks toward Ford* Or did we finally find a restaurant that delivers?

Ford I know who you are.

Spike Yeah, I know who I am, too. So what?

Ford I came looking for you, Spike. You are Spike, right? William the Bloody?

Spike You've got a real death wish. It's almost interesting.

The blonde vampire comes in, walks up to Spike and hands him the book she stole. Spike begins to leaf through it.

Spike Oh, this is great. This'll be very useful. *to Ford* So, how did you find me?

Ford That doesn't matter. I've got something to offer you. I-I'm pretty sure this is the part where you take out a watch and say I've got thirty seconds to convince you not to kill me? *smiles* It's traditional.

Spike Well, *slams the book and strides to Ford* I don't go much for tradition.

He grabs Ford by the ear and lifts him.

Drusilla Wait, love.

Ford is in obvious pain, but doesn't scream. Drusilla puts her hand on Spikes's shoulder, and he lets go.

Spike Well?

Ford Oh, c'mon! Say it! It's no fun if you don't say it.

Spike What? Oh. *rolls his eyes and bobs his head* You've got thirty seconds to convince me not to kill you.

Ford Yes! See, this is the best! I wanna be like you. A vampire.

Spike I've known you for two minutes, and I can't stand you. I don't really feature you livin' forever. *to Drusilla* Can I eat him now, love?

Drusilla shakes her head.

Ford Well, feature this: I'm offering you a trade. *Spike turns back* You make me a vampire, and I give you the Slayer.

Ford has their undivided attention. Spike smiles.

Part 3

The kitchen at the Summers house. Buffy is nursing a cup of coffee. Angel slowly pushes the door open.

Angel Buffy. May I come in?

Buffy *looks up* Sure. I thought once you were invited you could always just walk in.

Angel I can. I was just being polite. *closes the door* We need to talk.

Buffy Do we? *picks up her coffee and heads into the dining room*

Angel It's about your friend Ford. He's not what he seems.

Buffy Who is these days?

Angel Willow ran him down on the computer.

Buffy Willow?

Angel We found this address, we checked it out with Xander, and it turned out...

Buffy *disbelieving* And Xander? Wow. Everybody's in. It's like a great big exciting conspiracy.

Angel What are you talking about?

Buffy I'm talking about the people I trust. Who's Drusilla?

Angel lowers his eyes, seeing he's been caught in a lie.

Buffy And don't lie to me. I'm tired of it.

Angel Some lies are necessary.

Buffy For what?

Angel Sometimes the truth is worse. You live long enough, you find that out.

Buffy I can take it. I can take the truth.

Angel Do you love me?

Buffy What?

Angel Do you?

She takes a moment to consider her answer.

Buffy I love you. I don't know if I trust you.

Angel Maybe you shouldn't do either. *turns away*

Buffy Maybe I'm the one who should decide!

Angel I did a lot of unconscionable things when I became a vampire. *turns back, but doesn't make eye contact* Drusilla was the worst. She was... an obsession of mine. She was pure and sweet and chaste...

Buffy And you made her a vampire.

Angel First I made her insane. *looks at her* Killed everybody she loved. Visited every mental torture on her I could devise. *Buffy looks away* She eventually fled to a convent, and on the day she took her holy orders, I turned her into a demon.

Buffy Well. I asked for the truth.

Angel Ford's part of some society that reveres vampires. Practically worships them. I don't know what he wants from you, but you can't trust him.

Fade to black. Cut to school the next day. Buffy walks up some stairs to the quad. Ford meets her there. The

camera circles them as they talk.

Ford Buffy!

Buffy Ford.

Ford I had a great time last night. Well, an interesting time.

Buffy *arms crossed* I'm glad.

Ford Do you wanna go out again tonight?

Buffy Not busy.

Ford I sort of had an idea. It's a... It's a secret. Kinda wanna surprise you.

Buffy I like surprises.

Ford Can you meet me here?

Buffy Sure.

Ford At nine?

Buffy At nine.

Ford *smiles* It's gonna be fun! *walks off*

Buffy just stands there for a moment before uncrossing her arms and continuing on her way.

Cut to later at the stairs in the hall. Xander and Willow are sitting on the steps. Buffy comes down behind them.

Willow *gets up* Buffy!

Buffy doesn't really want to face her, but does.

Willow Did, uh, Angel...

Buffy He told me everything.

Willow I'm sorry we kept stuff from you.

Buffy It's okay. *smiles weakly*

Willow When Angel came to my room he was just really concerned for you, and we didn't wanna say anything in case we were wrong.

Xander Did you find out what Ford is up to?

Buffy I will. *walks off*

Willow and Xander sadly watch her go. After a moment something clicks in Xander's head.

Xander Angel was in your bedroom?

Willow *nods* Ours is a forbidden love.

Cut to the Sunset Club. Chantarelle is sitting and drumming her fingers. Diego paces nervously. The camera pans up to Ford coming down the stairs.

Ford *ignoring Diego* Chantarelle. Is everything ready?

Diego Of course. It's ready. *trying to get Ford's attention* Hi, I took care of it. I always take care of it.

Chantarelle Is it time? Tonight?

Ford You nervous? *pours goblets of wine*

Chantarelle Yes. No. I'm ready for the change. Do you really think they'll bless us?

Ford *takes a goblet and hands her the other* I know they will.

He smiles at Chantarelle. She smiles back.

Ford Everything's falling into place. *takes a sip of wine*

Diego What about your friends? Are they comin'?

Ford What are you talking about?

Diego Your friends. They came. Last night. Two guys and a girl.

Chantarelle One was mean.

Ford Oh, Christ! Why didn't you tell me about this?

Diego I have to do everything around here. Sorry, Mr. Flawless Plan Guy, it slipped my mind.

Chantarelle It's gonna be alright, isn't it?

Ford winces in pain and puts his fingertips to his forehead.

Chantarelle They're not gonna let us down?

Ford *the pain passes* It's gonna be fine.

Chantarelle I need them to bless me.

Ford It's gonna be fine!

Buffy No.

They all look at her at the top of the stairs.

Buffy It's really not.

Ford *to Diego* It's kinda drafty in here.

Buffy *starts down the stairs* I'm sorry, Ford. I just couldn't wait 'til tonight! I'm rash and impulsive. It's a flaw.

Ford We all have flaws.

Buffy I'm still a little fuzzy on exactly what yours is. I think it has to do with being a lying scumbag. *reaches him*

Ford Everybody lies.

Buffy What do you want, Ford? What's this all about?

Ford I really don't think you'd understand.

Buffy I don't need to understand. I just need to know.

Ford I'm gonna be one of them.

Buffy You wanna be a vampire?

Ford I'm going to.

Buffy You know, vampires are a little picky about who they change ov... *figures it out* You were gonna offer them a trade!

Ford I don't think I wanna talk anymore.

She grabs him by the throat and shoves him up against a pillar.

Buffy Yeah, well, I still feel awfully chatty! You were gonna give them me! Tonight!

Ford *nods* Yes.

Buffy You had to know I'd figure it out.

Ford Actually, I was counting on it. *smiles*

She lets go of his throat and backs away. He coughs a bit and then laughs.

Buffy What's supposed to happen tonight?

Ford This is **so** cool! It's just like it played in my head. You know that part where you ask me what's supposed to happen? *snickers* It's already happening.

Diego swings the inner door shut with a loud clang. She runs back up the stairs and pounds on the door.

Ford Rigged up special. Once it's closed, it can only be opened from the outside. As soon as the sun sets, they'll be comin'.

Buffy Ford, if these people are still around when they get here...

Diego *interrupts* We'll be changed. All of us.

Chantarelle We're going to ascend to a new level of consciousness! Become like them. Like the Lonely Ones.

Ford This is the end, Buffy. No one gets outta here alive.

Part 4

The Sunset Club. Buffy hurries back down the stairs.

Buffy There's gotta be another way out of here! *looks around*

Ford This is a bomb shelter, Buffy. I knew I wasn't gonna be able to overpower you. But this is three feet of solid concrete. Trust me when I say we're in for the long haul.

Buffy At least let the other people go.

Chantarelle Why are you fighting this? It's what we want!

Diego It's our chance for immortality.

Chantarelle This is a beautiful day. Can't you see that?

Buffy What I see is that, right after the sun goes down, Spike and all of his friends are going to be pigging out at the all-you-can-eat moron bar.

Diego Okay, that's it. I think we should gag her.

Buffy I think you should try.

Diego She's an unbeliever. She taints us.

Buffy I am trying to save you! You are playing in some serious traffic here! Do you understand that? You're going to die! And the only hope you have of surviving this is to get out of this pit right now, and, my God, could you have a dorkier outfit?

Diego is offended. Chantarelle smiles.

Ford I gotta back her up, D. You look like a big ninny. *his alarm goes off 6:27. Sunset.*

They all walk away from her. She looks around for what to do next.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. He comes marching out with his troops.

Spike When we get there, everybody spread out. Two men on the door, first priority's the Slayer, everything else is fair game, and let's remember to share, people. *meets Drusilla* Are you sure you're up for this?

Drusilla I want a treat. I need a treat.

Spike And a special one you'll have. Lucius! *hold up his keys* Bring the car around.

Cut to the Sunset Club. Buffy runs back up the stairs to the door. Ford follows her.

Ford Hey, you never give up, do you?

Buffy No, I don't.

Ford That's a good quality in a person. Too many people, they just lay back and take it, but us...

Buffy Us? We have something in common now?

Ford More than you think.

Buffy Yeah, well, let me explain something to you. You're what we call the bad guy.

Ford I guess I am! *chuckles*

Buffy *looks down at the people* These people aren't gonna get changed, are they? The rest of them, they're just fodder.

Ford Technically, yes. But I'm in. I will become immortal.

Buffy Well, I've got a news flash for you, braintrust: that's not how it works. You die, and a demon sets up shop in your old house, and it walks, and it talks, and it remembers your life, but it's not you.

Ford It's better than nothing.

Buffy And your life is nothing?

Ford snickers.

Buffy Ford, these people don't deserve to die!

Ford Well, neither do I! But apparently no one took that into consideration, 'cause I'm still dying.

Buffy begins to realize what he's up to now.

Ford I look good, don't I? Well, let me tell you something: *angry* I've got maybe six months left, and by then what they bury won't even **look** like me. It'll be bald and shriveled and it'll smell bad. No, I'm not going out that way.

Buffy turns away.

Ford I'm sorry, Summers. Did I screw up your righteous anger riff? Does the nest of tumors liquefying my brain kinda spoil the fun?

Buffy *faces him* I'm sorry. I had no idea. But what you're doing is still very wrong.

Ford Okay, well, you try vomiting for twenty-four hours straight because the pain in your head is so intense, and **then** we'll discuss the concept of right and wrong. *points down* These people are sheep. They wanna be vampires 'cause they're lonely, miserable or bored. I don't have a choice.

Buffy You have a choice. You don't have a good choice, but you have a choice! You're opting for mass murder here, and nothing you say is gonna make that okay!

Ford You think I need to justify myself to you?

Buffy I think this is all part of your little fantasy drama! Isn't this exactly how you imagined it? You tell me how you've suffered and I feel sorry for you. Well, I do feel sorry for you, and if those vampires come in here and start feeding, I'll kill you myself!

Ford You know what, Summers? I really did miss you.
Buffy can only look at him. Outside a car comes screeching to a halt.

Buffy Ford, help me stop this. *silence* Please!

Ford remains silent. Buffy runs around to the stairs again.

Buffy People, listen to me! *Ford comes after her* This is not the mothership, people! This is ugly death come to play!

Ford backhand punches her across the face, and she goes tumbling to the bottom of the steps. He comes down after her and punches her in the back as she tries to get up, sending her to the floor again. They hear the outside door open and look up. Chantarelle starts up the stairs to meet them. Ford checks to see that Buffy is still out cold on the floor. Chantarelle reaches the top of the steps as the inner door opens. Spike walks up to her in his game face and smiles. He roars at her and she flinches a bit but doesn't back down. He tears the choker off of her neck. She starts to cry in fear.

Spike Take them all. Save the Slayer for me.

The vampires run and jump down the stairs to the people below and begin feeding. Spike grabs Chantarelle by the neck and bites her violently. Buffy wakes and gets up, and Ford tries to hit her with a crowbar. She grabs his arm in mid-swing and pulls him around, making him hit his head on a concrete pillar. He falls unconscious to the floor. She looks at the mayhem going on around her and spots Drusilla standing by herself on the balcony. She takes a running leap off of a couch up to the balcony railing, quickly climbs over, grabs Drusilla from behind and holds a stake to her chest.

Buffy Spike!

Spike stops feeding on Chantarelle and looks over at them. Drusilla stares at the stake poised in front of her.

Spike Everybody STOP!

They all stop feeding.

Buffy Good idea. Now you let everyone out, or your girlfriend fits in an ashtray.

Drusilla frightened Spike?

Spike It's gonna be alright, baby. Let them go!

They all let go of their victims, and the people hurry up the stairs and out.

Buffy Down the stairs.

Spike slowly backs down the stairs. Buffy forces Drusilla ahead of her, still holding the stake ready. When Buffy reaches the top of the stairs she stares at Spike for a moment. She looks at Drusilla and shoves her down the stairs at Spike. He catches and steadies her as Buffy turns and rushes out the door. He starts to give chase as Buffy swings the door shut behind her. Spike slams up against it. He looks for the way to open it.

Spike Uh, where's the doorknob?

Cut to the alley. Buffy walks out of the building and sees the people help and support each other. Angel walks up to her and Willow and Xander are close behind.

Buffy You guys are just in time.

Willow Are there vampires?

Buffy They're contained. They'll get out eventually, though. We should probably go. We can come back when they're gone.

Xander Come back for what?

Buffy looks back at the entrance For the body.

Cut inside the club. The vampires are banging on the doors. Ford wakes and gets up, holding his head. Spike is comforting Drusilla.

Ford What happened?

Spike We're stuck in a basement.

Ford Buffy?

Spike comes down to him She's **not** stuck in the basement.

Ford Hey, well, I delivered. I handed her to you.

Spike Yes, I suppose you did.

Ford So? What about my reward?

Spike and Ford just stare at each other.

Fade to the next day. Buffy comes back in and finds the door broken and twisted. She looks down below and sees Ford lying there. She descends the stairs and touches his dead body.

Fade to the cemetery. Buffy has tears in her eyes as she lays a bouquet of red roses on Ford's grave. She stands up again and walks back to Giles.

Buffy I don't know what I'm supposed to say.

Giles You needn't say anything.

Buffy It'd be simpler if I could just hate him. I think he wanted me to. I think it made it easier for him to be the villain of the piece. Really he was just scared.

Giles Yes, I suppose he was.

Buffy Nothing's ever simple anymore. I'm constantly trying to work it out. Who to love or hate. Who to trust. It's just, like, the more I know, the more confused I get.

Giles I believe that's called growing up.

Buffy I'd like to stop then, okay?

Giles I know the feeling.

Buffy Does it ever get easy?

Ford suddenly rises from his grave, a vampire just like he wanted, and attacks Buffy. She plunges a stake into his heart with no more effort than swatting a fly. He steps back and looks at the stake protruding from his chest. He looks back up and bursts into ashes.

Giles You mean life?

Buffy Yeah. Does it get easy?

Giles What do you want me to say?

Buffy looks up at him Lie to me.

Giles *considers a moment* Yes, it's terribly simple.
They start walking out of the cemetery.

Giles The good guys are always stalwart and true, the
bad guys are easily distinguished by their pointy horns

or black hats, and, uh, we always defeat them and save
the day. No one ever dies, and everybody lives happily
ever after.

Buffy Liar.

The Dark Age

Written by **Dean Batali & Rob Des Hotel**

Directed by **Bruce Seth Green**

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB television network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "The Dark Age".

It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes

and camera movements where I felt they were needed. I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.02

This episode was originally broadcast on November 10, 1997.

Copyright (C) 1997 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Sunnydale High School at night. A man in a suit with a briefcase is walking past a school building at a brisk, determined pace. He stops for a moment and looks around. Behind him to his left a door opens, and a school custodian comes out with a trashcan.

Custodian Can I help you?

Philip Rupert Giles! I need to see him!

Custodian Mr. Giles, uh, he's our librarian. Next building over, first door on your left.

Philip rushes off without a word of thanks.

Custodian *sarcastically* You're welcome. *dumps the trash*

Philip continues at his brisk pace and finds the outside library door. He continues toward it, but stops in his tracks when he hears a twig being crushed behind him and turns to look. He hears a moan, but sees nothing and checks the other way again. Behind him he hears breathing and turns back again, and sees a woman in the shadows.

Philip Oh, God!

Slowly she walks into the light. She is dead and rotting. Her eyes flash yellow briefly.

Philip Diedre?

Diedre Philip.

Philip quickly backs up and doesn't see the curb behind him. He trips over it and falls, dropping his briefcase. He scrambles to his feet and runs to the library door. He

pounds on it and yanks at the doorknob, but it's locked.

Philip Help! Help! Somebody, please!

Diedre slowly advances on him.

Philip *to himself* God, no! *loud* Help!

Cut inside. Buffy is doing step aerobics to a techno beat. Giles is sitting at the table with his hands to his ears, not relishing the music. He raises his head.

Giles *loudly over the music* Must we have this noise during your calisthenics?

Buffy It's not noise! It's music!

Giles I know music. Music has notes. This is noise.

Buffy I'm aerobicising! I must have a beat!

Giles *under the music* Wonderful. You work on your muscle tone while my brain dribbles out of my ears.

Cut outside. Philip is still pounding on the door.

Philip Help! Help! Please!

Diedre continues to advance on him.

Philip Help me, somebody, please!

Diedre has closed the gap. Philip turns to face her with horror in his eyes. She puts her hands up to the door on either side of him to prevent his escape. He trembles with fear as she moves her hands onto his neck and begins to choke him.

Cut inside. Buffy has finished her aerobics. She strolls to the table and turns off her boom box.

Giles Ahhh! Very good. And the rest is silence.

Cut outside. Philip falls from Diedre's grip, dead. A moment later Diedre collapses next to him. After she hits the pavement she disintegrates into a puddle of slime. The puddle spreads out and into Philip.

Part 1

A nightmare. Giles is flashing back to his youth. He has visions of rituals and tattooing.

Young Giles Time to go to sleep! *screams*

A vision of a demon. Cut to Giles' bedroom. He wakes

with a start. He looks around as he sits up in bed, concerned but relieved to find it was only a nightmare.

Cut to school. The camera pans down from above a tree to Buffy and Willow sitting on a bench.

Buffy I'm on a beach, but not one of those American beaches, one of those island beaches where the water's way too blue, and I'm laying on my towel, and it's just before sunset, and Gavin Rossdale's massaging my feet!

Willow Oh, that's good! Uh, I'm in Florence, Italy, I've rented a scooter that's parked outside, and I'm in a little restaurant eating ziti, and there are no more tables left, so they have to seat this guy with me, and it's John Cusack!

Buffy Ooo! Very impressive. You have such an eye for detail.

Willow 'Cause with the ziti!

Xander *shows up* What are you two up to?

Buffy Just having a quick game of 'Anywhere But Here'.

Xander Ooohhh. Amy Yip at the waterslide park.

Willow You never come up with anything new.

Xander I'm just not fickle like you two, okay? I'm constant in my affections. Amy Yip at the waterslide park!

Willow to Buffy Do you think Giles ever played 'Anywhere But Here' when he was in school?

They see him coming toward them.

Xander Giles lived for school. He's actually still bitter that there are only twelve grades.

Buffy He probably sat in math class thinking, 'There should be more math. This could be mathier.'

Willow C'mon, you don't think he ever got restless as a kid?

Buffy Are you kidding? His diapers were tweed.

Xander chuckles. Buffy sees Giles about to walk by and calls out to him.

Buffy Giles!

Giles *turns and sees them* Oh! There you are. *comes over*

Buffy Hey, morning. Say, is that tweed? *stares at his jacket*

Giles *preoccupied* What? Oh, uh, yes. Um, now, uh, look, tonight is very important, um... *heads inside*

Buffy *follows* Now, that's a surprise.

Cut to the halls. They follow Giles to the library.

Buffy So, what's on tap tonight that's so important? Up-rising, prophesied ritual, preordained deathfest?

Xander Ah, the old standards!

Giles Um, a medical transport is delivering the monthly supply of blood to the hospital.

Buffy Mm. Vampire Meals-On-Wheels. *stops at her locker*

Giles Hopefully not. Uh, we'll meet outside the hospital at 8:30 sharp. I'll bring the weaponry.

Buffy I'll bring the party mix!

Giles Just don't be late.

Buffy Have I ever let you down?

Giles Do you want me to answer that, or shall I just glare?

Jenny *finds them* Morning, England.

Giles Oh, hello, Ms., uh, uh, tuh, Jenny.

Willow *to Xander, smiling* Feel the passion!

Xander *smiles back* Mm-hm!

Jenny Willow...

Willow *coughs* Coughing, not speaking. *coughs more*

Jenny *to Willow* We still on for tomorrow?

Willow smiles and nods.

Xander What's tomorrow?

Jenny I'm reviewing some computer basics for the couple of students who've fallen behind. Willow's helping out for extra credit.

Xander *chuckles* Those poor schlubs have to attend school on Saturday! *smiles*

Jenny 9am okay with you, Xander?

Xander's smile fades. Willow bobs her head in amusement.

Buffy Got a bit of schlub on your shoe there.

Xander Heh, heh.

Jenny Well, Cordelia's gonna meet us.

Xander *dripping with sarcasm* Ooo, gang, did ya hear that? A bonus day of class plus Cordelia! Mix in a little rectal surgery, and it's my best day ever!

Jenny *to Giles* Walk me to class?

Giles *a smile on his face* Pleasure.

Jenny and Giles head for her class. The others watch them go.

Buffy Look at them.

Xander A twosome of cuteness.

Willow Can't you just imagine them getting together?

Their expressions all change to ones of being grossed out. Cut to Giles and Jenny walking.

Jenny Oh! Thank you so much for loaning me the Forrester book. It's wonderful!

Giles Well, I'm glad you enjoyed it!

Jenny Yeah, it was so romantic, so evocative.

Giles That edition was my father's. I, I, I must've read it... twenty times.

Jenny Yeah, y'know how you have to, to dog-ear your favorite pages so you can go back to them?

Giles Uh, uh, uh, what?

Jenny Well, I mean, I-I practically had to fold back every single page. So finally I just, I just started underlining all the pages I really wanted to discuss.

Giles U-u-underlined...?

Jenny But then, of course, I spilled coffee all over it, I can't even read it...

Giles *can't believe it* It's a first edition!

Jenny I'm lying, Rupert. *smiles* The book's fine. *holds it up* I just love to see you squirm. *hands him the book*

Giles *smiles in relief* Yes, well, I, uh... trust I gave good... squirm.

Jenny Did anyone ever tell you you're kind of a fuddy-duddy?

Giles Nobody ever seems to tell me anything else.

Jenny Did anyone ever tell you you're kind of a sexy fuddy-duddy?

Giles Well, no. Actually that, that part usually gets left out. *smiles* I c-can't imagine why.

Jenny This weekend.

Giles Would you like to go out?

Jenny Mm, no, I think I'd like to stay in.

They draw together for a kiss as the bell rings. They touch lips, but break it off as students begin pouring into the halls.

Giles Uh, this, *clears his throat* Saturday, then.

Jenny Saturday night. *clears her throat* I'll see if I can make you squirm.

They look at each other for a moment before Giles heads off to his library.

Cut to the library. Giles walks in to discover a detective and two police officers there.

Det. Winslow Rupert Giles?

Giles Yes?

Det. Winslow Detective Winslow. You're gonna have to come with me.

Giles Why?

Det. Winslow There was a homicide on campus last night. The victim had no identification, but he was carrying this slip of paper with your name and address on it. *holds up the slip in a baggie*

Giles *sets down his briefcase* My name?

Cordelia walks into the library.

Cordelia Well, evil just compounds evil, doesn't it? First I'm sentenced to a computer tutorial on Saturday, now I have to read some computer book... There are books on computers? Isn't the point of computers to replace books?

Giles *cuts her off* Cordelia, I'm a little busy right now. *points out the detective*

Cordelia Oh! Great! *steps up to Det. Winslow* Can you help me with a ticket? It's totally bogus. It was a one-way street. I was going one way.

Giles *raised voice* Cordelia!

Cordelia What?! Why does everyone always yell my name? I'm not deaf! And I can take a hint. *unsure* What's the hint?

Giles To come back later.

Cordelia Yeah, when you've visited decaf land. *leaves*

Giles *to Det. Winslow* Where do you want me to go?

Cut to the city morgue. The coroner opens one of the body storage doors and pulls out the drawer.

Attendant Have you had your breakfast?

Giles No.

Attendant That was probably a good idea.

He pulls back the sheet to reveal Philip's body. It's bruised all over, with two especially dark bruises on the throat. Giles looks down at him in recognition.

Det. Winslow Do you know him?

Giles *whispers* Yes. Yes. I-I mean, I did. His name's Philip Henry. He was a friend of mine in London. I... I haven't spoken to him in twenty years.

Det. Winslow Can you think of any reason why he might've wanted to contact you?

Giles No.

He sees the tattoo on Philip's right arm near the inside elbow.

Det. Winslow Do you know what that is? The tattoo.

Giles *lies* No. No, I don't.

Cut to the hospital ER entrance that night. Buffy is waiting on Giles.

Buffy *exhales* 'Don't be late.' Sheesh.

She walks over to a pay phone to try calling, but stops when she sees the blood van pull up. The driver gets out with his clipboard as two ER doctors come out to meet him.

Driver Hey, fellas.

Doctor Hey.

Buffy All's well that ends with cute ER doctors, I always say.

She watches them go to the back of the van and get out the insulated container. They start back with the driver, and he gets back into the van. Buffy realizes something's wrong.

Buffy Since when do doctors take deliveries?

The van backs out of the ambulance slot. The doctors wave to the driver.

Doctor See ya.

The van drives off, and behind it a car engine starts and a pair of headlights come on. The old convertible pulls up into the light as the doctors set the container down. One of them opens the lid, takes out a bag of blood and begins to suck on it. The driver of the car gets out.

Driver Hey! No sampling the product!

The doctor vampire hisses, but puts the bag back down and drops the lid closed. Buffy runs to attack. She kicks the first doctor vampire down, then the second, and does a roundhouse kick to the driver's face. The first one gets up, and she tries kicking him again, but he grabs her leg and throws her onto the hood of the car. She scissor kicks him in the neck, and he staggers away and falls. A fourth vampire runs up as Buffy gets up and takes out a stake. She turns to attack him.

Buffy Angel!

Angel Buffy! Look out!

He jumps up onto the car's hood and leaps off to tackle the driver vampire coming at her from behind. Angel punches him in the face, but he stays up. The second vampire jumps up onto the hood and swings at Buffy. She ducks the punch and jabs him in the chest. The first vampire jumps up on the hood, too, and Buffy knocks him back off with a punch to the face. She punches the second one in the face, too, and he falls down on the hood on his back. She jumps off of the car and thrusts her stake into the first vampire as he tries to get back up. The second one is off the car again and grabs her by the shirt from behind. She swings around with the stake and gets him in the chest also. Angel, in the mean time, roundhouse kicks the driver and sends him spinning into the car. The vampire quickly sits up in the driver's seat and floors it as Angel tries to chase him. The car races off, leaving Angel and the blood behind. Buffy opens the lid to check on it.

Buffy How did you know about this?

Angel It's delivery day. Everybody knows about this. They only ruined one bag.

Buffy stands up and looks after the car, which is long gone. Angel kicks the lid back closed.

Buffy Do you think you could make sure the hospital gets the rest?

She realizes whom she's just asked to do that and raises her eyebrows at him. Angel just nods, not insulted by the query.

Buffy Thanks. I'm worried about Giles. He was supposed to meet me here.

Angel Maybe he's late.

Buffy Giles? Who counts tardiness as, like, the eighth deadly sin?

Angel Right. Go.

She gives him a final look and hurries off.

Cut to Giles' apartment building. Buffy walks to his door and knocks. Giles opens the viewport and looks out at her, then opens the door.

Giles Buffy. I-it's late. Uh, are you alright?

Buffy I was gonna ask you the same thing.

Giles Yes, I'm fine, fine. Look, I'm, uh, I'm rather busy

a-at the moment, so, uh, I'll see you on Monday at, at school.

He starts to close the door. Buffy holds it open with her hand.

Buffy Giles, did you forget? The hospital, vampires, handy carryout packets of blood?

Giles Oh! Yes, uh, are you alright? W-were you hurt?

Buffy No. I mean, my feelings a little. What's wrong?

Giles Nothing, nothing, nothing's wrong. I-I'm just in the, uh, middle of something extremely important, and, uh, I'm sorry, but I'm gonna have to say good night now. *He closes the door in her face, leaving her confused and taken aback. She can hear Giles on the phone, but leaves him alone to his work. Cut inside.*

Giles Yes, I'm, I'm sorry to disturb you. It's, uh... I-I realize it's, uh, five in the morning there, um... Uh, I-I'm trying to reach Diedre Page. My name is Rupert Giles, uh, uh, she knows me. It's, it's very important. *listens to the bad news* I'm terribly sorry. I... I-I didn't know. W-when did she, uh, pass away? *listens more* Ohhhh. That recently. *sits at his desk* Um, yes, yes, um, we were friends when we were young. My condolences.

He hangs up the phone and stares off into space with his fingers to his lips while he considers and remembers. He takes off his glasses and reaches for his drink. The bottle next to it is in almost half empty already. He gulps the rest from the glass and sets it back down. He thinks another moment before grabbing his pen and crossing Diedre's name off of a list of five names: Thomas Sutcliff, Philip Henry, Diedre Page, Ethan Rayne, Rupert Giles. He gets up and goes into his bathroom to the sink in front of the mirror. He rolls up his sleeves, and on his left arm just above the inside elbow is the same tattoo that Philip had. He reaches into the sink full of water, cups his hands and splashes some on his face. He looks up at himself in the mirror.

Giles So. You're back.

Cut to the city morgue. The camera slowly closes on the body storage drawers. Cut inside Philip's drawer. He reaches up and pulls the sheet off of his face. His eyes glow yellow.

Part 2

The city morgue. The morgue attendant is going through some paperwork and checking on bodies. He opens one storage bay, checks the toe tag, and closes it. He does the same for the next one. Then he opens Philip's, and discovers him missing. Suddenly a body bag comes down over his head. He tries to struggle, but Philip is too strong for him. Philip forces him into the storage bay and slams the door shut. He slowly starts to make his way out of the

morgue.

Cut to the hall at Sunnydale High. Jenny, Xander, Willow and Cordelia head for the computer classroom.

Cordelia This isn't right. School on a Saturday. It throws off my internal clock.

Xander When are we gonna need computers for real life anyway?

Jenny Hmm, let's see. There's home, school, work,

games... *unlocks the classroom door*

Xander Y'know, computers are on the way out. I think paper's gonna make a big comeback.

Willow And the abacus.

Xander Yeah, you know, you don't see enough abaci. *They all go into the room. Willow, Xander and Cordelia each take a seat in front of a PC. Cordelia takes the one next to Xander.*

Jenny Alright, guys. The first thing we're gonna do is... Buffy!

Buffy follows Jenny into the room.

Xander Huh? Did I fall asleep already?

Willow Aw, you miss your friends?

Xander Uh, sit here, Buffs! *stands up* Demilitarize the zone between me and Cordelia!

Cordelia Yeah, and delouse him while you're at it.

Buffy to Jenny Actually I wanted to talk to you for a second?

Jenny Something wrong?

Xander Is there some crisis that requires instant action? Very far from here?

Buffy It's Giles.

Jenny Well, he's alright, isn't he?

Buffy I don't know. Uh, he didn't show up when he was supposed to last night, and then, when I went over to his place, he was acting... well, very anti-Giles. He wouldn't let me in, and he looked really bad. I-I think he might've been... *doesn't want to believe it* I think he was drinking.

Jenny He was home alone drinking?

Willow But... tea, right?

Buffy Wasn't tea, Will.

Xander Yep, yep, I knew this would happen. Nobody can be wound as straight and narrow as Giles without a dark side erupting. My Uncle Roary was the stodgiest taxidermist you've ever met by day. By night, it was booze, whores, and fur flying. Were there whores?

Buffy He was alone.

Xander Give it time.

Buffy So, none of you guys have noticed anything different lately?

Willow No!

Jenny Not really.

Buffy Uh, you haven't seen anything weird?

Xander Nope.

Cordelia No, he seemed perfectly normal yesterday when I saw him talking to the police.

Everyone stares at her.

Buffy And you waited 'til now to tell us this because...?

Cordelia I didn't think it was important.

Xander We understand. It wasn't about you.

Jenny Well, what were the police talking to him about?

Cordelia Oh, don't tell me, I know this one. Um... *thinks* Something about... a homicide.

Buffy That's it. I-I'm calling him right now.

She goes to find a phone. Jenny rubs her head with worry. Cut to the library. Buffy heads for Giles' office when she hears something in the stacks and stops in her tracks to look. She sees a shadow move across one of the bookcases in the anteroom. She goes up the stairs and through the French doors. Slowly she walks down the main aisle, looking around and down each side aisle. As she passes one a man watches her search. Buffy keeps looking. He sees her through a gap in the books and puts his hands against the bookcase to push it over onto her. She looks up and sees it's Ethan, and dashes away just in time to avoid being crushed under the bookcase. Ethan tries to make his escape, but he's limping heavily and can't run. She grabs him by the arm and turns him around.

Buffy I know you! You were in that costume shop.

Ethan Oh, I'm pleased you remember. *tries to go*

Buffy stops him You sold me that dress for Halloween, and nearly got us all killed!

Ethan But you looked great.

She punches him squarely in the jaw.

Ethan Owwww! *straightens back up holding his jaw* So now we're even?

Buffy I'll let you know when we're even. What're you doing here?

Ethan Snooping around.

Buffy Honesty. Nice touch.

Ethan It's one of my virtues. *smiles* Not really.

Buffy I've got a great idea: why don't I just call the police and have you arrested for breaking and entering, and then I can get back to my fun Saturday?

Ethan Yes, the police. Well, they'll have all those questions, and they'll really need Rupert to answer them all.

Buffy You know Giles.

Ethan We go back. Way back. You don't happen to know where he is, do you?

Cut to Giles' nightmare. The tattoo on his arm. Visions of a demon, of Diedre in her rotted state, of eyes glowing yellow. His phone rings. Cut to his apartment. He stirs at his desk and fumbles with the phone, managing to pick up the receiver.

Giles Hello.

Buffy cut to her Giles, it's me.

Giles cut to him exhales Buffy, u-unless this is an emergency, I'll see you on Monday.

Buffy cut to her What's the Mark of Eyghon?

Cut to Giles. He is surprised to hear those words from her. Cut to the library.

Buffy Giles?

Ethan Cat got his tongue?

Buffy I'm in your office with someone who claims to be an old friend of yours. *cut to Giles* Ethan Rayne?

Giles He's there with you? Listen, Buffy, you're... you're in grave danger while Ethan's there. I want you to *cut to Buffy* put the phone down and get out of the library as soon as possible.

Buffy I'm not going anywhere until you give me some answers!

Philip comes crashing through a window in Giles' office. Ethan steps behind Buffy and holds her in front of him.

Giles Buffy?

Cut to Giles' apartment. He grabs his glasses and runs from his apartment. Cut to the library. Philip comes out of Giles' office and straight for Buffy. She kicks him in the chest and rolls over the counter. He comes through the door and at her again. Ethan climbs over the counter, too.

Philip Ethan!

Xander comes in, followed by the others.

Buffy Don't let him get away!

Xander pushes Ethan up against the counter, but gets pushed aside. The doors are held wide open by the women, and Ethan tries to make his escape past them, but Cordelia knees him in the crotch and he collapses. Buffy looks around for what to do with Philip and spots the open cage door. She backs toward it, then turns and makes like she's running in. Philip hurries to follow, but she sidesteps the door and kicks him into the cage as he runs by. She slams the door shut and locks it. Ethan is still lying in pain on the floor.

Fade to later. Ethan is sitting in a chair at the table being watched by Buffy. The others observe Philip. Willow has seen enough and goes over to Buffy.

Willow I'm not gonna get close enough to feel his pulse, but... he looks dead.

Xander Except for the walking and attacking Buffy part.

Ethan He's dead. Sorry, Philip. Really I am.

Giles barges into the library.

Giles Is everyone alright?

Cordelia Super! *proud of herself* I kicked a guy!

Jenny We're okay.

Xander Deadguy here interrupted our tutorial. *to Philip* Been meaning to thank you for that.

Philip jumps at him, and Xander backs off. Giles walks over to have a look at Philip.

Giles It can't be!

Ethan Yes, it can. *Giles turns to him* Hello, Ripper.

Giles I thought I told you to leave town.

Ethan You did. I didn't. *Giles approaches him* Shop's lease is paid 'til the end of the month.

Cordelia *to Xander* Uh, why did he call him Ripper?

Giles grabs Ethan by the hair on the back of his neck and lifts him out of his chair.

Giles You should've left when I told you.

Cordelia Ohhhh...

Buffy Giles?!

Giles You put these people in danger. The people I care about.

Ethan If you cared so much about them, why didn't **you** leave town? *pushes Giles' arm away* You've been having the dreams, I know. I have. We both know what's coming.

Buffy What dreams?! What is going on here?!

Ethan Tell her, Ripper.

Buffy Giles...

Philip breaks the cage door and throws it open into Jenny, knocking her out. Xander quickly moves away and pushes Cordelia with him.

Giles JENNY!

He scrambles to her aid. Buffy gets between Ethan and Philip and kicks him in the chest three times, forcing him back against the cage. He slides down to the floor, but gets back up and comes for Buffy again. Before he can reach her, his eyes go wide, he begins to convulse and he collapses to the floor next to Jenny. He disintegrates into a puddle of slime. It begins to spread out. Everyone stares.

Willow Now, there's something you don't see everyday.

Cordelia I'm gonna be in therapy 'til I'm thirty.

Buffy *looks around* Where's Ethan? *runs off* Where'd he go?

The slime oozes its way to Jenny, and her hand stirs when it makes contact. She regains consciousness, and Giles helps her sit up.

Giles Are you alright, Jenny?

Jenny Ow! *cradles her head in her hand*

Giles Careful!

Jenny Ohhh...

Giles Can you stand? *helps her up*

Jenny I think so.

Cordelia This is what happens when you have school on Saturday.

Xander gives her a look.

Jenny *unsteady* Mm.

Giles Lean on me. *pulls her close* It'll be alright.

Jenny *pulls away to look at him* Promise?

Giles I promise.

Jenny I believe you.

She closes her eyes and leans on his shoulder, hugging him close. When she opens her eyes again they glow yellow like cat's eyes.

Part 3

The library. Giles is at the table stroking Jenny's hair as she rests her head against her hand. Buffy comes striding back into the library.

Giles How's your head?

Jenny Throbbing.

Buffy I lost Ethan. Giles, what's going on?

Giles It's complicated, Buffy, and quite frankly, it's private.

Buffy I don't care from private! I care from dead guys attacking us. I care from you lost weekend in your apartment.

Giles I wasn't... I was just trying to find a solution.

Buffy Giles, share! What is the Mark of Eyghon?

Giles Hey! *stares her down* This is not your battle! And as your Watcher, *stands up* I'm telling you unequivocally to stay out of it!

Buffy can't believe what she's hearing.

Giles I have to get Jenny home. *helps her up*

Jenny Mm. Thank you.

She rests her head on his shoulder as the two of them walk from the library. Buffy goes over to the others sitting and leaning on the counter.

Buffy We have work to do. Will, I want you to find out anything and everything you can about the Mark of Eyghon.

Willow I'll try the 'Net, but 'Mark of Eyghon' sounds like Giles and his books sorta deal.

Buffy Then we hit the books.

Willow heads up into the stacks.

Buffy Xander, how do you feel about digging through some of Giles' personal files and seeing what you can find?

Xander I feel pretty good about it. Does that make me a sociopath? Nah. *heads for the office*

Cordelia hops off of the counter and smiles at Buffy.

Buffy *raises her brows* What?

Cordelia What about me? I care about Giles.

Buffy *thinks* Uh, work with Xander.

Cordelia Well, when I say 'care', I, I mean...

Buffy Cordelia...

Cordelia Okay, okay! *walks to the office*

Buffy goes to do what she can to help, too.

Cut to Giles' apartment building.

Jenny Thanks for bringing me here. *cut inside the apartment* Not quite ready to be home alone just yet.

She accepts a drink from Giles. He walks around the couch and sits down next to her. She takes a sip of the drink.

Jenny Ooo!

Giles Jenny, uh... I'm so very sorry about all of this. *sets down his drink and takes off his glasses* I, uh... I never meant for you to be involved in, in, uh, any of this.

Jenny So I got involved. *leans forward* That's what happens when two people get involved.

Giles looks at her and smiles. He starts to make a move in to kiss her, but stops himself.

Giles I really am, however, gonna have to get you home. It's not, uh... I'm not a very safe person to be around at the moment.

Jenny Nothing's safe in this world, Rupert. Don't you know that by now?

She reaches up and strokes his head behind his ear.

Cut to the library. Willow has found something.

Willow Ah! Aha! It's not Egyptian, it's Etruscan *goes over to Buffy with her book* mistaken for Egyptian by the design pattern, but any fool can see it predates their iconology. Look, the Mark of Eyghon, worn by his initiates. *reads* 'Eyghon, also called the Sleepwalker, can only exist in this reality by possessing an unconscious host. Temporary possession imbues the host with a euphoric feeling of power.'

Buffy Yeah, but what about non-temporary?

Willow *reads* 'Unless the proper rituals are observed, the possession is permanent, and Eyghon will be born from within the host.'

Cordelia I'm guessing eww!

Willow Wait. Hey, listen. 'Once called, Eyghon can also take possession of the dead, but its demonic energy soon disintegrates the host, and it must jump to the nearest dead or unconscious person to continue living.'

Buffy I still don't get what this has to do with Giles.

Willow I don't know about Giles, but ancient sects used to induce possession for bacchanals and, and orgies.

Xander Okay! Giles and orgies in the same sentence. I coulda lived without that one.

Cordelia could've lived without Xander's comment.

Buffy Uh, wait a minute. The dead guy's all puddly now.

Cordelia So the demon's gone. There was no one dead to jump into. I mean, we're all not dead, right?

Buffy No, no one dead.

Xander But someone unconscious.

They realize what happened.

Cut to Giles' apartment. Jenny yanks the phone cord from the wall.

Giles What was that?

Jenny What was what?

Giles I thought I heard something. *comes out of the kitchen with tea*

Jenny I didn't.

Giles Here. *hands her a cup* Drink that, and then I'll drive you home.

Jenny *takes a sip* You could take me home. *sets the cup*

down Or you could take advantage of me in my weakened state.

Cut to the library. Buffy is on the phone.

Buffy Thank you, operator. *hangs up* There's no answer at Ms. Calendar's, and Giles' phone is out of order. I'm gonna go over there. *strides out*

Cut to Giles' apartment.

Giles Jenny, uh... *moves away* I'm, I'm really very attracted to you.

Jenny Good. *follows*

Giles But, um, now really isn't the right time. *faces her*

Jenny Oh, there's never been a better time.

She pushed him back onto a chair, climbs onto his lap and kisses him hard. He pushes her away.

Giles It's not right. I would be taking advantage.

Jenny gets off God, you just don't change, do you? *paces*

Giles What?

Jenny It's not right, it wouldn't be proper, people might get hurt. You're like a woman, Ripper. You cry at every funeral. You never had the strength for me. You don't deserve me. *whispers* But guess what? You've got me. *takes his head in a deep male voice* Under your skin.

She grabs his hair and lifts him to his feet. She kisses him roughly. When she pulls back her face has started the transformation to Eyghon.

Jenny/Eyghon Was it good for you?

She smashes his head into the phone on the desk.

Jenny/Eyghon Aw, you never had the stomach. But that's okay. 'Cause I'm about to rip it out!

She pulls him back, and he cries out as he staggers backward into the bar and stumbles to the floor. Buffy kicks open the door and kicks Jenny/Eyghon hard in the jaw, sending her back over the couch and onto the floor. She gets up again and walks around the couch, eyeing Buffy.

Buffy Back off!

Jenny/Eyghon stops and laughs Three down, two to go. Be seeing ya.

She runs and dives through the window. Buffy crouches down beside Giles.

Buffy Are you alright?

Giles Oh, Jenny! Oh, God!

Buffy Giles, how do we stop this?

Giles Oh, God, what have I done?

Buffy Talk to me! Giles, you're scaring me.

Giles I'm sorry.

Buffy Don't be sorry, be Giles. C'mon, we fight monsters. This is what we do. They show up, they scare us, I beat 'em up and they go away. This isn't any different!

Giles It is different.

Buffy Because you don't know how to stop it?

Giles Because I created it!

Cut to the library. Xander comes out of Giles' office.

Willow Did you find anything?

Xander The most meticulous banking and phone records you've ever seen. And, um, this.

He hands her a picture of a young Giles in a leather jacket playing an electric guitar.

Willow giggles That's Giles?

Cut to Giles' apartment.

Giles I was twenty-one, studying history at Oxford. And, of course, the occult by night. I hated it. The tedious grind of study, the... overwhelming pressure of my destiny. I dropped out, I went to London... *exhales* I fell in with the worst crowd that would have me. We practiced magicks. Small stuff for pleasure or gain. And Ethan and I discovered something... bigger.

Buffy Eyghon.

Giles Yes. One of us would, um... *nervously pours a drink* go into a deep sleep, and the others would, uh, summon him. It was an extraordinary high! *smiles nervously* God, we were fools.

Buffy You couldn't control it.

Giles One of us, Randall, he lost control. Eyghon took him whole. We tried to exorcise the demon from Randall, but it killed him. No. We killed him. We thought we were free of the demon after that. But now he's back. And one by one, he will kill us all.

Buffy Three down, two to go?

Giles nods.

Buffy Then it's going after Ethan. *gets up* I better beat it there.

Giles gets up We'd better.

Buffy I'd better. Giles, you're barely mobile, and speed is of a serious essence here.

Giles sits back down I don't know how to stop it without killing Jenny.

Buffy I've got the guys working on it. I'll, um, try to contain it until we figure something. *starts to go*

Giles Buffy? *she stops* I'm sorry.

Buffy I know. *leaves*

Cut to the street in front of Ethan's. Cut inside. Buffy opens the door and looks in.

Buffy Ethan? *comes in and closes the door* Ethan? *looks around* Giles told me everything. Look, it's coming for you.

Ethan appears behind her And you came to protect me? I'm touched.

Buffy Don't worry, it's nothing personal. To protect Giles I have to protect you. *walks past him*

Ethan How does Ripper inspire such goodness?

Buffy 'Cause he's Giles.

Ethan And I'm not. Still, lucky me.

Buffy Hmm. Lucky you.

Ethan Well, we can't run. Eyghon will find us. *shows his tattoo* This mark's like a homing beacon.

Buffy That's okay. I'm not much into running.

Ethan Aren't we manly?

Buffy One of us is. You're gonna hide 'til it's over.

Ethan Excellent plan.

Buffy Is there a way in through the back?

Ethan Uh, there's a back door. It's locked. I think it's

solid.

Buffy We'll set up there. Let's go.

Ethan Oh, no, please.

He indicates she should go first. She heads toward the back as he picks up a mannequin arm and hits her across the back with it, knocking her down and out.

Ethan Ladies first.

Part 4

Ethan's shop. He's humming while he works. Buffy is lying face down on a table with her arms tied together underneath. She wakes up.

Ethan Wakey, wakey. You're missing all the fun.

Buffy What fun?

Ethan Your initiation.

He sets down a tray of tattooing instruments.

Buffy You know what? I'm not real interested in joining your club.

Ethan Too late. I already voted you in. *she struggles* Y'know, I hope you're not taking this personally, Buffy. I actually kinda like you. It's ju, it's just that I like myself a whole lot more. If you think of it karmically, this is, this is really big for your soul.

Buffy struggles with the rope.

Ethan You know, taking my place with the demon, giving so that others may live.

Buffy I'm gonna kill you. Will that blow the whole karma thing?

Ethan Sweet child. *takes the tattoo ink and needle* Now, this may sting a little just at first. But don't worry, that'll go away once the searing pain kicks in.

Buffy struggles harder. He bends over her to begin.

Ethan You can go ahead and scream if you like.

He starts tattooing her on the back of her neck.

Cut to the library. Willow, Xander and Cordelia are re-searching books.

Willow We have to figure out how to kill this thing, and we need to do it fast. *takes a sip of tea*

Xander *reads* Uh, 'hot lava.'

Willow That's for a heretic.

Xander Oh, yeah. Yeah, yeah, okay. Uh, ooo, ooo! 'Bury a potato!' No, that's for warts. Who writes this stuff?

Cordelia I've got the solution right here. 'To kill a demon cut off its head.'

Xander Oh, yeah-yeah-yeah-yeah! We'll, uh, find Ms. Calendar, then we'll decapitate her. Hey! She'll be the first headless computer teacher in school. You think anybody'll notice?

Cordelia Do you know what you need, Xander, besides a year's supply of acne cream? A brain.

Xander *Gets up* That's it! Twelve years of you and I'm snappin'! I don't care if you're a girl or not, I'm throwin' down! Come on!

Cordelia *gets up and walks to him* I've seen you fight. And don't think I can't take you!

Xander Give it your best shot.

Willow *had enough, gets up* HEY! We don't have time for this! Our friends are in trouble! Now, we have to put our heads together and, and get them out of it! And if you two aren't with me a hundred and ten percent, then get the hell out of my library! *points to the door*

Cordelia *meekly* We're sorry.

Xander We'll be good.

Willow *nods and sits* Okay. Now, we've done the research. We just have to figure out how to use it.

Xander Oh, hey! Why don't we find another dead body for the demon to jump into!

Cordelia Yes! At the cemetery.

Willow Well, that won't kill the demon. It'll only give it a change of scenery. *something clicks* Oh. Oh! Oh, I've got it! *runs for the phone* I've got it!

Xander She's good! *follows*

Cordelia smiles and follows also.

Cut to Ethan's shop. Ethan has finished Buffy's tattoo.

Ethan Hmm. I think I missed my calling as an artist.

Buffy Ethan, listen to me. This is a bad idea. You're dealing with something very dangerous.

Ethan *rolls up his left sleeve* But it will get Eyghon off my scent.

He picks up a bottle of sulfuric acid. Buffy draws a breath in fright, thinking the acid is meant for her.

Ethan Now relax. I'm finished with you. This is for me.

Buffy has found an exposed screw on the underside of the table and begins scraping her rope against it. Ethan steels himself for the burn of the acid. He slowly pours it onto his Mark of Eyghon tattoo. Buffy looks at him like he's insane. He does his best not to scream but lets out a few grunts of pain. Buffy keeps scraping the rope on the screw.

Cut to Giles' apartment. He's about to leave his apartment when he's caught by a waking nightmare and collapses to the floor, unable to remain standing. He has

visions of the Mark of Eyghon and various friends incarnate of Eyghon, and finally of Buffy with her new tattoo. He wakes.

Giles Oh! Ethan... No. No!

He quickly gets up, grabs his coat and staggers out the door, still weak and not bothering to close it behind him. Cut to Ethan's. He wraps his arm in a bandage.

Ethan Well, I hate to mutilate and run, but...

He and Buffy see a diffuse green light shine through the shop windows and the shadow of Jenny/Eyghon coming to the door. The door opens and Jenny/Eyghon steps in, well on her way to transforming into Eyghon.

Jenny/Eyghon to Ethan in a deep male voice It's your time.

Buffy is almost through the rope under the table. Jenny/Eyghon steps up to Ethan. He stares at her in fear. She sniffs a few times and realizes he's not the one she's after anymore. She turns to Buffy, and her eyes glow. Jenny/Eyghon shoves Ethan aside just as Buffy gets through the rope. Buffy rolls off of the table and onto the floor as Jenny/Eyghon lunges for her. She kicks up and flips Jenny/Eyghon and the table over and onto the floor. They both get up. Jenny/Eyghon holds the table in her hands and rushes Buffy with it, pushing her into some crates. Giles barges in through the door.

Giles Eyghon! Take me.

Jenny/Eyghon tosses the table aside and turns to face Giles.

Giles Buffy, get out of here!

Jenny/Eyghon slowly advances on Giles.

Buffy NO! gets between them No!

Jenny/Eyghon stretches her arm out at Buffy, and she goes flying into a pile of boxes. Jenny/Eyghon grabs Giles by the collar, pulls him around and down to the floor and stands over him.

Jenny/Eyghon I've been waiting a long time to do this. *As she bends down to grab Giles Angel runs in through the door, grabs her and pulls her to the crate, banging her head into it. He takes her by the neck and starts to choke her. Willow, Xander and Cordelia run in next. Willow holds Giles back as he gets up.*

Giles He's killing her!

Willow No! Trust me! This is gonna work!

Angel continues choking Jenny Eyghon. Xander helps Buffy up. Finally Eyghon has to jump and does so, right into Angel. He drops Jenny as he's thrown back into the wall and begins convulsing. When Jenny hits the floor she is herself again. Willow lets go of Giles, and he immediately gets on his hands and knees next to her.

Giles Jenny!

Angel's face twists and contorts as the demons inside of him fight it out. He is thrown to the crate and hits

his head. His face goes through a few more contortions when Eyghon suddenly appears, apparently gaining the upper hand. After a moment Angel's face shifts back to normal, then back to Eyghon, then back to normal again. He is thrown back against the wall. Another moment's struggle and the demon inside Angel throws Eyghon out. Without a host body to occupy Eyghon quickly crumbles into ashes. Angel gasps and collapses to the floor. They all run over to his aid. Giles reaches out to Jenny. She shifts to look at him.

Giles Jenny!

Jenny Rupert...

Ethan gets up and runs from the shop.

Buffy You knew that if the demon was in trouble it was gonna jump into the nearest dead person.

Angel I put it in danger.

Willow And it jumped. *stands up*

Angel gets up I've had a demon inside me for a couple hundred years... *exhales* just waitin' for a good fight.

Buffy Winner and still champion.

Xander Uh, I think that Ethan guy disappeared again.

Buffy Darn. I really wanted to hit him 'til he bled.

Cordelia Well, at least it's over.

Buffy and Angel look over at Jenny and Giles. Jenny clings to Giles as they walk out of the shop.

Cut to school the next day. Willow, Xander and Buffy walk across the quad.

Buffy You know what the worst thing is? I was saving up for some very important shoes, and now I have to blow my entire allowance to get this stupid tattoo removed. Let's just hope my mom doesn't see it first.

Xander Puttin' that demon into Angel was pretty brill, Will.

Willow I wasn't sure it was gonna work.

Buffy But it did.

Xander Like a charm.

Buffy Hey! Maybe you should consider a career as a Watcher.

Willow Oh, no, I don't think I could handle the stress.

Xander And the dental plan is crap.

Willow I don't see how Giles does it.

They see him walking.

Buffy I don't think he has a choice.

Cut to the hall. Jenny walks to the stairs and is about to start up when Giles catches up with her.

Giles Uh, uh, Jenny! Jenny...

She stops and turns to face him.

Jenny Rupert, hi.

Giles Uh... I-I-I tried to call you last night, s-see how you were.

Jenny Yeah, I-I-I, uh... I left my phone off the hook. I seem to need a lot of sleep lately.

Giles But, but you're al-alright? Is, is, is there anything you need?

Jenny Mm, no, I'm fine. I mean, I'm not... running around, wind in my hair, 'the hills are alive with the sound of music' fine, but... I'm coping.

Giles I, I would like to help.

Jenny I know.

Giles Perhaps we could, um, talk sometime, um... dinner, or, or a drink? When you're feeling stronger.

Buffy sees them talking.

Jenny Sure, sometime.

Giles reaches out to her, but she takes a backward step up and away from him and draws a deep breath.

Jenny Yeah. Sometime. *pauses* I better get to class.

Giles Yes, of course.

He watches her go up the stairs. When she's gone from sight he looks down sadly, and after a moment starts to go to his library. Buffy catches up to him.

Buffy Hey.

They round the corner and stop.

Buffy Is she okay?

Giles Um... The hills are not alive.

Buffy *doesn't understand* I'm sorry to hear that. I think.

Giles I don't think she'll ever really forgive me. Maybe she shouldn't.

Buffy Maybe you should.

Giles I never wanted you to see that side of me.

Buffy I'm not gonna lie to you. It was scary. I'm so used to you being a grownup, and *inhales* then I find out that you're a person.

Giles Most grownups are.

Buffy Who would've thought?

Giles Some are even, uh... shortsighted, foolish people.

Buffy So, after all this time, we finally find out that we **do** have something in common. Which, apart from being a little weird, is kind of okay. *pauses* I think we're supposed to be training right now.

Giles Yes. Yes. Um, need to concentrate on your flexibility.

Buffy And you know what? I have just the perfect music. *holds up a black CD* Go on, say it. You know you want to.

Giles It's not music, it's just, uh, meaningless sounds.

Buffy There. Feel better?

Giles Yes. Thanks.

They head into the next hall toward the library.

Giles Bay City Rollers. Now, that's music.

Buffy I didn't hear that.

What's My Line, Part 1

Written by **Howard Gordon & Marti Noxon**

Directed by **David Solomon**

Disclaimer: I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB television network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "What's My Line", part 1. It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.04

This episode was originally broadcast on November 17, 1997.

Copyright (C) 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Sunnydale High School. The career fair is going on in the lounge. Willow comes into the hall from outside and looks around at some of the displays being set up on her way to sign up for the career aptitude test. Buffy and Xander are already sitting at a table filling out their tests.

Xander reads 'Are you a people person, or do you prefer keeping your own company?' Well, what if I'm a people person who keeps his own company by default?

Willow heads for their table with a test to join them.

Buffy So, mark 'none of the above'.

Xander Well, there are no boxes for 'none of the above'. That would introduce too many variables into their mushroom head, number-crunching little world.

Willow sits I'm sensing bitterness.

Xander No, it's just these people can't tell from one multiple-choice test what we're gonna be doing for the rest of our lives. It's ridiculous!

Willow smiles I'm kinda curious to find out what sort of career I could have.

Xander What, and suck all the spontaneity out of being young and stupid? I'd rather live in the dark.

Willow You're not gonna be young forever.

Xander Yes, but I'll always be stupid. *smirks and looks at the girls* Okay, let's not all rush to disagree.

Buffy looks up at him seriously You're not stupid.

Xander gives her an acknowledging sarcastic grin, then looks up when he hears Cordelia. She has a clipboard, and is taking her test as she walks into the lounge accompanied by two of her groupies.

Cordelia 'I aspire to help my fellow man.' marks her test Check. As long as he's not smelly, dirty or something gross. *walks by the table*

Xander Cordelia Chase, always ready to give a helping hand to the rich and the pretty.

Cordelia Which, lucky me, excludes you. Twice.

Xander has no comeback, so Cordelia just walks away followed closely by her cronies.

Xander Is murder always a crime?

Buffy Do I like shrubs?

Xander That's between you and your god.

Buffy to Willow What'd you put?

Willow I came down on the side of shrubs.

Buffy Go with shrubs! Okay! *frustrated* Uhhh! I shouldn't even be bothering with this. It's all mootville for me. No matter what my aptitude test says, we already know my deal.

Xander Yup, high risk, sub-minimum wage...

Buffy Pointy wooden things...

Willow Then why are you even taking the test?

Buffy It's Principal Snyder's hoop of the week. He's not happy unless I'm jumping. Believe me, I would **not** be here otherwise.

Willow You're not even a teensy weensy bit curious about what kinda career you could've had? I mean, if you weren't already the Slayer and all.

Buffy Do the words 'sealed in fate' ring any bells for you, Will? Why go there?

Willow is hurt by that comment.

Xander Y'know, with that kind of attitude you could've had a bright future as an employee at the DMV. *shakes his pencil at her*

Buffy I'm sorry, it's just... unless Hell freezes over and every vamp in Sunnydale puts in for early retirement, I'd say my future is pretty much a non-issue.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. Drusilla is standing at one end of a large table dealing her tarot cards. At the other end Spike is looking on as Dalton tries to translate the ancient text in the book that they stole from the library.

Spike Read it again.

Dalton Well, I'm not sure. It could be, uh... *shrugs with his hands* deprimere... ille... bubula... linter.

Spike paging through a dictionary Debase, the beef, canoe.

Dalton looks up at Spike and smiles a stupid smile. Spike cannot abide him and punches him in the face.

Spike Why does that strike me as not right?

Dalton looks at him sheepishly and turns his attention back to the book.

Drusilla Spike, come dance? *holds out her hand*

Spike *angry* Give us some peace, would you? Can't you see I'm working?

Drusilla pulls back her hand and begins to pout and whine like a puppy.

Spike Oh, I'm sorry, kitten. *goes to her* It's just this manuscript. Supposed to hold your cure, but it reads like gibberish. E-even Dalton here, the big brain, he can't make heads or tails of it.

Drusilla puts her hand to her head.

Drusilla I... I, I need to change Miss Edith.

She takes a few steps and then puts her other hand to her head as well, bends over and whines. Spike rushes to her, puts his arms around her and pulls her back up.

Spike Oh, forgive me! You know I can't stand to see you like this. *sits her down and crouches* We're runnin' out of time. It's that bloody Slayer! Whenever I turn around she's muckin' up the works.

Drusilla *tries to comfort him back* Shh. Shh. You'll make it right. I know.

Spike puts his hands around her neck and kisses her gently but firmly. After they release their kiss he stands up again and turns his attention back to Dalton. Drusilla reaches for the next tarot card.

Spike Well. *walks around the table* Come on, now. Enlighten me.

Dalton Uh, well, it looks like Latin, but it's not. I-I'm not even sure it's, it's a language, actually, I...

Spike Then MAKE IT A LANGUAGE! Isn't that what a transcriber does?!

Dalton Well, not exactly...

He yelps as Spike grabs him by the shirt and lifts him from his chair.

Spike I want the cure.

Drusilla Don't...

Spike Why not? Some people find pain *punches Dalton in the stomach* very inspirational.

Dalton doubles over.

Drusilla *looks up from her cards* He can't help you. *looks back at her cards* Not without... *points at a card* the key.

Spike The key? You mean this book is in some kind of code?

Drusilla Yeah.

Dalton nods weakly, still in pain. Spike shoves him back into his chair and walks over to Drusilla. He looks at one of her cards. A mausoleum is pictured on it.

Spike Is that where we'll find this key?

Drusilla Yeah!

Spike I'll send the boys, pronto!

Drusilla Now will you dance? *smiles*

Spike *smiles and takes her hand* I'll dance with **you**, pet. *He pulls her up from her chair and lifts her into his arms.*

Spike On the Slayer's grave!

He starts to spin around with her in his arms.

Part 1

The cemetery. Buffy walks through it at a relaxed pace. She pauses for a moment, but continues on, scanning the graveyard around her as she goes. She stops again when she hears clinking noises coming from a mausoleum. She looks at it and sees light coming from inside. She walks over to it, pushes the door open a bit and peeks in. Dalton is chipping away at the wall, exposing a chamber behind it. He reaches in for something as Buffy pulls her head back out and closes the door. She walks down the steps and turns around to wait for him to come out. A few moments later Dalton opens the door and steps out.

Buffy Does 'rest in peace' have no sanctity to you people? Oh, I forgot. You're not a people.

Another vampire comes up behind her. She senses him, turns around and kicks him in the gut, then the jaw, then again in the gut. He takes a swing at her, but she grabs his arm and punches him twice in the face. He swings at her with his other arm, but she ducks and catches it, too. She yanks it back, and it can be heard snapping. While she has him leaning back she thrusts a

stake into his heart. He explodes into ashes.

Buffy One down, turns and sees Dalton missing one gone.

She looks around, but sees no sign of him anywhere.

Cut to Buffy's room. Angel is there, and he looks around while he waits for her to get home. Buffy climbs up to her window and looks in. She sees him looking into her bookcase. Angel takes her stuffed pig from the shelf. Without a word Buffy reaches for her bag and tosses it loudly through the window and onto the floor. Angel turns around, startled. He gently squeezes the pig.

Angel Buffy! You scared me.

Buffy *climbs in* Now you know what it feels like, Stealth Guy.

She crouches down by her bag and reaches into her hair to pull out a few clips.

Buffy Just dropping by for some quality time with Mr. Gordo?

Angel *confused* Excuse me?

Buffy The pig. *opens her trunk and dumps the bag in*

Angel Oh. *chuckles* I, uh...

Buffy What's up? *walks to her desk*

Angel Nothing.

He tosses the pig onto a chair and walks to the foot of her bed. She drops her hair clips into a desk drawer and faces him.

Buffy Only you don't have a nothing face. You have a something face. And you don't have to whisper. Mom's in L.A. 'til Thursday. Art buying, or something.

Angel Then why'd you come in through the window?

Buffy *crinkles her nose* Habit.

Angel I wanted to make sure you're okay. I had a bad feeling.

Buffy *exhales* There's a surprise. Angel comes with bad news.

He exhales and turns away, tired of the same old reaction from her.

Buffy Oh, God, I'm sorry. *walks over to him* Look, I've been Cranky Miss all day. It's not you.

Angel Well, what is it then?

Buffy It's nothing.

Angel isn't buying it.

Buffy *exhales* Uh, we're having this thing at school.

Angel Career week?

Buffy How did you know?

Angel I lurk.

Buffy Right. Well, then you know it's a whole week of 'what's my line', only... I don't get to play. *sits on her bed* Sometimes I just want...

Angel You want what? *sits next to her*

Buffy looks into her long mirror. She's alone in the reflection.

Angel It's okay.

Buffy *looks up at Angel* The Cliff Notes version? I want a normal life. Like I had before.

Angel Before me.

Buffy No, Angel, *touches his hand* it's not you. *touches his cheek* You're the one freaky thing in my freaky world that still makes sense to me. *lowers her hand* I just get messed sometimes. *Angel looks down* I wish we could be regular kids.

Angel *looks back up* Yeah. I'll never be a kid. *gets up*

Buffy Okay, then a regular kid and her cradle robbing, creature-of-the-night boyfriend.

Angel can't help but let out a laugh. Buffy smiles back. He sees a picture on her desk and picks it up. It's of her as a child on ice-skates.

Angel Was this part of your normal life?

Buffy Oh, my God. *laughs and stands up* My Dorothy Hamill phase. My room in L.A. was pretty much a shrine. Dorothy dolls, Dorothy posters, I even got the

Dorothy haircut. Thereby securing a place for myself in the geek hall of fame.

Angel Hmm, you wanted to be like her?

Buffy I wanted to **be** her. My parents were fighting all the time, and skating was an escape. I felt safe.

Angel When was the last time you put on your skates?

Buffy *inhales* About a couple of hundred demons ago.

Angel *steps close to her* There's a rink out past Route 17, it's... closed on Tuesdays.

Buffy *looks up at him* Tomorrow's Tuesday.

Angel I know.

Cut to school the next day. Cordelia and Xander are going over the results of the career aptitude test posted on a bulletin board. She finds herself in the A-D list.

Cordelia Oh, here I am. 'Personal shopper or motivational speaker.' Neato!

Xander Motivational speaker? On what? Ten ways to a more annoying you?

She pages through the H-K list and finds Xander's results.

Cordelia Oh, what about you? You're... *giggles and leaves*

Xander What? *frantically looks himself up* What?!

Cut to a hall exit. Willow and Buffy come out and start across the quad.

Willow You and Angel are going skating? Alone?

Buffy Unless some unforeseen evil pops up. But I'm in full 'see no evil' mode.

Willow Angel ice-skating.

Buffy I know. Two worlds collide.

Xander meets up with them.

Xander Wouldn't you two say you know me about as well as anyone else? Maybe even better than I know myself?

Willow What's **this** about?

Xander When you look at me, do you think 'prison guard'?

Willow and Buffy giggle.

Buffy Um, crossing guard, maybe, but prison guard? *shakes her head*

Xander They just put up the assignments for the career fair, and according to my test results I can look forward to being gainfully employed in the growing field of corrections.

Buffy *giggles* Well, at least you'll be on the right side of the bars.

Xander Ha, ha, ha, ha! Laugh now, missy, they assigned you to the booth for law enforcement professionals.

Buffy *stunned* As in police?

Xander As in polyester, doughnuts and brutality.

Buffy whines.

Willow But, *smiles* doughnuts!

Buffy *whines louder* Well, I'll just jump off that bridge when I come to it.

She spots Giles walking along with a tall stack of old books in his arms.

Buffy First I have to deal with Giles. He's on this Tony Robbins hyper-efficiency kick. Expects me to check in every day after homeroom. *walks off after Giles* Police?

Xander starts to follow, but Willow holds him back.

Willow You didn't check to see which seminar I was assigned to, did you?

Xander I did, and you weren't.

Willow I wasn't what?

Xander On the list.

Willow But I handed in my test! I used a number two pencil!

Xander Then I guess you musta passed.

Willow It's not the kinda test you pass or fail.

Xander Your name wasn't up there, Will.

Willow is a bit taken aback.

Cut to the library. Giles walks to the table, balancing his stack of books. He carefully sets them down and leans over a bit to straighten the stack, but over-leans, and the books begins to fall over. He reacts quickly to try to stop them.

Giles AH!

Buffy puts her hand on top of the stack just as he does, and they push it back up. Giles is relieved.

Giles *exhales* Buffy. Thank you. *she sits* I've been, uh, indexing the Watcher diaries covering the last couple of centuries. You would be amazed at how numbingly pompous and long-winded some of these Watchers were.

Buffy Color me stunned.

Giles So, uh, I trust last night's patrol was fruitful?

Buffy Semi. Mm, I caught one out of two vamps after they stole something from this jumbo mausoleum.

Giles They were stealing?

Buffy Yeah! They had tools, flashlights, whole nine yards. What does that mean anyway? 'Whole nine yards'? *Giles begins to pace* Nine yards of what? *whines* Now it's gonna bug me all day. Giles, you're in pace mode. What gives?

Giles Um, this vampire who escaped, did you see what he took?

Buffy No, but I could take a guess and say it was something old.

Giles You made no effort to find out what was taken?

Buffy Have a cow, Giles! I just figured it was your everyday vamp hijinks.

Giles Well, what if it wasn't? This could be very serious! I mean, i- i-if you'd made an effort to, uh, to be more thorough in your observations...

Buffy Y'know, if you don't like the way I'm doing my job, why don't you find somebody else? Oh, that's right, there can only be one. As long as I'm alive, there is no one else. Well, there you go! I don't have to be the Slayer. I could be dead.

Giles That wasn't terribly funny. You notice I don't laugh.

Buffy Wouldn't be much of a change. Either way I'm bored, constricted, I never get to shop, and my hair and fingernails still continue to grow. So really, when you think about it, what's the diff?

Giles Do we have to be introspective now? Our only concern is to discover what was stolen from that mausoleum last night.

Cut to Drusilla's room. She waves her hand over an intricately carved gold cross held out to her by Spike on a red velvet pillow.

Spike This is it then?

Drusilla *senses* It hums. I can hear it.

Spike Once you're well again, we'll have a coronation down Main Street, and invite everyone, and drink for seven days and seven nights.

Dalton *behind them* What about the Slayer? She almost blew the whole thing for us. She's trouble.

Spike *looks at him* You **don't** say? *gets up* Trouble?! *paces* She's the gnat in my ear! The gristle in my teeth! She's the bloody thorn in my BLOODY SIDE! *kicks the table violently*

Drusilla *concerned* Spike?

Spike We gotta do something. We'll never complete your cure with that **bitch** breathing down our necks. *exhales* I need to bring in the big guns. They'll take care of her once and for all.

Dalton Big guns?

Spike The Order of Taraka.

Dalton The bounty hunters?!

Drusilla deals three tarot cards. One is of a Cyclops, another of a centipede and the third of a panther.

Drusilla They're coming to my party. *looks up* Three of them.

Spike walks back to the bed to look at the cards.

Dalton Uh, yes, but... The Order of Taraka, I mean... isn't that overkill?

Spike No, I think it's just enough kill.

Part 2

The career fair in the school lounge. Xander walks into the hall at the far end and spots Willow.

Xander Willow! *they walk* What are you doing here? Fly! Be free, little bird, you defy category!

Willow I'm looking for Buffy.

Xander Oh, she went with Giles about an hour ago. Some kind of field trip deal.

Willow If she doesn't get back soon, Snyder's really... *spots him on the stairs* ...done a great job with the fair this year, hasn't he, Xander?

Xander Principal Snyder! Great career fair, sir! Really! In fact, I'm so inspired by your leadership, I'm thinking principal school. I wanna walk in **your** shoes. Not your actual shoes, of course, because you're a tiny person. Not tiny in the small sense, of course. Okay, I'm done now.

Snyder Where is she?

Willow Who?

Snyder You know who.

Willow You mean Buffy? *looks around* I just saw her...

Snyder *interrupts* And don't feed me that 'I just saw her a minute ago, she's around here somewhere' story.

Willow But I did... just see her a minute ago, and she is... **around** here somewhere!

Xander For what it's worth...

Snyder *interrupts* It's worth nothing, Harris. Whatever comes out of your mouth is a meaningless waste of breath. An airborne toxic event.

Xander Well, I'm glad you feel comfortable enough to be so honest with me. And I can only hope that one day I'm in the position to be that honest with you.

Snyder Fascinating. *leaves*

Xander *to Willow* Well, love to stay and chat, but I got an appointment with the warden on standard riot procedure. Ciao. *walks off*

Willow Okay, see ya.

Two recruiters in dark suits approach Willow.

Recruiter Willow Rosenberg? *she faces them* Come with us, please?

Willow Excuse me?

Recruiter Let's walk.

The two men take her by the arms and guide her to a curtained-off area of the lounge. They pull the curtain aside for Willow. She steps through and they follow her, letting the curtain fall closed again behind them. A waiter in a white jacket and black bow tie holds an hors-d'oeuvre tray up for her.

Recruiter Try the canape'. It's excellent.

Willow shakes her head to the waiter, and he immediately departs.

Willow What is all this?

Recruiter You've been selected to meet with Mr. McCarthy, head recruiter for the world's leading software concern. The jet was delayed by fog at Sea-Tac, but he should be here any minute. Please, *indicates the couch* make yourself comfortable.

Willow But I didn't even get my test back.

Recruiter The test was irrelevant. We've been tracking you for some time.

Willow Is that a good thing?

Recruiter I would think so. We're extremely selective. In fact, only one other Sunnydale student met our criteria. *Without another word the two recruiters turn and leave through the curtain. Willow is a bit stunned, but stays and turns around to see who the other student is. Oz is sitting there on the couch studying another tray of canape'. She steps over to the couch and sits down on the other end. She folds her hands in her lap and looks over at Oz. He notices someone sit and turns to look. When he sees her he does a double take and realizes she's the girl he's noticed twice before. He looks down at the tray in his hand and offers it to her.*

Oz Canape'?

Cut to a cemetery entrance. Buffy swings open the metal gate and strides in, holding a flashlight. Giles is running to catch up with her.

Giles Buffy! Slow down! Please!

Buffy Giles, we have work to do, remember? Get with the program.

Giles holds his chest as he breathes hard to catch his breath from running after her. They continue walking to the mausoleum.

Giles You're behaving remarkably im-immaturely. *pant*

Buffy You know why? I **am** immature. I'm a teen. I have yet to mature.

Giles I was *pant* simply offering some *pant* constructive criticism. *pant*

Buffy No! You were harsh! God, you act like I picked this gig. But remember, I'm the picked.

Giles What you have *pant* is more than *pant* a gig. *pant* It's a sacred duty. *pant* Which *pant* shouldn't prevent you from e-e- eventually procuring some *pant* more *pant* gainful f-f-form of employment. Uh-uh-uh, such as I did.

Buffy Uh, Giles, it's one thing to be a Watcher and a librarian. They go together like chicken and... another chicken, or... two chickens, or... something, you know what I'm saying! The point is, no one blinks an eye if you want to spend all your days with books. What am I supposed to do? Carve stakes for a nursery?

Giles has gotten in front of her as they make their way past several gravestones.

Giles Um, point taken. I must, however, admit, I-I've

never really... Well, now there's a thought, have you ever considered law enforcement?

Buffy stops in her tracks as Giles turns to face her. She looks at him like he's crazy. A moment later her expression changes to exasperation, and she raises her flashlight and jerks it at the mausoleum behind him.

Giles What? *turns to look* Oh!

They walk up the steps and go in. Cut inside. The chamber is bare except for two large stone vases and a pile of rubble on the floor. They come down the steps.

Giles May I? *reaches for the flashlight*

Buffy *hands it to him* Be my guest.

He turns on the flashlight and walks over to where the wall has been broken into.

Giles It's a reliquary. Used to house items of religious significance. Most commonly a finger or some other body part from a saint.

Buffy Note to self: religion: freaky.

She leans against the wall as Giles scans around the rest of the room with the flashlight. He spots a name engraved on a stone high above.

Giles Du Lac. Oh dear, oh dear.

Buffy I hate when you say that.

Giles Josephus du Lac was buried here. He belonged to a religious sect that was excommunicated by the Vatican at the turn of the century.

Buffy Excommunicated **and** sent to Sunnydale. There's a guy big with the sinning.

Giles You remember the book that was stolen from the library by a vampire a few weeks ago?

Buffy Yeah.

Giles It was written by Du Lac. Damn it! I let it slip my mind with all the excitement.

Buffy I'm guessing it wasn't a 'Taste of the Vatican' cookbook.

They start out of the mausoleum.

Giles No, the, uh, book was said to contain rituals and spells that reap unspeakable evil. However, it was written in archaic Latin so that nobody but the sect members could understand it.

Cut outside.

Buffy So, everything's cool then.

Giles It's not. First the book was taken from the library, and now the vampires have stolen something from Du Lac's tomb.

Buffy You think they figured out how to read the book?

Giles Something's coming, Buffy, and whatever it is, I can guarantee it's not good.

Cut to the Sunnydale bus depot. The camera pans from the depot building to a bus just arriving as the announcement is being made.

Announcement Bus 219, continuing service to Los Angeles, now arriving in Sunnydale at the west gate.

The doors of the bus open, and the passengers begin to file out. Cut to the bottom step of the bus. A pair of heavy steel-toed boots stops on the step. The camera pans up the man's body past his leather jacket and long hair to his face. A scar runs across his left eye, apparently blinded by an injury. He looks around and steps off of the bus.

Cut to the street in front of the Summers house. A salesman comes walking along the street carrying a large case and eyes the 'Summers' nameplate hanging from their mailbox. He looks up at the house, but continues past to the next house and walks up to the front door. He knocks, and a woman answers.

Norman Mrs. Kalish?

Mrs. Kalish Yes?

Norman Hello, I'm Norman Pfister with *holds up the case* Blush Beautiful Skin Care. I'm not selling anything, so I'm not asking you to buy, just to accept a few free samples.

Mrs. Kalish *takes off her glasses* Free?

Norman Absolutely.

Mrs. Kalish looks him up and down and nods him into her home. He walks in and she follows him, closing the door behind her. The camera closes in on the door, and Mrs. Kalish screams loudly.

Cut to the airport. Mrs. Kalish's scream blends into the noise of a 747 flying overhead as it comes in for a landing. Cut to a view of the tarmac. Several jets are parked at their gates. Cut inside the cargo bay of a jet. The cargo door opens, and a baggage handler comes up the loading ramp and steps in. He notices that the cargo nets have been torn open, and takes off his headphones.

Handler What the hell?

He looks closer and suspects someone's there.

Handler Hey, you're not supposed to be in here!

He pulls out his flashlight and holds it ready to use as a club.

Handler Hey, c'mon!

He walks in further, looking for whoever it is. He sees a shadow moving behind a baggage container. Suddenly a foot comes up and kicks him in the face, in the gut and again in the face. He falls onto his back unconscious. The person walks toward the cargo door and peeks out. It's a young Caribbean girl with long curly hair tied back and large hoop earrings. She makes her way out of the plane, keeping a careful watch for anyone who might see her.

Cut to the school. Cut to the library. Willow, Buffy and Xander are sitting at the table.

Willow So Giles is sure that the vampire who stole his

book is connected to the one you slayed last night? Or is it slew?

Giles *comes out of the stacks with a National Geographic magazine* Both are correct, and, yes, I'm sure. Du Lac was both a, a... a theologian and a mathematician. *comes down the stairs* This article describes an invention of his, which he called 'The Du Lac Cross'.

Xander So, why go to all the trouble of inventing something, and then giving it a weak name like that? I mean, I'da gone with 'The Cross-o- matic', or, uh, 'The Amazing Mr. Cross'.

The girls just stare at him. He looks up at Giles and nods. Giles doesn't think his musings are funny either.

Giles The cross was more than a mere symbol, *hands the open magazine to Willow* it was used to understand certain mystical texts, to, uh, decipher hidden meanings and so forth.

Willow So you're saying these vampires went to all this hassle for your basic decoder ring?

Giles *taken aback by the metaphor* Uh, actually, yes, I, I suppose I am.

Willow According to this, Du Lac destroyed every cross except the one buried with him.

Willow Why destroy your own work?

Giles *paces* Perhaps he feared what might happen if it fell into the wrong hands.

Xander A fear we'll soon get to experience for ourselves up close and personal.

Giles U-unless we can preempt their plans.

Willow How?

Giles Uh, by learning what's in the book before they do. Which means we can expect to be here later tonight. *sits*

Willow *smiles broadly* Goody! Research party!

Xander Will, you need a life in the worst way.

Willow *gets up* Speaking of, I really have to bail, but I promise I'll be back bright and early tomorrow and ready to slay.

Giles This is a matter of some urgency, Buffy.

Willow I realize that. Well, you have to admit, I kinda lack in the book area. I mean, you guys are the brains, I'd only be here for moral support anyway.

Xander That's untrue, Buffy, you totally contribute. You go for snacks!

Buffy looks to Willow for help.

Willow She **should** go. Y-y'know, gather her strength.

Giles Perhaps you're right. There may be fierce battles ahead.

Buffy makes tracks for the door.

Xander But Ho-Hos are a vital part of my cognitive process!

Willow *smiles back at him* Sorry, Xand. Someplace I have to be.

Giles and Xander give each other a look.

Cut to the ice skating rink. The place is empty except for Buffy skating gracefully by herself. She makes use of the whole rink, doing practiced turns and spins. A minute later Buffy skates quickly by the staging area, and the camera stops to focus on a stage panel begin pushed open. The one-eyed bounty hunter looks in at her.

Part 3

The ice-skating rink. Buffy skates along, still by herself. She does a crouching maneuver, but wipes out and slides backward against the sidewall. As she starts to get up the bounty hunter reaches down, puts his arm around her neck and lifts her off of the ice. He lays her down on the railing and begins to choke her. Buffy tries to pry his hands from her throat as she struggles to breathe. Angel comes running across the ice, sporting his game face.

Angel Buffy!

He leaps and tackles the bounty hunter, knocking him off of Buffy. She falls from the railing onto the ice with her knee. Angel lifts the bounty hunter to his feet and punches him in the face. The bounty hunter isn't fazed, and returns with a double-fisted punch to Angel's stomach, sending him back into the wall. Angel comes off the wall and jabs him in the face again, but the bounty hunter just shrugs it off. He punches Angel in the face and gut, making him stagger into the wall again. The bounty hunter grabs Angel by the throat and lifts him up. Buffy comes skating toward them at a fast pace. The

bounty hunter turns to face her. She grabs a net that's hanging there and uses it to swing up with her foot and hit him in the throat with the blade of her skate, crushing his trachea. He lets go of Angel and grabs his own neck, unable to breathe. He takes a few steps onto the ice and collapses there, dead.

Cut to Drusilla's bed. She takes the tarot card of the Cyclops and turns it over.

Drusilla He's passing under our feet right now.

Spike No worries. We're close to decoding the manuscript. We just need a bit more time.

Drusilla Time is ours. It brings the Slayer closer to them.

The camera pans from the face down card over to the other two, still turned face up.

Cut to the skating rink. Buffy rubs her knee. Angel crouches over the bounty hunter and lifts his hand to inspect his ring.

Willow The Hellmouth presents: Dead Guys On Ice. Not exactly the evening we were aiming for.

Angel looks closely at the ring.

Angel You're in danger. You know what the ring means?

Buffy I just killed a Super Bowl champ?

Angel *annoyed* I'm serious! You should go home and wait until you hear from me.

He drops the bounty hunter's hand and stands up. He still has his game face on. Buffy skates over to him.

Angel Are you okay?

She puts her gloved hand on his cheek and sees the cut above his eye.

Buffy What about you? That cut! *lowers her hand*

Angel Forget about me. This is bad, Buffy. We gotta get you outta here.

Buffy What, you mean hide?

Angel Let's just get you someplace safe!

Buffy No! Your eye!

She reaches back up to him and he shakes her off.

Buffy Hey! Don't be a baby. I'm not gonna hurt you.

Angel It's not that. I...

Buffy What?

Angel You shouldn't have to touch me when I'm like this.

She looks up into his vampire features.

Buffy Oh.

She removes her glove and reaches up to touch his brow and his wound, brushing gently across and down his cheek.

Buffy I didn't even notice.

She moves closer to kiss him. He responds, and they kiss gently. The kiss becomes more passionate as she reaches her hand behind his neck to draw him closer. Off to the side the girl from the airport walks up and stops, observing their kiss. Angel puts his arms around Buffy, and she rises up onto the tips of her skates to get even closer.

Cut to the library. Giles inspects the ring under a magnifying lamp. Buffy is sitting on the steps holding an icepack to her knee. Willow and Xander are at the table.

Buffy This guy was hard-core, Giles. And Angel was power-freaked by that ring.

Giles I'm afraid he was not overreacting. This ring is worn only by members of the Order of Taraka. It's a society of deadly assassins dating back to King Solomon. *sits*

Xander And didn't they beat the Elks this year in the Sunnydale adult bowling league championships?

Giles Their credo is to sow discord and kill the unwary.

Xander Bowling is a vicious game.

Giles *very annoyed* That's enough, Xander!

Xander looks down in shame. Buffy and Willow look concerned and upset.

Giles Sorry. It's just not the time for jokes. I need to think. *takes off his glasses*

Buffy These assassins, why are they after me?

Willow 'Cause you're the scourge of the underworld?

Buffy I haven't been that scourgey lately.

Giles *rubbing his eyes* I don't know, I don't know. *exhales* I think the best thing we can do is to find a secure location. Somewhere out of the way you can go until we decide on the best course of action.

Buffy *gets up* Okay, now you and Angel have both said to head for the hills. Are you saying I can't handle this, that I'm not strong enough to fight these people?

Giles They're a breed apart, Buffy. U-unlike vampires they have no earthly desires, *Willow listens in shock* but to collect their bounty. They find a target, and, uh... they eliminate it. *Buffy absorbs this solemnly* You can kill as many of them as you like, it won't make any difference. Where there's one, there will be another, and another. They won't stop coming until the job is done.

Cut to a view of Buffy's house through binoculars from Mrs. Kalish's house.

Giles Each one of them works alone.

Cut to Norman looking through his binoculars.

Giles His own way.

Cut to the floor. Mrs. Kalish is lying there dead. A trail of mealworms leads from her over to Norman sitting in a chair.

Giles Some are human, some... a-are not. Y-you won't know who they are until they strike.

Norman takes the binoculars from his eyes. There are mealworms crawling over his shoes. His hand and part of his forearm are missing, and the mealworms crawl all over it. They quickly form a hand, and it takes on the appearance of human skin. He reaches over to a cup of tea and lifts it to take a sip.

Cut to the halls at school. Buffy is wigged and tense as she walks down the hall. She holds her hands to the back of her neck and shoulders. She jumps when a boy barges through the doors in the hall in front of her. She walks through the doors and scans the students in the hall, paranoid about them looking at her. The police recruiter looks at her, and she stares back. A teacher comes down the stairs in front of her and looks at her as he runs a comb through his hair. Several students walk past her, giving her the occasional glance. Behind her Oz comes walking at a quick pace. She hears a locker slam behind her and spins toward the noise, notices Oz quickly bearing down on her, takes him by the neck and shoves him into the wall.

Buffy Try it!

Oz *confused* Try what?

She realizes she's made a mistakes and lets go of his neck.

Buffy Uh... *exhales* I-I'm sorry.

Oz Still not clear what I'm supposed to try.

Buffy Nothing. God, I'm... sorry, I...

She steps away from him, looks both ways down the hall and quickly heads off in the direction she was going. Oz moves away from the wall and shudders.

Oz That is a tense person.

Cut to Buffy's street at night. Buffy walks home alone, arms crossed and scanning the area around her. When she reaches her house she stops and just stares at it. She thinks better of going inside, looks around again and continues on.

Cut to the library. Giles walks out of his office cleaning his glasses. Willow is sitting at the counter going through a volume.

Willow I wish there was more we could do.

Giles We're doing all that we can. *puts on his glasses* The only course of action is to try and find out what was in that stolen book. *reads a card from the catalog*

Willow I've never seen Buffy like that. She just took off.

Xander *coming in* Well, she didn't go home. I let the phone ring a few hundred times before I remembered her mom is out of town.

Giles Well, maybe Buffy unplugged the phone.

Xander No, it's a statistical impossibility for a sixteen-year-old girl to unplug her phone.

Willow nods in agreement.

Giles Well, perhaps my words of caution were... a little too alarming.

Xander *with heavy sarcasm* Ya think?

Willow It's good that she took you seriously, Giles. I just wish we knew where she was.

Cut to the hall outside Angel's apartment. Buffy comes down the stairs and walks over to his door. There's no answer when she knocks.

Buffy Angel?

She tries the doorknob, but it's locked. Cut inside. She twists the knob hard, breaking it and opening the door. She slowly comes in, has a look around and closes the door. She turns on the lights. The apartment is sparsely furnished. A modern desk strewn with papers is against the far wall with a dozen old pictures hanging on the wall around it. The floor is bare concrete, and her heels click quietly as she slowly walks over to an ivory statue enclosed in a glass display case. She looks at it a moment before going on. She looks around as she continues, and passes an elegant antique armoire. Finally she finds his unmade bed, and slowly goes over to it and sits down. She takes a deep breath and lets it out slowly, weary from the day's events. A moment later she lays herself down on

the bed, resting her head on his pillow and curling up. She hugs her arms close to her heart and falls asleep.

Cut to a sleazy bar. Willy is sweeping up the place after hours. Angel appears in the shadow of the doorway.

Willy We're closed! Can't you read the sign?

Angel steps into the light.

Willy Oh, uh... hey, Angel. I didn't recognize you in the dark there. What, uh... what can I do for you tonight?

Angel I need some information.

Willy Yeah? Man, that's too bad, 'cause... I'm stayin' away from that whole scene. I'm livin' right, Angel.

Angel slowly walks past the booths over to the pinball machine.

Angel Sure you are, Willy. And I'm taking up sun-bathing.

Willy C'mon, man. Don't be that way! I-I treat you vamps good! I-I-I-I don't hassle you, you don't hassle me... We all enjoy the patronage of this establishment. Everybody's happy, right?

Angel Who sent them?

Willy Who sent who?

Angel *stops at the pinball machine* The Order of Taraka.

Willy I-I... I tell ya, I haven't been in the loop.

Angel Let's try again. The Order of Taraka, they're after the Slayer. *crosses over to the bar*

Willy C'mon, man.

Angel Was it Spike? *steps toward Willy*

Willy Look, Angel, I-I got some good pigs' blood in, good stuff, my fence said...

Angel grabs Willy and smacks his head into the bar. Willy knocks a half-empty pitcher of beer onto the floor. Angel presses down hard on Willy's head with his hand.

Willy Damn it! Ah...

Angel You know, I'm a little rusty when it comes to killing humans. It could take a while.

Willy Oh, Spike will draw and quarter me, man!

Angel I'll take care of Spike.

Willy You know he ordered those guys! Spike's sick of your girl getting in his way!

Angel Where can I find him?

Willy I tell you that, I'm gonna need relocating expenses! It'll cost you!

Angel *presses harder* It'll cost who?

Willy Okay! Okay! He and that freaky chick of his are...

He is interrupted by someone kicking Angel in the face. Angel falls back onto the floor dazed and looks up at his attacker. It's the girl from the airport. She grabs Willy's broom, breaks the end of the handle off and attacks Angel with the makeshift stake.

Part 4

Willy's bar. Angel rolls out of the way of the girl's thrust. Willy takes the opportunity to flee the bar. Angel is up again, and he ducks a swing from her. She tries a direct thrust, which Angel just pushes aside, but she follows it up with a punch to the face from her other hand and uses her momentum to spin around for a roundhouse kick, knocking him through the door into the back room. He crashes into several cases of beer. When he gets back up he's vamped out. The girl charges him with the stake held above her head in both hands. He blocks her charge with his arms and twists her arms down, forcing her to drop the stake, and shoves her into a bank of lockers. He tries to knock her legs out from under her, but her footing is firm and she kicks him in the back, knocking him down instead. Once down he tries kicking again, and this time makes her fall. She grabs his shirt, pulls him up a bit and kicks him in the face. They both scramble to their feet. Angel swings and misses. He swings the other way, but she blocks it and punches him three times in the gut and then a right hook to his jaw. She shoves him into the door of the cage. He bounces off of it and she kicks him in the chest, making him stumble backward through the cage door and into a bunch of empty water bottles. Several cans fall onto him from a shelf above. She looks at him with cold eyes as he recovers from his fall.

Angel Who are you? If you tell me what I need to know I won't hurt you.

She laughs as she steps back.

Angel You think this is funny?

She swings closed the cage door and sets the bolt. Angel scrambles to his feet and slams up against the door.

Kendra I tink it is funny now. Dat girl. De one I saw you wit before?

Angel You stay away from her.

Kendra I'm afraid you are not in a position to treaten.

Angel When I get outta here I'll do more than threaten!

Kendra Den I suggest ya move quickly. *looks up at the windows* Eastern exposure. De sun will be comin' in a few hours. *padlocks the cage* More dan enough time for me to find your girlfriend.

Angel screams in anger and slams the cage with his hand.

Cut to the library after sunrise. Giles is at his desk studying a book while holding the phone, waiting for Xander to answer.

Giles Xander? *pauses* No, no, I-I haven't heard from Buffy yet. Look, look, I-I-I think you should go to her house and check on her. *pauses* Well, ri-right a, right away. *pauses* I-I-I don't know, get Cordelia to drive you. *He hangs up without waiting for a response. He picks up the book he's reading and heads back into the main*

room with it. There he sees Willow asleep in front of the PC with her head resting on the keyboard. He closes his book, crouches slightly and gently places his hand on her shoulder to wake her.

Giles quietly Willow?

Willow wakes with a start and sits bolt upright.

Willow Don't warn the tadpoles!

Giles Are you alright?

Willow Giles, what are you doing here?

Giles It's the library, Willow. You fell asleep.

Willow *looks around* Oh! I...

Giles Don't warn the tadpoles?

Willow groggy I... I have frog fear.

Giles Oh.

Willow I'm sorry. I conked out.

Giles What? Please. You've gone quite beyond the call of duty. *sits* But, but, I-I... uh, fortunately, I think I may have found something finally.

Willow You did?

Giles I-I found a-a description of the missing Du Lac manuscript. It's a ritual, Willow. Now, I-I, uh... *gets up to pace* I haven't managed to decipher the exact details, but I-I... I believe the purpose is to restore a weak and sick vampire back to full health.

Willow A vampire like Drusilla?

Giles Exactly.

Cut to Drusilla's room. Dalton slams the Du Lac manuscript shut and hands Spike his handwritten pages of translation. Spike looks at it, reads a bit and smiles.

Spike By George, I think he's got it! *walks to Drusilla in bed* The key to your cure, ducks. The missing bloody link, it was...

Drusilla weakly ...Right, right in front of us... the whole time.

She takes Spike's hand and pulls it down to her deck of tarot cards. The top card is a picture of an angel.

Cut to the street in front of Buffy's house. Xander and Cordelia walk up to her house.

Cordelia I can't even believe you. You dragged me out of bed for a ride? What am I, mass transportation?

Xander That's what a lot of the guys say, but it's just locker room talk. I wouldn't pay it any mind.

Cordelia Oh, great, so now I'm your taxi **and** your punching bag.

Xander I like to think of you more as my witless foil, but have it your way.

He takes the steps up to the porch and knocks on the door. He looks in through the glass.

Xander Buffy!

When he doesn't see anyone stirring inside he walks over to the window.

Xander C'mon, Cordelia. You wanna be a member of the Scooby Gang you gotta be willing to be inconvenienced every now and then. *tries a window*

Cordelia Oh, right, 'cause I lie awake at night hoping you tweakos will be my best friends.

Xander tries another window.

Cordelia And that my first husband will be a balding, demented homeless man.

Xander *gets the window open* Buffy could be in trouble. *steps through the window*

Cordelia And what if she is exactly? What are you gonna do about it? In case you haven't noticed, *he opens the door for her* you're the lameness and she's the super chick, or whatever.

Xander Well, at least I'm the lameness who cares, which is more than I can say about you. *into the house* Buffy! I'm gonna check upstairs.

Cordelia comes in and closes the door behind her. Xander climbs the stairs.

Xander Buffy?

Cordelia spins her keys around as she walks into the living room and looks around. She hears a knocking at the door and goes to answer it. When she opens it Norman is standing there.

Norman Good day. I'm Norman Pfister with Blush Beautiful *holds up his case* Skin Care and Cosmetics. I was wondering if I might interest you in some free samples?

Cordelia *smiles* Free?

She steps aside to admit him and closes the door.

Cut to the back room at the bar. Sunlight is streaming through the window and is starting to shine into the cage. Angel slams against the door, trying to break it open, but can't get it to budge. He tries prying at the top, but no luck. He pushes against the door again.

Cut to Angel's apartment. Buffy is sleeping on his bed. She stirs and wakes. She hears a noise, opens her eyes to look up and immediately rolls to the far side of the bed as a hatchet strikes the pillow where her head was. It's Kendra, and she swings again and hits the mattress

when Buffy sidesteps the blow. Buffy does a flip over Kendra's back and onto the floor behind her, ready to fight.

Buffy You must be number two!

Kendra swings with the hatchet. Buffy ducks the swing and grabs the bed curtain. She pulls it down and over Kendra's head and knocks her to the floor with a kick to the head. Kendra quickly scrambles out from under the curtain and holds the hatchet up and ready.

Buffy Thanks for the wakeup, but I'll stick with my clock radio.

Kendra swings the hatchet, and Buffy catches it. Kendra pulls her around and slams her into the wall, pushing the hatchet into her chest. Buffy pushes the hatchet up and away from her. Kendra pulls down on it, flipping Buffy over onto her back. She bears down on her.

Buffy Come on, don't make me do the chick fight thing.

Kendra Chick fight?

Buffy You know.

She lets go of the hatchet with one hand and digs her nails into Kendra's hand. She grits her teeth and grunts in pain. Buffy grabs Kendra's arm and rolls her over and away. They both scramble to their feet. Buffy kicks the hatchet out of Kendra's hand. Kendra tries two kicks, which Buffy easily blocks. Buffy ducks a swing to her head and swings back, but Kendra grabs her arm in mid-swing and flips her over onto the coffee table, smashing it. Buffy lets out a pained breath. Kendra reaches down for her. Buffy kicks up with both legs into Kendra's face and makes her fall backward to the floor. They both scramble to their feet again. Buffy does a roundhouse kick to Kendra's face. She falls again, but hops right back to her feet. They face each other, ready to continue the fight.

Kendra Who are you?

Buffy Who am I? You attacked me! Who, the hell, are you?!

Kendra I am Kendra! De Vampire Slayer!

Buffy looks at her in utter disbelief.

What's My Line, Part 2

Written by Marti Noxon

Directed by David Semel

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "What's My Line", part 2. It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.04

This episode was originally broadcast on November 24, 1997.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Angel's apartment. Buffy and Kendra are faced off, ready to continue their fight.

Buffy *out of breath* Okay, one more time. You're the who?!

Kendra I'm de Slayer.

Buffy Nice cover story. But here's a tip: you might wanna try it on someone who's not the real Slayer.

Kendra Ya can't stop me! Even if ya kill me, anodder Slayer will be sent to take me place.

Buffy Could you stop with the Slayer thing? I'm the damn Slayer!

Kendra Nonsense! Dere is but one, and I am she.

Buffy Okay, *sniffs* a scenario. *holds up her hand* You back off, I'll back off, but you promise not to go all wiggy

until we can go to my Watcher and figure this out.

Kendra Wiggy?

Buffy You know. No kick-o, no fight-o?

Kendra considers the offer a moment, then relaxes her stance and crosses her arms.

Kendra I accept your scenario.

Buffy So. You were sent here?

Kendra Yes, by my Watcher.

Buffy To do what, exactly?

Kendra To do my duty. I am here to kill vampires.

Cut to the back room at Willy's bar. The camera pans from the window over to the cage. The sunlight has advanced past the cage door and is only about three feet from the far wall. Angel is crouched in the far corner, cowering and afraid. He looks up at the light coming through the window.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part 1

The library. Kendra stands at attention as Giles paces. Buffy just leans on a chair with her left hand and has her right hand on her hip.

Giles And your Watcher is, i-is Sam Zabuto, you say?

Kendra Yes, sir.

Giles We've never met, but he, he's, he's very well-respected.

Buffy What, so he's a real guy? As in non-fictional?

Giles And you are called...?

Kendra I am de Vampire Slayer.

Buffy We got that part, hon. He means your name.

Kendra Oh. Dey call me Kendra. I have no last name, sir.

Buffy *haughty* Can you say 'stuck in the 80's'?

Giles Buffy, please. Uh, there's obviously some, some misunderstanding here.

Willow comes bouncing into the library with a smile on her face. Kendra marches around Buffy to intercept her.

Willow *greets them* Hey!

Kendra Identify yourself!

Willow is taken aback and her smile fades to a frown.

Buffy Back off, pink ranger! This is my friend.

Kendra Friend?

Buffy Yeah. As in person you hang with? Amigo?

Kendra I don't understand.

Buffy *to Giles, exasperated* You try. I'm tapped. *sits*

Giles Uh-uh, Kendra, uh, there are a-a-a few people, uh, ci-civilians if you like, who, who know Buffy's identity. Willow is one of them, a-a- and they also, um, spend time together, uh, socially.

Kendra And you allow dis, sir?

Giles Well, uh...

Kendra But de Slayer must work in secret for security.

Giles Of course, uh, but, uh, with Buffy, however, it-it's, um, some flexibility is required.

Buffy gives Giles a look.

Kendra Why?

Willow *confused* Hi, guys. W-what's goin' on? *goes to sit across from Buffy*

Buffy Apparently there's been a really big mix-up.

Giles Uh, it seems somehow that, uh, another Slayer has been sent to Sunnydale.

Willow Is that even possible? I mean, two Slayers at the same time?

Giles Not to my knowledge. Um, th-the new Slayer is only called after the previous Slayer has died. Uh... *realizes* Oh, good Lord! You were dead, Buffy.

Buffy I was only gone for a minute.

Giles Clearly it doesn't matter how long you were gone. You were physically dead! Thus causing the activation of the, the next Slayer. *nods toward Kendra*

Kendra She died?

Buffy Just a little.

Giles She drowned, but she was revived.

Willow So there really are two of them!

Giles It would seem so. This is completely unprecedented! I'm quite flummoxed. *sits*

Buffy What's the flum? It's a mistake, she isn't supposed to be here, she goes home! *to Kendra* Look, no offense, I really don't mean this personally, but I'm not dead, and frankly having you around creeps me out just a little bit.

Kendra I cannot just leave. I was sent here for a reason. Mr. Zabuto said all de signs indicate dat a very dark power is about to rise in Sunnydale.

Buffy *gets up* And what's your great plan for finding this dark power? You just gonna attack people randomly till you find a bad one?

Kendra Of course not.

Buffy Then why the hell did you attack me?

Kendra I tought you were a vampire.

Buffy Oh, a swing and a miss for the rookie. *walks around Kendra to Willow*

Kendra I had good reason to tink you were. Did I not see you kissing a vampire?

Willow *stands up in her defense* Buffy would never do that! *realizes* Oh. *to Buffy* Except for that sometimes you do that. *to Kendra* But only with Angel. *to Buffy* Right? *sits again*

Buffy Yes! Right. *to Kendra* Look, you saw me with Angel, and he is a vampire, but he's good.

Kendra Angel? You mean Angelus? I've read about him. He is a monster.

Giles No, no, no, he's, he's good now.

Willow *smiles* Really!

Buffy He had a gypsy curse.

Kendra He has a what?

Buffy Y'know what, just trust me on this one, okay? He's on the home team now.

Kendra I cannot believe you. He looked to me just like anodder animal when I...

Buffy When you what? *confronts her* What did you do to him?

Kendra I...

Buffy What did you do?!

Cut to the back room of Willy's bar. Angel leans against the back wall, weakened by the ambient light. Willy comes in and looks at him. He opens the cage door and walks in. He uses his body to shade Angel from the direct sunlight and drags him out of the cage and into another storage room. There he opens a hatch in the floor to the sewers below and drops Angel down into the shallow water. Angel is too weak to get up on his own. Willy lowers himself through the hatch and drops to the water, too. He's unhappy about the fact that his shoes have just been ruined. Spike walks into the light from the shadows.

Willy There you go, friend. He'll be as good as new in a day or so.

Two of Spike's thugs arrive to drag Angel away. Willy holds up his hands to stop them.

Willy Uh, hey, wai-wait. We had a deal, right?

Spike *pulls out a wad of cash* What's the matter, Willy? Don't you trust me? *starts handing him bills*

Willy Oh, yeah. Like a brother.

Spike slaps him across the cheek.

Spike Talk and I'll have your guts for garters.

Willy Wild horses couldn't drag it.

Spike holds up the last bill, crumbles it and drops it into the water.

Spike Oops! Sorry, friend.

Willy bends over to pick up the bill as the two thugs grab Angel and drag him off.

Willy What are you gonna do with him anyway?

Spike I'm thinkin' maybe dinner and a movie. I don't want to rush into anything. I've been hurt, you know.

He follows his goons down the sewer. Willy counts his money again.

Cut to Buffy's house. Cut to the foyer. Norman's case is open and Cordelia is going through the samples.

Cordelia Do you have anything in raisin? I know you wouldn't think so, but I'm both a winter and a summer.

Norman Nine ninety-nine, tax included.

Cordelia You said that already. Do you have anything in the berry family?

Norman Are there more ladies in the house?

Cordelia Oh, no, they're not home. *faces him* You know, nothing personal, but maybe you should look into selling dictionaries, or... some...

She sees a mealworm crawl out of his sleeve and onto his hand. Xander comes back down the stairs and sees Norman. Cordelia slowly backs away from him.

Xander Hey, what's up?

Cordelia Um, he's a salesman, and he was just leaving, right? Uh, okay! Buh-bye! Thank you!

Xander *reaches up to guide him out* Okay, Mary Kay, time to...

Another mealworm crawls across Norman's cheek and into his right ear. Xander backs away.

Xander Time to run!

He breaks into a run, guiding Cordelia away with him as Norman transforms into a mass of mealworms. They quickly crawl across the floor. Xander and Cordelia run into the kitchen for the back door, but Norman is already there, reassembled and waiting for them. Cordelia screams, and Xander grabs her hand and pulls her back into the hall. They open the door to the basement and hurry in, closing the door behind them. The mealworms try to come under the door, but they stomp on them.

Xander Find something to cover the crack under the door!

He grabs a broom and sweeps the mealworms back under the door with it.

Cordelia Uhh... *finds a roll of duct tape* Here! I don't do worms.

He gives her an exasperated look, grabs the roll from her and shoves the broom into her hands.

Xander Cover me!

She sweeps at the mealworms while he pulls a length of tape off of the roll and sticks it to the bottom of the door.

Cordelia Eww! Eh! Eh!

Cut to the back room of Willy's bar. Buffy barges through the door.

Buffy Angel?!

Kendra walks into the cage where she left him and looks around.

Kendra No ashes.

Buffy What?

Kendra When a vampire combusts, he leaves ashes.

Buffy Yeah, I know the drill.

Kendra So I did not kill him.

Buffy And I don't need to kill **you**.

Willy shows up at the door.

Willy Whoa! There's a lotta tension in this room.

Kendra attacks him and pushes him out of the back room and onto the floor.

Buffy Doesn't anyone just say 'hello' where you come from?

Kendra turns Willy over on the floor and grabs him by the shirt, ready to punch.

Kendra Dis one is dirty! I can **feel** it!

Buffy That's really good for you, Percepto Girl, *lifts him up* but we're not gonna get anything out of him if he's, oh, say, *slams him into the bar* unconscious. *to Willy* Where's Angel?

Willy My buddy Angel? You think I'd let him fry? I saved him in the nick! He was about five minutes away from being a crispy critter.

Buffy Where'd he go?

Willy Uh, he said he was gonna stay underground. You know, recuperate.

Buffy Are you telling me the truth?

Willy I swear on my mother's grave! Should something fatal happen to her, God forbid.

Kendra Den he is alright. We can return to your Watcher for our orders.

Buffy *lets go of Willy* I don't take orders. I do things my way.

Kendra No wonder you died.

Buffy *ignores the comment* Let's go.

They start to leave. Willy steps away from the bar.

Willy I, I have to ask. *the girls looks back* Has either of you girls considered modeling? I have a friend with a camera? Strictly high-class nude work. You know, art photographs. But naked.

Buffy and Kendra exchange a look and just walk out without a word.

Willy You don't have to answer right away.

Cut to Drusilla's bed. She's asleep. Spike bends over her and strokes her hair. She wakes.

Drusilla *moans* I was dreaming.

Spike Of what, pet?

Drusilla We were in Paris. You had a branding iron.

Spike I brought you something.

He goes over to the stairs and picks Angel up from the landing.

Drusilla And there were worms in my baguette.

Spike *drags Angel in* Your sire, my sweet. *dumps him on the floor*

Drusilla My Angel?

Spike *comes back to the bed* The one and only. Now all we need's the full moon tonight, and he will die, and you will be fully restored. *takes her hand, whispers* My black goddess. *kisses her hand* My ripe, *works his way up her arm* wicked plum. *raises his head* It's been...

Drusilla Forever.

They kiss passionately. Angel watches from the floor, all tied up and gagged. He strains against his bonds. They

break off their kiss.

Drusilla Spike, let me have him. Hmm? Until the moon.

Spike *smiles* Alright, you can play, but don't kill him. He mustn't die till the ritual.

Drusilla Bring him to me.

Spike picks Angel up from the floor and forces him over to Drusilla. She grabs him by the chin and looks him in the eye.

Drusilla You've been a very bad daddy.

She slaps him across the face. Angel is powerless to do anything.

Part 2

Sunnydale High. Giles, Kendra, Willow and Buffy come down the outside stairs and head into the halls.

Giles Kendra, I-I've, uh, conferred with your Watcher, Mr. Zabuto, and, uh, we both agree that, uh, until this matter with Spike and Drusilla has been resolved that you two should work together.

Buffy Oh, that'll be a treat.

Kendra So, you believe dat Spike is attempting to revive dis Drusilla to health?

Giles Yes, well, I-I-I-I think that's the, uh, the dark power that your, your Watcher re-referred to. You see, uh, you see Drusilla's not only evil, she's, uh, well, she's also quite mad, and-and-and-and if she's restored to her full health, then, uh, well, there's no, absolutely no telling what she might do.

Kendra Den we will stop Spike.

Buffy Ooo, good plan, let's go, charge!

Giles Buffy...

Buffy It's a little more complicated than that, John Wayne.

Giles Yes, I'm, I'm afraid it is. You see, Spike has also called out the Order of Taraka to keep Buffy out of the way.

Kendra De assassins? I read of dem in de writings of Dramius.

Giles Oh, really? W-w-which volume?

They exit the hall and walk along the colonnade.

Kendra I believe it was six, sir.

Buffy Um, how do you know all this?

Kendra From me studies.

Buffy So, obviously you have a lot of free time.

Kendra I study because it is required. *Giles smiles* The Slayer handbook insists on it.

Willow There's a Slayer handbook?

Buffy Wait. Handbook? What handbook? How come I don't have a handbook?

Willow Is there a T-shirt, too? *gets a look from Buffy* 'Cause that would be cool... *rolls her eyes*

Giles After meeting you, Buffy, I realized that, uh, the handbook would be of no use in your case.

Buffy Well, what do you mean it would be of no use in my case? Wha- what's wrong with my case?

Giles Uh, Kendra, um, perhaps you'd like to show me the, the part in, uh, Dramius Six where, uh, uh, where it refers to the Order of Taraka. Really, I-I, I seem to have never been able to get through that book. It was a bit stodgy.

Kendra *smiles* It was difficult. All dose footnotes.

Giles and Kendra laugh out loud.

Buffy to Willow Hello, and welcome to planet pocket protector.

Giles Oh, well, B-Buffy, Principal Snyder was snooping round after you.

Buffy stops Eee. Career fair.

Giles Best make an appearance, I think.

Buffy Right.

Kendra Buffy's a student here?

Giles Yes.

Kendra Riight, of course. And I imagine she's a cheerleader as well.

Giles Oh, no, well, a-a-actually she had to give up her cheerleading. *gets a look from Kendra* Uh, it was quite an amusing story, actually. Uh, uh, let's go and find the book, shall we?

The two of them head off to the library. Buffy and Willow continue their walk.

Buffy Get a load of the she-Giles.

Willow Creepy.

Buffy Ew. I'll bet Giles wishes I was more of a book geek.

Willow Giles is enough of a book geek for the both of you.

Buffy Yeah, but did you see how they were vibing? *mocks them* Volume six, ha, ha, ha!

Willow Buffy, no one could replace you. You'll always be Giles' favorite.

Buffy I wonder.

Willow Of course, you will. You're **his** Slayer. The **real** Slayer.

Buffy No. I wonder if it would be so bad, being replaced.

Willow You mean, like, letting Kendra take over?

Buffy Maybe. I mean, maybe after this thing with Spike and the assassins is over, I could say, 'Kendra, you slay, I'm going to Disneyland.'

Willow But not forever, right?

Buffy No, Disneyland would get boring after a few months. But I could do other stuff. Career day stuff. Maybe I could even have a normal life.

Cut to Buffy's basement. Cordelia is pacing.

Xander Could you sit down, or change your pattern or something? You're making me queasy.

Cordelia *leans on the washer* Because you're just sitting there. You should be thinking up a **plan**.

Xander I have a plan. We wait. Buffy saves us.

Cordelia How will she even know where to find us?

Xander Cordelia, this is Buffy's house. Odds are she'll find us.

Cordelia Well, what if she doesn't? What am I supposed to do? Just waste away down here with you? Haw, haw, no thank you! *makes tracks for the stairs*

Xander *gets up to stop her* What are you doin'?

Cordelia *stops and faces him* Going to see if he's gone!

Xander That's brilliant! What if he isn't?

Cordelia Oh, right! You think we should just slack here and hope that somebody else **decides** to be a hero? *goes back to the washer* Sorry, forgot I was stranded with a LOSER! *leans and crosses her arms*

Xander And yet I never forgot that I'm stuck with the numb-brain that let Mr. Mutant in the house in the FIRST PLACE!

Cordelia HE LOOKED NORMAL!

Xander What, is he supposed to have an arrow with the word 'assassin' over his head?! All it took was the prospect of a free makeover, and you licked his hand like a big, dumb dog!

Cordelia You know what? *heads for the stairs again* I'm going.

Xander just raises his eyebrows, ready to let her go. She stops at the foot of the stairs and faces him again.

Cordelia I'd rather be worm food than look at **your** pathetic face!

Xander Then go! I'm not stopping ya!

Cordelia I bet you wouldn't! I bet you'd let a girl go off to her doom all by herself!

Xander Not just any girl. *nods* You're special.

Cordelia I can't believe that I'm stuck spending what will probably be my last few moments on Earth here WITH YOU!

Xander I **hope** these are my last few moments! Three more seconds with you, and I'm gonna... *steps closer*

Cordelia *steps closer* I'm gonna what? Coward!

Xander Moron!

Cordelia I hate you!

Xander I HATE YOU!

They look at each other for another second before grabbing each other and engaging in a mad, passionate kiss. It goes on for several seconds before they suddenly release each other and look at each other in surprise.

Xander We **so** need to get outta here.

Cordelia *nods* Mm-hm!

She rushes up the stairs with Xander right behind. They stop at the top, crouch down and give each other anxious looks. Xander grabs one end of the tape and pulls it off. There aren't any worms on the other side. Xander moves the broom aside and opens the door slowly.

They both look out into the hall for any sign of the mealworms.

Cordelia He's gone.

Xander steps out and peeks around the corner down the hall to the dining room. The coast looks clear, so Xander makes a dash for the front door. Cordelia follows a moment later, and when she comes through the dining room door mealworms begin falling onto her from the ceiling. She screams as they fall on her en masse and runs for the door. Cut outside. Xander throws the door open and dashes into the front yard. Cordelia follows him out, screaming.

Cordelia Xander, oh my God! Get them off of me!

Xander turns to look.

Cordelia Get 'em off!

He runs for the hose.

Cordelia *terrified* Get 'em off of me! Oh, my God, get 'em off me! *screams*

Xander grabs the hose and starts spraying the mealworms off of her. She keeps screaming and turns her back to him, then her front again. He keeps spraying as she tries to brush them off. She turns around again to let him spray her back again and reaches down the back of her dress to get some mealworms out. She turns back around.

Cordelia Okay, okay, let's get outta here! Xander, let's go!

He keeps spraying her in spite of her protests.

Cordelia Okay! Let's go!

She runs for her car. Xander follows her with the hose for another instant, then drops it and follows her. Cut to a close-up of her license plate, "QUEEN C". She floors it, and they burn rubber into the street. Further down the block she screeches round the corner.

Cut to the halls at the school. Buffy and Willow stroll along past the career fair displays.

Buffy My tests say that I should look into law enforcement – duh! – and environmental design.

Willow Environmental design. That's landscaping, right?

Buffy I checked the 'shrub' box. But landscaping was yesterday, so law enforcement it is.

They stop near the steps to the couches in the lounge. Buffy looks around and notices Oz looking over at Willow.

Buffy to Willow Hey, Will, don't look, okay, but... *Willow looks* No, don't look! *smiles* That guy over there is totally checking you out.

Willow *looks with her eyes* Oh, that's Oz. He's expressing computer nerd solidarity.

Oz gets up and starts to walk over.

Buffy Really? Then why is he on his way over here right now?

Willow is surprised when she sees him coming.

Buffy Told you! *makes a discreet exit*

Oz Hey.

Willow *smiles* Hey! *notices* Your hair! Is brown!

Oz Oh, yeah, sometimes. So, uh, did you decide? Are you gonna be a Corporate Computer Suit Guy?

Willow Oh. Uh, well, I-I think I'm gonna finish high school first. What about you?

Oz I'm not really a computer person, you know. Or a work of any kind person.

Willow They why'd they select you?

Oz Oh, I sorta test well. Y'know, which is cool. E-except that it leads to jobs.

Willow Well, don't you have some ambition?

Oz Oh, yeah! Yeah. E-flat, diminished ninth.

Willow Huh?

Oz Well, the E-flat, it's, it's doable, but that diminished ninth, y'know, it's a man's chord. Now, you could lose a finger.

Willow nods, pretending to understand.

Cut to Buffy. She signs up at the law enforcement table and joins the group. Patrice, the recruitment officer, picks up the clipboard and looks it over.

Patrice Alright, listen up, and answer when I call your name. Buffy Summers.

Buffy raises her hand. Patrice calmly puts the clipboard back down. Quickly she draws her gun and aims it at Buffy. Buffy reacts in a flash and pushes the recruiter's hands and weapon up into the air as the first round goes off. Panic sets in throughout the hall, and people start to run and duck for cover. Buffy keeps struggling with the officer, and another round goes into the ceiling. She knees her in the gut, and she drops the gun and falls to the floor. Buffy starts to run as Patrice gets to her knees and pulls out her backup gun. Another bullet flies at Buffy as she dives over a table. She stands up again and looks around at everyone.

Buffy GET DOWN!

She starts to run again, right past Oz and Willow. Patrice follows Buffy with her aim.

Oz LOOK OUT!

He lunges for Willow and pulls her to the floor with him, but takes the next bullet meant for Buffy in the arm. Patrice keeps following Buffy with her gun and shoots off the cranium of a skeleton. Buffy has disappeared down the hall, and the police recruiter carefully makes her way to the wall to peek around it down the hall. She doesn't see her, but senses that she's there, and decides to go to the other end of the wall to come around the other side. The camera pans to the other side where

Buffy is leaning against the wall, breathing hard and waiting for Patrice to make her next move. When she is about to come around the other corner, Buffy leaps over a table and tackles her to the floor. She drops her backup gun and it slides away. Buffy gets to her feet and adopts a fighting stance. Patrice gets back to her knees, pulls out her small ankle backup and aims it at Buffy as she stands back up. Before she can get off a round Kendra kicks the gun out of her hands. She follows it up with a kick to Patrice's face, making her fall flat on her back. She makes her stand next to Buffy. Patrice grabs Jonathan as a hostage, pulls out a short blade and threatens him with it. The two girls watch her slowly back toward the door at the end of the hall with the boy in tow. Halfway there she drops Jonathan and makes a dash for the door. Kendra doesn't hesitate to give chase. Buffy rushes over to Oz and Willow and kneels down next to them. Oz is holding his arm.

Buffy How is he?

Willow He's shot! *to Oz* Are you okay?

Oz I, uh, I'm shot! *takes his hand away briefly and chuckles* Y'know. *laughs* Wow! It's odd! And painful.

Buffy gets up again when Kendra shows back up.

Kendra She's gone.

Jonathan W-was that a demonstration?

Buffy looks around at the scene.

Cut to the library. Giles has the first-aid kit out, and Willow is wrapping Buffy's knee.

Buffy She was definitely one of the Taraka gang, Giles, and way gun happy.

Giles This, um, Oz chap, he, he, he's alright?

Willow The paramedic said it was only a scrape. Thank goodness.

Cordelia and Xander walk into the library. Kendra tries to head them off.

Buffy Down, girl!

Xander Who sponsored career day today? The British Soccer Fan Association?

Giles *on his way to the table* We had a, a rather violent visit from the Order of Taraka.

Xander You wanna talk Order of Taraka? We just met the king **freak** of the... *sees Kendra* Hello.

Kendra looks at the floor, humbling herself before Xander.

Giles Oh, forgive me. Uh, Xander, Cordelia, this is Kendra. Uh, i-it's rather complicated, but she's also a Slayer.

Cordelia *heads for the table* Hi. Nice to meet you.

Xander A Slayer, huh? *to Buffy* I knew this 'I'm the only one, I'm the only one' thing was just an attention-getter.

Buffy *hops off of the counter* Just say hello, Xander. *makes for the table with Willow*

Xander Welcome. So! You're a Slayer, huh? I like that in a woman.

Kendra *nervous* Uh... I hope... I tank you... I mean, sir, um... I will be of service.

Xander *looks at the others* Great! *to Kendra* Good. It's good to be a giver. *goes to the table*

Giles Xander, um, this, this, uh, assassin you encountered, what, uh, what did he look like?

Cordelia finds a mealworm in her hair and freaks out. She drops it onto a book on the table and gets up.

Cordelia Uhh! Uhh! Ohmigod, I'm showering! *runs from the library*

Xander *indicates the mealworm* Like that.

Buffy You and bug people, Xander. What's up with that?

Xander No, but this dude was completely different than praying mantis lady. He was a man **of** bugs, not a man who **was** a bug.

He slams the biology book shut on the mealworm to kill it and sits down.

Giles The, uh, the-the-the important thing is everybody's alright. Still, it's quite apparent that we're under serious attack.

Buffy These Taraka are definitely serious. *looks at Kendra* Fortunately for me, so is Kendra.

Giles And, uh, I fear the worst is still to come. I've, I-I've discovered the remaining keys to Drusilla's cure. The, uh, the ritual requires that, the presence of her sire, and it must take place in a church on the night of the new moon.

Buffy suddenly looks very concerned.

Kendra The new moon. But that is tonight.

Giles Exactly. And I-I'm sure the assassins were here to kill Buffy before she could put a stop to things.

Buffy They need Drusilla's sire. You mean the vamp that made her?

Giles Yes.

Willow Buffy, what is it?

Buffy *looks down* Angel. He's Drusilla's sire.

Xander Man, that guy got major neck in his day!

Willow slaps him hard on the shoulder.

Buffy Will this ritual kill him?

Giles Yes, I'm afraid it will.

Buffy We need to find this church. We need to find where this ritual is gonna take place!

Giles Agreed, and we must work quickly. *checks his watch* We have five hours before sundown.

Willow *opens her laptop* Don't worry, Buffy, we'll save Angel.

Kendra Angel? But our priority is to stop Drusilla!

Xander Angel's our friend! Except I don't like him.

Buffy Look, you've got your priorities, and I've got mine. Right now they mesh. So, are you gonna help me, or are you gonna get out of my way?

Kendra *considers* I'm wit you.

Buffy Good. 'Cause I've had it. Spike is going down. You can attack me, you can send assassins after me, that's fine. But nobody messes with my boyfriend!

Part 3

Drusilla's room. She runs her hand across the lid of an elegant wooden box labeled 'Holy Water'. She sings quietly as she lifts the lid and takes out a small crystal pitcher.

Drusilla The lamb is caught in the blackberry patch. *approaches Angel* My mummy ate lemons. Raw.

She kneels next to him. Angel is tied to the posts of her canopy bed by both wrists high above his head.

Drusilla She said she loved the way they made her mouth... *runs her hand down and up his chest* tingle. Little Anne.

She lets some of the holy water trickle onto his chest. It steams and burns like acid. Angel jerks his head back in pain and stifles a scream.

Drusilla Her favorite was custard... brandied pears.

Angel Dru...

Drusilla *sternly* Shhh! *stands up* And pomegranates. *climbs onto the bed behind Angel* They used to make her face and fingers aaall red.

She reaches over his shoulder and lets more holy water dribble onto his chest. Again Angel grits his teeth in

pain, but won't let himself scream out loud.

Drusilla Remember? Hmm? Little fingers. Little hands. Do you?

Angel *shivering in pain* If I could...

Drusilla *interrupts angrily* Bite your tongue! They used to eat cake, and eggs, and honey. *sweetly* Until you came and ripped their throats out.

She pours the rest of the holy water onto his chest, and Angel screams out loud in agony.

Cut to the library. Giles comes out of the stacks and heads toward the stairs with a large volume full of pictures. Willow is sitting on the steps websurfing on her laptop. He looks down at her screen and sits down next to her.

Giles There are forty-three churches in Sunnydale? *pulls out a roll of mints* That seems a little excessive. *tears off some wrapping*

Willow It's the extra evil vibe from the Hellmouth. Makes people pray harder.

Giles offers her a mint, and she smiles and takes one. He gets back up and continues over to Xander and Cordelia

at the table.

Giles Well, check and see if any of them are closed or abandoned.

Xander Yeah, yeah, we got monsters, we got demons, but no bug dude or police lady.

Giles sets the volume down in front of them and opens it.

Giles Well, you should have better luck with this one. There's a whole section devoted to the Order of Taraka. Cut to Giles' office. Kendra looks through the window at them doing their research. Buffy is sharpening a knife.

Kendra And dose two, dey also know you are de Slayer?

Buffy Yep.

Kendra Did anyone explain to you what 'secret identity' means? *goes to the desk*

Buffy Nope. Must be in the handbook. *Kendra picks up the crossbow* Right after the chapter on personality removal. Be careful with that thing!

Kendra Please. I'm an expert in all weapons.

The bolt flies off of the crossbow and breaks a lamp. Buffy startles. Giles heard the noise from the main room.

Giles Is everything alright?

Buffy Yeah, it's okay. Kendra killed the bad lamp.

Kendra Sorry! Dis, uh, trigger mechanism is different. *sets the bow down* Perhaps when dis is over you can, uh, show me how to work it.

Buffy When this is over I'm thinking pineapple pizza and teen video movie fest. Possibly something from the Ringwald oeuvre.

Cut to the main room. Xander turns the page and finds a drawing of the bug dude.

Xander Oh, here we go! I am the bug man, coo coo ka choo.

Giles and Willow come over to have a look. Xander reads in another book.

Xander Okay. Okay. He can only be killed when he's in his disassembled state. *to Cordelia* Disassembled. That means when he's broken down into his liiittle buggy parts.

Cordelia I know what it means, **dorkhead**.

Xander *takes mock offense* Dorkhead! You slash me with your words!

Giles rubs his eyes. Willow raises her eyebrows at them. Cut to the office. Kendra is handling a stake.

Kendra Your life is very different dan mine.

Buffy You mean the part where I occasionally have one? Yeah, I guess it is. *carves at a stake*

Kendra De tings you do and have, I was taught, distract from my calling. Friends, school... even family.

Buffy Even family?

Kendra My parents, dey sent me to my Watcher when I was very young.

Buffy How young?

Kendra I don't remember dem, actually. I've seen pictures. But, uh, dat's how seriously de calling is taken by my people. My modder and fadder gave me to my Watcher because dey believed dat dey were doing de right ting for me, and for de world. *puts down the stake and gets a sympathetic look from Buffy* Please, I don't feel sorry for meself. Why should you?

Buffy I don't know, I... I guess it just sounds very lonely.

Kendra Emotions are weakness, Buffy. You shouldn't entertain dem.

Buffy Kendra, my emotions give me power. They're total assets!

Kendra *picks up her knife* Maybe. For you. But I prefer to keep an even mind. *wipes the blade*

Buffy *puts down her knife* Mm. I guess that explains it.

Kendra Explains what?

Buffy *plays with the stake* Oh, well, when we were fighting, uh, you're amazing! Your technique, it's flawless, it's, hmm, better than mine.

Kendra I know.

Buffy Still, I woulda kicked your butt in the end. And ya know why? No imagination.

Kendra *rubs her blade more vigorously* Really? Ya tink so? *puts down the rag*

Buffy Oh, I know so. You're good, but power alone isn't enough. A good fighter needs to know how to improvise, to go with the flow. Uh-uh, seriously, don't get me wrong, y-you really do have potential. *puts away the stake*

Kendra *holds her knife ready* Potential? I could wipe de floor wit you right now!

Buffy *looks Kendra in the eye* That would be anger you're feeling.

Kendra What?

Buffy You feel it, right? How the anger gives you fire? A Slayer needs that.

They both look over at Xander as he walks into the office.

Xander Excuse me, ladies.

Kendra looks down at the floor while he grabs a book from the desk. Xander notices her knife.

Xander Nice knife. *leaves the office*

Buffy I'm guessing dating isn't big with your Watcher either.

Kendra I'm not permitted to speak with boys.

Buffy Unless you're pummeling them. *has a realization* Wait a minute.

Kendra What?

Buffy That guy! The sleazoid you nearly decked in the bar.

Kendra You tink he might help us?

Buffy I tink we might make him!

Cut to Drusilla's room. She is kneeling between Angel's spread-apart legs and holds the little pitcher of holy water above him.

Drusilla Say 'Uncle'. *lowers the pitcher* Oh, that's right, you killed my uncle.

She is about to pour some onto his chest again when Spike comes in.

Spike That's it, then. *Drusilla looks up at him* Off to church.

Drusilla *stands up* It makes pretty colors.

Spike Pft! I'll see him die soon enough. I've never been much for the pre-show.

He reaches up to untie one of Angel's bonds while Drusilla puts away the holy water and gets Miss Edith.

Angel Too bad. That's what Drusilla likes best, as I recall.

Spike What's that supposed to mean? *steps over to the other bond*

Angel Ask her. She knows what I mean.

Drusilla has come back to stand behind Spike's shoulder, and he turns his head to face her.

Spike Well?

Drusilla *to Angel* Shhh! Grrrruff! Bad dog.

Angel You shoulda let me talk to him, Dru. Sounds like your boy could use some pointers. She likes to be teased.

Spike has finished untying the other bond and throws it to the floor.

Spike Keep your hole shut! *stands over him*

Angel Take care of her, Spike. The way she touched me just now? I can tell when she's not satisfied.

Spike I said SHUT UP!

He grabs Angel by the throat, lifts him to his feet and holds him against the bedpost.

Angel Or maybe you two just don't have the fire we had.

Spike That's enough.

He pounds his other hand into the wooden railing of Drusilla's bed, grabs the piece that broke off and holds it up to stake Angel.

Drusilla Spike, no!

Spike holds back. Angel tries to goad him on with a stare. Drusilla steps over to Spike and gently puts her arm on his shoulder and snuggles up to him.

Drusilla Shhh.

Spike Oh! Right. Right, you almost got me! Aren't you a 'throw himself to the lions' sort of sap these days. Well,

the lions are on to you, baby. See, if I kill you now you go quick, and Dru hasn't got a chance. And if Dru dies your little Rebecca of Sunnyhell Farm and all her mates are spared her coming-out party. *squeezes Angel's throat*

Drusilla Spike, the moon is rising. It's time.

Spike Too bad, Angelus. Looks like you go the hard way. Along with the rest of this miserable town.

He keeps holding Angel against the bedpost as he and Drusilla engage in a passionate kiss.

Cut to Willy's bar. Buffy shoves him up against the shelves of liquor bottles.

Willy Ah! Honest! I don't know where Angel is!

Buffy What about this ritual? What have you heard?

Willy N-nothing! I-it's all hush-hush!

Kendra Just hit him, Buffy!

Buffy *to Willy* She likes to hit.

Willy You know, m-maybe I did hear something about this ritual. Yeah, i-i... I-it's coming back to me. But, uh, I'd have to take you there.

Buffy Let's go. *starts to drag him out of the bar*

Kendra First we must return to de Watcher.

Buffy *stops* Excuse me? While we run to Giles, this whole thing could go down!

Kendra But it is procedure.

Buffy It's brainless, you mean! If we don't go now, Angel could die. *starts out again*

Kendra Is dat all you're worried about? Your boyfriend?

Buffy *stops again* No, it's not all, but it's enough.

Kendra It's as I feared. He clouds your judgment. We can't stop dis ritual alone!

Buffy Are you listening to me? He could die!

Kendra He's a vampire. He **should** die. Why am I de only person who sees it?

Buffy just stares at her a moment before turning around again and heading for the door with Willy in tow.

Kendra Are you dat big a fool?

Buffy shoves Willy out ahead of her and leaves Kendra behind in the bar.

Kendra *exhales* Good riddance, den.

Cut to the church. Cut inside. Willy leads her down an arched hallway.

Willy Here ya go. Don't ever say your friend Willy don't come through in a pinch.

They round a corner, and Patrice and a vampire are waiting there for them.

Willy Here ya go. Don't ever say your friend Willy don't come through in a pinch.

Norman and another vampire block her escape from behind.

Part 4

The nave of the church. Spike walks up the main aisle from the altar with a burning incense censer.

Spike Eligor. I name thee. Bringer of war, poisoners, pariahs, grand obscenity.

He turns back to the altar. Angel and Drusilla are both strapped together to a chain that hangs from the ceiling. Angel's right hand is tied to the chain above his head.

Spike Eligor, wretched master of decay, bring your black medicine.

Drusilla Black medicine.

Spike sets the censer down on the altar and picks up the Du Lac Cross with his gloved hand.

Spike Come. *holds up the cross upside-down* Restore your most impious, murderous child.

Drusilla Murderous child.

He grabs the downward-pointing tip of the cross with his other hand and yanks down, pulling out a dagger. He lays the rest of the cross back on the altar.

Spike From the blood of the sire she is risen.

He takes Drusilla's left hand and raises it to Angel's, and she clasps it.

Spike From the blood of the sire, she shall rise again.

With one swift stroke Spike stabs the blade through their hands. Angel screams in agony. A blindingly bright pink light emanates from their wounds. A pulse of energy spreads out, and then the light dies back down to a faint glimmer as Angel's strength begins to ebb from him into Drusilla. She droops backward, feeling Angel's energy flow into her.

Spike Right, then! Now we just let them come to a simmering boil, and remove to a low flame.

Willy barges through the door and strides into the nave with the vampires and assassins escorting Buffy close behind.

Willy It's payday, pal. I got your Slayer.

Spike strides up the aisle to meet him.

Spike *angry* Are you tripping?! You bring her here?! Now?!

Willy You said you wanted her.

Buffy sees Angel and Drusilla tied together at the altar.

Spike In the ground, pinhead! I wanted her dead.

Willy Now, that's not what I heard. Word was there was a bounty on her dead or alive.

Spike You heard wrong, Willy.

Buffy *whispers* Angel.

Spike Yeah. *steps over to Buffy* It bugs me, too, seeing him like that. Another five minutes, though, and Angel will be dead, so... I forebear. Don't feel too bad for Angel, though, he's got something you don't have.

Buffy *angry* What's that?

Spike Five minutes. Patrice!

She lets go of Buffy and draws her gun. Buffy struggles to get loose from the vampire holding her. The other door suddenly bursts open, and Kendra comes in doing a series of backflips, ending in a flying double kick, one foot to the back of each of the vampire's heads. They fall to the floor, pushing Buffy into Spike and knocking him down. Kendra lands on her feet, ready to fight. She wastes no time running over to Spike as he gets up, meeting Buffy there to fight him.

Spike Who the hell is this?!

Kendra grabs him by the shirt.

Buffy It's your lucky day, Spike.

Kendra Two Slayers! *decks him*

Buffy No waiting! *jabs him*

Spike falls but quickly gets up. Buffy breaks off to fight Patrice, leaving Kendra to take care of Spike. He ducks a roundhouse kick from her. Buffy faces off with Patrice. She extends her arms down, and a blade slides out from each sleeve. One of the vampires gets up from the floor next to them and starts to reach for Buffy when a bolt impales him. He falls and turns to ashes while Giles looks on from the door, still holding the crossbow. Buffy and Patrice begin to fight hand-to-hand. Patrice thrusts one blade, then the other at Buffy, but she catches her arms and holds them up while she knees Patrice in the stomach. Buffy follows up with a kick to her face and sends her stumbling back into the wall. Spike lands a punch on Kendra, knocking her down, and she scrambles to avoid his follow-up kick. The other vampire gets up also, and Giles runs to engage him. He swings the crossbow at him, but the vampire grabs it, and they struggle over it. Giles swings at the vampire and hits him in the face. Willow jumps up onto his back and starts choking him with her arm. Xander spots Norman and taunts him.

Xander Hey, larvae boy! *Norman sees him* Yeah, that's right, I'm talkin' to you, ya big cootie!

Norman smiles and starts after him. Xander scrambles for the doors and carefully steps through as he closes them behind him to avoid stepping into the puddle of liquid adhesive Cordelia has poured there. She still has the bucket in her hand.

Xander Welcome, my little pretties!

Norman comes under the door as a mass of mealworms. Back inside Giles punches the vampire twice while Willow keeps holding on. Kendra jumps over Spike when he tries to knock her legs out from under her. She tries another roundhouse kick, but he blocks it. He uses the momentum of the block to spin around and hit her again. Patrice gets back up and comes for Buffy. She ducks a kick from Buffy and lunges at her with her blades, but Buffy handily blocks her. She swings at

Buffy's face with one, but Buffy ducks out of the way. Out in the hall the mealworms have gotten stuck in the adhesive and Xander and Cordelia begin to stomp them. Inside Kendra swings at Spike and is blocked. Spike lands another hit on her. Buffy punches Patrice in the face and sends her staggering back into the wall again. Spike punches Kendra again, and follows up with a roundhouse kick. She hits the floor and scrambles back up again. Buffy notices her getting knocked around.

Buffy Switch!

She bends over and Kendra rolls over her back to face Patrice, immediately landing a punch and knocking her into the wall a third time. Buffy faces Spike.

Spike I'd rather be fightin' you anyway.

Buffy Mutual.

She blocks his thrust, then kicks him in the face and again in the gut. He doubles over and falls to the floor. In the hall Cordelia and Xander continue stomping away.

Cordelia Die! Die, die, die! Die!

Xander puts his hand on her lower back to calm her.

Xander I think he did, Cordy.

She drops the bucket and they run off. Inside, Buffy blocks a punch from Spike, and another, but then he lands punches to her stomach and face. She blocks his next swing and holds his arm while she punches him twice in the face. She grabs his coat and pulls him around and throws him over several pews and into the wall. Behind another pew Willy gets up. Spike growls as he stands back up and sees Willy trying to sneak out of the church. He rushes over and grabs him by the back of the neck.

Spike Where are you going?

Buffy seizes the opportunity to run to the altar and pull the dagger out of Angel and Drusilla's hands.

Willy Now, there's a way in which this isn't my fault!

Spike They tricked you.

Willy Mm-hm! They were duplicitous!

Spike Well, then I'll only kill you just this once. *goes for the bite*

Drusilla *weakly* Spike!

Spike stops before biting Willy and looks over at her. He sees Buffy trying to untie them. He lets go of Willy and rushes over to the altar, grabs Buffy and shoves her to the floor. He backhand punches her as she gets back up, knocking her down again. Willy wastes no time running out of the church past Willow and Giles, who are still fighting the other vampire. Giles has him held back by both arms and Willow has a stake raised to kill him.

Willow Hold him steady!

She plunges the stake into the vampire's heart and

he bursts into ashes, leaving Giles all dusty. Xander and Cordelia run into the back of the nave as Willow pats the dust off of Giles. Patrice throws Kendra over a knocked-over pew and climbs over after her. She swings at Kendra twice, but misses both times when Kendra ducks. She swings again and this time slashes her in the arm. Kendra grabs her wound and looks down at it.

Kendra Dat's me favrit shirt! Dat's me **only** shirt!

Now Kendra is really mad, and she kicks Patrice in the back of the knee, making her lose her balance. She grabs Patrice by the arm and throws her into a cabinet in front of the organ, smashing it to pieces and knocking her out. Kendra runs over to join the others. Spike takes a torch from its wall hanger and throws it into a pile of old drapes, setting them ablaze.

Xander Look out!

Spike unstraps Drusilla from Angel.

Spike Sorry, baby. Gotta go.

He lifts her into his arms and starts down the aisle.

Spike Hope that was enough.

With nothing holding him up anymore Angel falls to the floor behind them. Buffy crawls over to him and sees Spike making his escape. She stands up and grabs the censer from the altar. She swings it around her head by its chain a few times and launches it at Spike. It hits him in the back of the head, and he stumbles into the church organ. The keyboard console collapses under his weight.

Buffy I'm good!

A moment later the organ superstructure collapses onto Spike and Drusilla, with its huge brass pipes clanging and rolling everywhere. Buffy turns her attention back to Angel and helps him sit up. She cradles his head with her arm.

Buffy *quietly* Hi.

Kendra sees the way they look at each other. Buffy brushes Angel's cheek. Giles and the others watch them through the flames. Kendra runs over and crouches down next to Buffy and Angel.

Kendra Let's get him out!

Angel moans as they begin to help him up.

Buffy Careful!

Kendra C'mon.

With their help he gets to his feet. Kendra gets under his arm to support him. The others run out of the church as the three of them make their way up the aisle and out the other door. The wreckage of the organ has caught fire now, too.

Cut to the school lounge the next day. Oz is getting a box of animal crackers from a vending machine. His arm is in a sling. He straightens up and sees Willow there.

Oz Oh, hey! *offers the box* Animal cracker?

Willow *smiles* No, thank you. How's your arm?

Oz *tries to open the box* Suddenly painless.

Willow You can still play the guitar okay?

Oz Oh, not well, but not worse.

They start to walk down the hall. Willow takes the box from him to open it.

Willow Y'know, I never really thanked you.

Oz Ooo, yeah, please don't. I don't do thanks. *Willow hands back the open box* I get all red. Have to bail. It's not pretty.

Willow *smiles* Well, then forget that thing. E-especially with the part where I kind of owe you my life.

Oz *pulls out a cookie and stops* Oh, look! Monkey! And he has a little hat. And little pants.

Willow *smiles* Yeah, I-I see!

Oz The monkey's the only cookie animal that gets to wear clothes, you know that?

Willow smiles brightly.

Oz You have the sweetest smile I've ever seen.

Willow is surprised by the compliment.

Oz *continues down the hall* So, I'm wondering, do the other cookie animals feel sorta ripped? Like, is the hippo going, 'Hey, man, where are **my** pants? I have my hippo dignity!'

Willow laughs.

Oz And you know the monkey's just, *with a French accent* 'I mock you with my monkey pants!'

Willow laughs more.

Oz And there's a big coup in the zoo.

Willow The monkey is French?

Oz All monkeys are French. You didn't know that?

Willow No. *giggles*

Cut to another part of the halls. Cordelia comes walking along. When she sees Xander she immediately turns and walks the other way. Xander runs around her and stops her.

Xander We need to talk.

Cordelia rolls her eyes and crosses her arms as she goes into an empty classroom. Xander looks back and forth down the hall to make sure no one sees them going in together and follows her. He stands a distance away from her. They both fidget with their hands.

Xander Okay, uh-uh-uh... here's the deal. We don't have to run every time we see each other in the hall.

Cordelia Right. Okay. Why shouldn't we run?

Xander What happened, there's a total explanation for it.

Cordelia You're a pervert?

Xander Me?

Cordelia Yeah!

Xander No-no-no-no! *takes a step closer* I seem to recall I was the jumpee, my friend!

Cordelia As if! *takes a step closer* You've probably been planning this for months!

Xander Right, I hired a Latvian bug man to kill Buffy so I could kiss you. I hate to burst your bubble, but you don't inspire me to spring for a dinner over at Bucky's Fondue Hut.

Cordelia Fine! Whatever. *starts to leave, but steps back, closer* You **know, the point is** don't try it again!

Xander I didn't try it! *calms a bit* Forget about the bugs, okay? The memory of your lips on mine makes my blood run cold.

Cordelia *steps closer* If you dare breathe a word of this...

Xander Like I want anyone to know!

Cordelia Then it's erased!

Xander Never happened!

Cordelia Good!

Xander Good!

Cordelia Good!

They stare into each other's eyes for a moment, and then grab each other in another mad, passionate kiss. This time they don't break off.

Cut to the front of the school. Buffy is walking Kendra to her taxi.

Kendra Tank you for de shirt, it was very generous of you.

Buffy Hey, it looks better on... well, me, but no worries. Now, when you get to the airport...

Kendra I get on de plane with me ticket, and sit in a seat. Not de cargo hold.

Buffy Very good.

Kendra Dat is **not** traveling under cover.

Buffy Exactly. Relax! You earned it. Sit in your seat, you eat your peanuts, you watch the movie, well, unless it's about a dog or Chevy Chase.

Kendra I'll remember. *opens the cab door*

Buffy I, um... I just wanted to thank you... for helping me save Angel.

Kendra Mm. Am not tellin' me Watcher about dat. It is too strange dat a Slayer loves a vampire.

Buffy *smirks* Tell me about it.

Kendra Still, he is pretty cute.

Buffy Well, maybe they won't fire me for dating him.

Kendra You always do dat.

Buffy Do what?

Kendra You talk about slaying like it's a job. It's not. It's who you are.

Buffy Did you get that from your handbook?

Kendra From you.

Buffy I guess it's something I really can't fight. *smiles* I'm a freak.

Kendra Not de only freak.

Buffy Not anymore.

They look at each other for a moment, then Buffy makes a move to hug Kendra, but she backs away.

Kendra I don't hug.

Buffy Right. No. Good. Hate hugs.

Kendra smiles at her and gets into the cab. Buffy holds up her hand in good-bye. She watches as the taxi pulls away.

Cut to the church. The fire has burned itself out. The camera pans over the scorched rubble of the pipe or-

gan to Spike, unconscious but breathing. Drusilla grabs him by the arm. She is vamped out.

Drusilla Don't worry, dear heart.

She pulls him off of the floor and holds him up by his arm. His head just droops down.

Drusilla I'll see that you get strong again.

She scoops up his legs with her other arm.

Drusilla Like me!

Slowly she carries him from the charred remains of the church.

Ted

Written by David Greenwalt & Joss Whedon

Directed by Bruce Seth Green

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Ted". It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.05

This episode was originally broadcast on December 8, 1997.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Buffy's street at night. Willow and Xander are walking ahead of her on their way to her house.

Xander You don't know what you're talking about.

Willow Xander, he was obviously in charge.

Xander He was a puppet! She was using him!

Willow He didn't seem like the type of guy who would let himself be used.

Xander Well, that was her genius! He didn't even know he was playing second fiddle. *turns behind him* Buffy.

Buffy Huh?

Xander Who was the real power? The Captain, or Tennille?

Buffy Ummm... Who are these people?

Xander The Captain and Tennille? Boy, somebody was raised in a culture-free environment!

Buffy I'm sorry. I was just...

Willow Thinking?

Buffy No, not thinking. Having a lot of happy non-thoughts. I love it when things are quiet around here.

Xander Yeah, with Spike and Drusilla out of the way, we've really been ridin' the mellow, and I am really jinxing the hell out of us by saying that.

Buffy Yeah, but we'll let you off this time.

They turn down the walk to Buffy's house.

Willow So, we're pretty sure that there're not more Tarakan assassins coming our way?

Buffy Angel's sources say the contract's off.

Xander How is Angel? Pretend I care.

Buffy *smiles* Getting better.

Willow And you're loving playing nursemaid?

Buffy Oh, yeah!

Xander So, is it better than playing naughty stewardess?

Buffy Xander...

He chuckles as they climb the steps to the porch. Buffy gets out her key and reaches up to put it in the door lock. When she pushes on it to insert it the door just swings in. Cut inside. Buffy stares in, concerned to find the door unlocked.

Buffy You guys wait here a second.

She slowly walks in and looks around. After a few seconds she hears a glass fall and break in the kitchen and her mother cry out.

Joyce *from the kitchen* No!

Buffy rushes through the dining room to the kitchen door and pushes it open.

Buffy Mom!

There she catches her mother locked in an embrace with and kissing a man. They break off their kiss, and all three of them stare awkwardly at each other.

Buffy Oh, my... *exhales* I'm sorry, I... *exhales* I heard...

Joyce Uh, I-I-I broke a wineglass. Y-y-you're home early.

Ted Hi.

Buffy Hi.

Joyce *to Ted* Oh! Uh, this is my daughter, Buffy. *to Buffy* Buffy, this is Ted.

Buffy just stares at him, unsure how to react.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part 1

The kitchen at Buffy's house. Xander and Willow have been invited to stay for dinner. Ted is cooking. He opens the oven and slides in a baking sheet full of mini pizzas.

Ted Okay, here we go!

Cut to outside the kitchen door. Joyce empties the dustpan full of broken glass into the trashcan.

Buffy So. All these late nights at the gallery recently I

gather you were cataloging more than art.

Joyce Well, I... I've been looking for the right moment to introduce you two. He's a wonderful man.

Buffy looks over her shoulder at Ted cooking.

Ted Sprinkle that on...

Xander Uh, a little more. Okay, more...

Buffy How'd you meet?

Joyce Oh, he sells, uh, computer software. He redid my entire system at the gallery, freed up a lot of my time.

Buffy To meet new people. And smooch them in my kitchen.

Joyce You weren't supposed to see that.

Cut inside the kitchen. Ted takes the cast-iron pan from the stove, goes over to the island with it and scoops out several finished pizzas.

Willow I like my new nine-Gig hard drive.

Ted But you don't love it, 'cause without the DMA upgrade your computer's only half a rocket ship.

Willow Yeah, but who can afford the upgrades?

Ted Well, you can! I get the demos for free, I don't see why I shouldn't give 'em to you for the same price! Any friend of Buffy's...

Willow squeals with delight. Xander munches on one of the mini pizzas.

Ted What?

Xander Oh, that's the sound she makes when she's speechless with geeker joy. Can I just say, this is the finest pizza **ever** on God's green Earth. What is your secret?

Ted Well, after you bake it, you fry it in herbs and olive oil, but you gotta use *knocks his pan* a cast-iron skillet. No room for compromise there.

Buffy and Joyce come back into the kitchen.

Xander Y'know, you should market these things. I mean, you can get two, three hundred bucks apiece!

Ted laughs at that and takes the plate with the pizzas over to Buffy.

Ted Hungry?

Buffy No, thanks.

Ted Buffy, I want to apologize. That wasn't how I wanted us to meet. I wanted it to be... perfect. I'm very fond of your mother, I guess that's pretty obvious. I know you're the most *gestures toward the picture of the two of them on the refrigerator* important thing in her life, and, well, gosh, that makes you pretty important to me, too.

Joyce overheard and comes over to stand next to Ted.

Joyce Buffy, I really want you to be okay with this.

Ted Beg to differ: **we** really want you to be okay with this.

They both smile at Buffy.

Buffy I'm okay.

Joyce You are?

Buffy I am. *smiles stiffly*

Cut to the park. A picnic table stands there empty. Suddenly a vampire comes crashing down onto it, and it collapses underneath him. He shakes off the blow as he gets back up and comes at Buffy again. She grabs the metal lid from a trashcan while Giles looks on. She uses it as a shield to block the vampire's punch and then hits him over the head with it. He falls to his knee, but gets back up. She hits him with it again and he falls to his other knee and quickly gets up again. She hits him a third time and he staggers again.

Giles Buffy? I-I believe he's, he's, um...

Buffy swings down with the lid from above onto the vampire's head. He just absorbs the blow and comes at her with a punch. She blocks the swing with the lid again and swings it around onto his head from above again. Giles winces at what he's seeing. Buffy blocks another punch, then discards the lid and kicks the vampire in the face.

Giles It, it's, it's staking time, really. Don't you think?

Buffy kicks the vampire again and follows up with a punch to the jaw. Giles sits down on a bench to wait, holding his bag in his lap. Buffy throws a right jab to the vampire's face. She follows up with a kick to his knee, making the vampire fall to the ground. She pulls a stake out of her jacket and cleanly jams it into his chest and pulls it back out. The vampire bursts into ashes. Buffy looks around as she walks over to Giles.

Buffy Any others?

Giles Well, for their sakes, I certainly hope not.

Buffy What? I kill vampires, that's my job.

Giles Well, true, true, although you don't usually beat them into quite such a bloody pulp beforehand. Everything alright?

Buffy Yeah! Fine!

She walks around him, steps up onto the bench and sits on the backrest.

Buffy I killed a vampire here on Wednesday. Why are they hanging out at the park?

Giles Well, they're... scattered, you know. Now their leaders are gone, with any luck dead. In times of crisis they usually return to the easiest feeding grounds.

Buffy Vampires are creeps.

Giles Yes, that's why one slays them.

Buffy I mean, people are perfectly happy getting along, and then vampires come, and they run around and they kill people, and they take over your whole house, they start making these stupid little mini pizzas, and everyone's like, 'I like your mini pizzas,' but I'm telling you, I am...

Giles *interrupts* Uh, uh, Buffy! I-I believe the... subtext here is, is, rapidly becoming, uh, *clears his throat* uh,

text. Are you sure there's nothing you want to share?

Buffy No. Forget it. *looks around again* Think there'll be any more? I-I can wait.

Cut to Sunnydale High the next day.

Buffy If you say one more word, things will become dire.

Cut to the halls. Xander, Willow and Buffy are walking.

Xander Did you even bother to taste 'em? Nooo! Well, I did, and I'm here to tell ya those mini pizzas have changed my life! Ted is the master chef!

Buffy Fine! So he's a good cook. Well, what does that really tell you about a person?

Xander Everything.

Willow You don't like him?

Buffy I don't **know** him. I, I mean, so far all I see is someone who apparently has a good job, seems nice and polite, and my mother really likes him.

Xander *in a rough voice* What kind of a monster is he?

Buffy I'm just saying there's something a little too clean about this clown.

Willow *giggles* He's a clean clown! *gets stares from the others* I have my own fun.

They arrive at the vending machines.

Xander Buff, you're lacking evidence. I think maybe we're in Sigmund Freud territory.

He puts his coins into the machine.

Willow He has a point. Separation anxiety, the mother figure being taken away, conflict with the father figure...

Buffy He's **not** my father figure.

Xander Having issues much?

Buffy I am not!

Xander does a typical funny dance, pointing both fingers at Buffy and responding in a sing-song voice.

Xander You're having parental issues, you're having parental issues...

Willow Xander...

Xander What? Freud would've said the exact same thing. Except he might not have done that little dance.

Buffy Okay, I admit it's weird. Seeing my mother frenching a guy is definitely a ticket to therapy land, but it's more than that. I'm pretty good at sensing what's going on around me, and there is definitely something wrong with this... Ted.

Xander spots Ted coming down the stairs behind Buffy.

Xander Ted!

Buffy Of course, Ted. Who'd you think I was talking about?

Xander Hi, Ted! Ted, who's here.

Ted Hello, kids!

The girls turn quickly to face him.

Buffy *to Ted* What are you doing here?

Ted I'm updating the software in the guidance office. Which reminds me, *pulls several disks from his pocket and hands them to Willow* your upgrades.

Willow *eagerly accepting the disks* Oh, what a day! Thank you!

Buffy gives Willow a look.

Ted Think nothing of it. Buffy, do you like miniature golf?

Xander Who doesn't!

Ted Well, your mother and I were thinking maybe this Saturday we could drag the three of you out to the course, spend some time swinging the iron with the stuffy old people.

Buffy Well, uh...

Ted I'm making a picnic basket.

Xander *eyes wide* With mini pizzas?

Ted And cookies!

Xander inhales in wide-eyed, open-mouthed rapture.

Buffy You know what, we, we would love to, honestly, but, um, unfortunately we have that *looks to Willow for support* thing on Saturday.

Willow Ohhh, that thing. *they look at Xander* That thing.

Xander Hey, we can do that thing anytime. I'm tired of doing that thing. *to Ted* We're on!

Ted Great!

Willow and Buffy can only smile, Willow widely, Buffy half-heartedly.

Cut to Ms. Calendar's classroom. She's gathering assignments from the desks. Giles walks up to the door and steps in.

Giles Hello, Jenny.

Jenny Rupert. Hi.

Giles Some of your, uh, textbooks were delivered to the library. Um, do you want me to, uh, hang on to them?

Jenny Yeah, that's fine. I'll send the kids by to pick 'em up.

Giles Right. Good. *turns around and starts out of the room*

Jenny Pretty flimsy excuse for coming by to see me.

Giles *comes back in* You should have heard the ones I threw out. *smiles briefly* I just, I wanted to, uh... see how you were doing.

Jenny I'm doing pretty good, actually. I've stayed out of mortal danger for three whole weeks. I could get used to it. *Giles smiles at that* I'm still having trouble sleeping, though.

Giles *steps closer* Oh, of course. Um... you, you, you need time.

Jenny Or possibly space. Rupert, I know you're concerned. But having you constantly poking around, making little puppy dog eyes at me, wondering if I'm

okay... *exhales* You make me feel bad that I don't feel better. I don't want that responsibility.

Giles Sorry. *looks down* I certainly don't mean to make, um, 'dog eyes'... at you. I'm just...

Jenny Worried. I know.

Giles I shouldn't have bothered you.

He turns and walks out of the room with his head hung down. Jenny watches him go and exhales. She goes back to collecting the papers.

Cut to Angel's apartment. Buffy is replacing the bandage on his right hand while he lies in his comfy chair.

Buffy So mom's like, 'Do you think Ted will like this?' and 'This is Ted's favorite show,' and 'Ted's teaching me computers,' and 'Ted said the funniest thing,' and I'm like, 'That's really great, Mom,' and then she said I was being sarcastic, which I was, but I'm sorry if I don't wanna talk about Ted all the time.

Angel *looks up at her* So, you gonna talk about something else at some point?

Buffy I'm sorry. I just have so much to deal with, I don't need some new guy in my life.

She's finished wrapping the bandage and Angel hands her a piece of tape.

Angel No, but maybe your mom does.

Buffy takes the tape and puts it on the bandage.

Buffy Well, sure, if you're gonna use wisdom.

Angel *chuckles* Loneliness is about the scariest thing there is.

Buffy Okay, so my mom needs a guy in her life. Does it have to be Ted?

Angel Do you have somebody else in mind? There's a guy out there that would satisfy you?

Buffy My dad? *Angel looks at her* Yeah, okay, that's not gonna happen. Fine, fine, I'll give Ted a chance. I'll play mini-golf, and I'll smile and curtsy and be the dutiful daughter. Do I have to like him?

Angel *smiles* Kiss me.

Buffy *smiles* Finally, something I wanna do!

She leans over him and kisses him lightly on the lips. She gets in his lap and they kiss more passionately.

Cut to Saturday at the mini-golf course. The group walks up to the next hole.

Xander Ah, the dreaded five-par cuckoo clock. Ha! So many have come, so few have conquered.

He puts his ball in place and studies his shot.

Joyce That picnic was delicious.

Xander takes his shot. It's weak.

Joyce You know how rare it is to find a man that cooks?

Ted I know I've been looking a long time for one. So, Buffy, I bet the boys are lined up around the block tryin' to get a date with you.

Buffy Not really.

Willow Oh, they are, but she's only interested in... *gets a nudge from Buffy* uh, her studies! 'Book-cracker Buffy', it's kind of her nickname.

Ted Well, glad to hear it. I bet that means your grades will be picking up soon.

He bends down to position his ball for his shot.

Buffy My grades? *paces over to her mom* How does he know about my grades?

Joyce I told him. He wants to know everything about you. He's concerned. That's a good thing. *Ted makes his shot* Ooo, nice shot, Ted!

Cut to the next hole with a castle. Buffy is ready to take her shot.

Ted Keep your eye on the ball. Watch those elbows!

Buffy swings a bit too hard, and the ball ricochets off of the castle and into the rough behind it.

Ted Oh! Bad luck, little lady!

Buffy starts to walk to retrieve her ball for another try.

Joyce Oh, we won't count it.

Ted We won't?

Buffy stops and turns back to look at them.

Joyce Well, it's just miniature golf.

Ted It is, but the rules are the rules. And what we teach her is what she takes out into the world when we're not there, whether it's at school or an unchaperoned party. *to Buffy* I don't mean to overstep my bounds, this is between you and your mother, I just think right is right.

Joyce He has a point.

Buffy Fine. I'll just go hit my ball from the rough.

She goes over to her ball behind the castle and picks it up. She steps onto the green, and thinking no one sees her drops her ball into the hole.

Buffy *loudly* Hey, how 'bout that! Got a hole in two!

Ted Beg to differ.

Buffy turns her head to see him standing next to the castle where he can just see.

Buffy Okay, so fine my score or whatever.

Ted I think you're missing the point here, little lady. Right is right, wrong is wrong. Why don't people see that?

Buffy It's just a game?

Ted Right, it's just a game, do your own thing, well, I'm not wired that way. And I am here to tell you *Buffy notices how he's tapping his ankle with his club pretty hard* it is **not** a game! It **does** count, and I don't stand for that kind of malarkey in my house!

Buffy Then I guess it's a good thing I'm not **in** your house.

Ted Do you want me to slap that smart-ass mouth of yours?

Buffy can't believe her ears. She notices the others come around the castle, and Ted follows her gaze.

Ted Who's up for dessert? I made chocolate-chip cookies! *smiles*

Joyce opens the zip-lock bag of cookies.

Xander Yum-my!

Willow Cookies!

Buffy stares at everyone and can't believe that Ted just threatened her.

Ted Yeah! I-I made, uh, too many, so you guys are gonna

have to take some home!

Everyone has a cookie and is munching away.

Joyce Mm! Buffy, you've got to try one of these! They're really good! Mm!

Ted offers her one with a smile. Buffy just keeps looking at them in disbelief.

Willow Mm!

Xander Mm! These are tasty!

Part 2

Morning at the Summer's house. Cut to the kitchen. Buffy comes wandering in. Joyce gets the orange juice from the refrigerator and brings it to the island.

Joyce Good morning, sunshine!

Buffy Hey.

Joyce *sets down the OJ* I've got juice, I've got sticky buns, oh, don't they smell good!

Buffy picks up part of a bun.

Joyce Ted made them.

Buffy puts it back down.

Joyce *smiles* What?

Buffy I'd just like to eat something around here that Ted didn't make.

Joyce Oh, what kind of an attitude is that?

Buffy *exhales* Look, Mom, I know you think he's great and all, but I...

Joyce *pours some juice* Y'know, he went out of his way to be nice to you, and you couldn't say two words to him on Saturday. *pours another glass* I do not expect you to love him right away like I do, but I do expect you to treat him decently.

Buffy You love him?

Joyce *puts down the juice carton* I-I don't know. *exhales* That just slipped out. *takes the juice back to the fridge* But I guess, I mean, it's not exactly like men beat down the door when you're a single...

Buffy When you're a single parent.

Joyce *exhales* Honey, look. I wouldn't have anything to do with anybody if they didn't care about you. But he does! I don't understand why you can't see that!

Buffy He threatened me.

Joyce What? *comes back to the island*

Buffy He threatened me. He said that he was gonna slap my face.

Joyce *disbelieving* He said no such thing! Honey, Ted told me what happened. He caught you cheating, didn't he?

Buffy *exhales* Yeah, I kicked my ball in, put me in jail, but he totally wigged!

Joyce And he didn't say anything about it in front of the others, did he?

Buffy Uh, no, but I don't think that's the...

Joyce *interrupts* Well, I thought that that was pretty decent of him! Ted said we are just gonna have to give you time to come around. Oh, speaking of which, he's making dinner for us tonight, so I'd like you at home, please, *points down for emphasis* promptly at six.

Buffy gives her mother a look and stalks out of the kitchen. Joyce just shrugs and lets her go. She eats part of a sticky bun.

Joyce Mm, this is sooo delicious!

Cut to the quad at the school. Willow, Buffy and Xander are walking across. Xander is munching on a cookie.

Willow What do you mean, check him out?

Buffy I mean investigate him. Find out his secrets, hack into his life.

Xander Can you say 'overreaction'?

Buffy Can you say 'sucking chest wound'?

Willow Buffy, it just seems like you **want** him to be corrupt, or something.

Buffy The guy lost his senses over mini-golf.

Xander So he's a little uptight. Last I heard that's not a slaying offense. *gets a look from Buffy* Don't gimme the look, I'm on your side. I'm just saying there are some things in life you have to accept.

Buffy and Willow sit on a bench.

Buffy And I'm saying Ted ain't one of 'em.

Xander notices Cordelia walk past them behind the bench.

Xander Hey, Cordy! Nice outfit.

Cordelia *stops to look at him* Oh, very funny.

Xander Not really.

Cordelia What are you saying?

Buffy and Willow look up at Xander.

Xander Nice outfit?

Cordelia Well, why don't you just keep your mouth shut! *walks off*

Xander Would you guys excuse me for a sec? *goes after Cordelia*

Willow What's up with them?

Cut to Cordelia walking along the colonnade. Xander catches up with her.

Cordelia What's wrong with you?

Xander I gave you a compliment.

Cordelia In front of your friends! They're gonna know!

Xander Know what?

Cordelia Please! It's too traumatic for me to even say it!

Xander That we kissed?

Cordelia Uhhh!

Xander Look, I'm not gonna tell, they're not gonna know. Not your friends, not my friends. You wanna go to the utility closet and make out?

Cordelia God! Is that all you ever think about? *considers the offer* Okay.

They go off to make out. Cut to Buffy and Willow still on the bench.

Buffy Will, I'm not wrong here. Ted has a problem with me. He acts like I'm in the way or something. And Mom's been totally different since he's around.

Willow Different, like happy?

Buffy Like Stepford. Will you help me?

Willow You know I will. What do you want me to look for?

Buffy Let's start small. Can you find out where he works?

Willow nods.

Cut to Ted's office. Buffy spots Ted at his desk and moves into the snack area to observe him. Neal has the desk next to Ted's. They're both talking with customers over their headsets.

Neal Yeah, i-i-it's a terrific product. No PC should be without it.

Ted No, Mrs. Lawnsdale, it is not an inexpensive piece of software. As a matter of fact it's a very expensive one. Which removes the risk of crashing your whole system. Of course, if you prefer something cheap, I can always recommend... Trust me, you won't be sorry. Thank **you** very much.

Ted takes off his headset and puts it down. Buffy sees him get up and quickly crouches down and hides under the snack table. Ted walks over to the sales board and makes another hack mark by his name.

Ted Goin' to lunch!

He walks out the door. Buffy stands back up and watches him leave. She glances over at his desk and then back at the sales board again. Neal walks up to get a cup of coffee and notices her standing there.

Neal You're new, aren't ya? *grabs the coffee pot*

Buffy Oh...

Neal I'm Neal. *pours a cup*

Buffy I'm B... Linda. Belinda. I'm just temping for the day. *looks at the board* Wow, that guy's a salesman. I guess he's the one to beat around here.

Neal Nobody beats 'The Machine'. The guy's a genius. Knows everything about computers, never loses a client... If I sound bitter, I am. *takes a sip of his coffee*

Buffy Well, nobody likes an overachiever. *Neal chuckles* Uh, he's probably got ex-wives and, and families to support.

Neal He's just got a girlfriend. I'm amazed he let her clutter his desk.

He looks at Ted's desk and Buffy follows his gaze. There's a single picture frame on it beside the computer and nothing else.

Neal Thank God he's taking off for the wedding.

Buffy *surprised* The wedding?

Neal Yeah, he's got it set for two months from now. Believe me, I am counting the days. *spots his boss* Uh-oh, the ueber-boss. Back to the salt mines. *walks off*

Buffy casually makes her way to Ted's desk, looking around to see if anyone notices her. She looks at the picture, and it strikes her as familiar. She takes it, opens up the back and pulls it out. She notices it's folded, and when she unfolds it she sees it's the picture of her and her mother from their refrigerator at home with her own face folded back.

Cut to dinner at home. Buffy, Joyce and Ted are seated at the dining room table. Ted is saying grace.

Ted We thank you for what we are about to receive, and we ask that you bless this house, and help the people in it to be more productive, more considerate and more honest. Amen.

Joyce Amen.

Ted and Joyce lay their napkins in their laps. Joyce takes up her fork and starts in.

Ted Well, another great day at work! How was school today, Buffy? Did you learn anything?

Buffy Quite a bit.

Ted Good for you! Well, Joycie, what do you think?

Joyce I think every home should have one of you. It's fantastic! *smiles to Buffy* Don't you think?

Ted smiles over at Buffy.

Buffy Looks good.

Ted Well, you know, little lady, it's not just for looks, it's for building strong bodies.

Buffy just sits there staring at Ted.

Joyce *looks at Buffy* Honey?

Buffy Are you two engaged?

Ted raises his head in realization.

Joyce Goodness, no! Whatever gave you that idea?

Ted Now, Joycie, let me handle this. Buffy, your mother and I are taking it one step at a time. And if things go the way I hope, maybe someday soon I just might ask her to tie the knot. How would you feel about that? *silence from Buffy* It's okay to have feelings, Buffy, and it's okay to express them.

Buffy I'd feel like killing myself.

Joyce Buffy!

Ted No, no, I, I told her to be honest. *to Buffy* Sweetheart, you should try and get used to me, 'cause you know what? I'm not going anywhere.

Buffy *to Joyce* May I be excused?

Joyce You can go to your room, young lady, that's where you can go.

Buffy gets up and leaves the table without another word.

Joyce Ted, I *exhales* I am so embarrassed! I-I-I don't know what's wrong with her!

Ted Joycie, *takes her hand* you don't get to be salesman of the year by giving up after a couple of rejections. She'll come 'round.

He smiles at her and takes his glass for a sip.

Cut to the park. Buffy is sitting on a swing, tapping a stake in her hand, hoping some vampires will show up.

Buffy Vampires... Here, vampires...

She exhales, frustrated that she can't work out her anger, and decides to head home. Cut inside her room. She climbs up to her window and crawls in. Inside she finds Ted waiting in a chair for her to come home.

Buffy What are you doing in here?

Ted Your mother told you to go to your room, Buffy. You and I both know she didn't mean climb out a window and go gallivanting about town.

Buffy First of all, this is **my** room, second... *sees her Slayer stuff lying on her desk* You've been going through my things?

Ted Yes, I have.

Buffy That's my personal property! How **dare** you?!

Ted I don't see how it's any different from you snooping around my office, do you? *raises her diary and reads* What exactly is a Vampire Slayer?

Buffy It's none of your business.

Ted Beg to differ, little lady. Everything you do is nothing **but** my business from now on.

Buffy I think you better get out of here. Now!

Ted Or what? *stands up and steps toward her* You'll slay me? I'm real. I'm not some goblin you made up in your little diary. **Psychiatrists have a word for something like this** delusional. So, from now on, you'll do what I say, when I say, or I show this *holds up her diary* to your

mother, and you'll spend your best dating years behind the wall of a mental institution. Your mother and I are going to be happy. You're not going to stand in the way. Sleep tight!

He starts to leave the room, and opens the door to go out. Buffy follows him and grabs hold of his hand that has her diary.

Buffy That's mine, and you are **not** leaving this room with it!

Ted Take your hand off me.

Buffy No.

Ted slaps her hard, almost punching her, and makes her hit the wall.

Buffy Ohhh! *straightens back up to face him* I was **so** hoping you'd do that.

She punches him squarely in the jaw, and he staggers back into the open door. He pushes himself upright and backhands her in the face, making her fall against the side of her bed and onto the floor. He picks her up by the shirt collar, but she kicks him in the shin. Joyce comes to the door to see what all the noise is about.

Joyce Buffy! Stop that!

Buffy elbows him in the face.

Joyce Stop it!

Buffy kicks him in the chest, making him stagger backward out into the hall, where Joyce has to quickly move out of the way. Buffy follows him into the hall and punches him in the face again. Ted trips down to the end of the hall before regaining his balance, and Buffy is there to kick him again. He spins around and falls down the stairs, tumbling to the bottom. When he hits the floor his neck sounds like it has broken. Joyce comes running down the stairs after him.

Joyce Ted...

She kneels next to him and tries to shake him awake.

Joyce Ted! Ted!

Buffy slowly descends the stairs. Joyce takes Ted's arm to feel for a pulse. When she doesn't find one she drops his arm and looks up at Buffy.

Joyce You killed him!

Buffy stares down at Ted's unmoving body, not believing what just happened.

Part 3

The foyer at the Summers house. Ted's body is zipped up into a body bag. The coroners wheel him out of the house on a gurney. Outside Buffy is sitting on the porch steps by the pillar. Joyce watches as the coroners wheel Ted's body away. She is approached by Detective Stein.

Det. Stein Ma'am, I'm Detective Stein. I'm sorry, but I need to ask you a few questions. Your relationship with the deceased?

Joyce We were, uh, seeing each other.

Det. Stein Can you tell me what happened?

Joyce He fell. Down the stairs, he fell.

Det. Stein I see. Uh, did he slip? Do you know what made him fall?

Buffy I hit him.

Detective Stein turns to look at her sitting on the steps.

Buffy I hit him.

Cut to the police station. Joyce is sitting by Detective Stein's desk, waiting to find out what's going to happen. The camera pans across the room and over to her, looking apprehensive. Cut to the interrogation room. Buffy is sitting at the table, looking down while being interviewed.

Buffy He was in my room. And we got into an argument.

Det. Stein About what?

Buffy He, um...

Det. Stein Was this the first time that you two had had an argument?

Buffy *looks up* No. He threatened me. He, he said that he would slap me.

Det. Stein That was tonight.

Buffy No. But he had my diary, and I-I tried to take it back, a-and that's when he hit me.

Det. Stein Where?

Buffy raises her hand to indicate her right cheek. Detective Stein leans over to have a look.

Det. Stein Well, it doesn't look like he hit you very hard.

Buffy I don't bruise easily.

Det. Stein So you've been hit before?

Buffy Yes.

Det. Stein But Ted never hit you.

Buffy I told you...

Det. Stein Before tonight, Ted never hit you before tonight?

Buffy What do you want? I-I told you what happened, I didn't mean to!

Det. Stein I believe you. Things get outta hand. He's a big guy.

He writes some notes on his pad. Buffy can only watch.

Joyce Are you charging her with something?

Cut to Joyce still sitting by Detective Stein's desk.

Det. Stein We're not bringing anything up against your daughter right now. She says Mr. Buchanan struck her, and if that's the case... *shrugs* Anyway, we've gotta examine it further. Right now I think you should just take her home, and the two of you should try and get some rest.

Cut to the street. They're driving home in Joyce's Jeep. Cut inside the car. Buffy is looking down sadly. She glances over to her mother briefly, then out the side window.

Cut to school the next day. Buffy comes into the hall from outside, and everyone seems to be looking at her as she slowly makes her way to the lounge. Cut to the lounge. Xander and Willow catch up with her.

Xander Buffy!

They climb the steps up to the couches.

Xander Are you okay?

Willow How come you're here?

Buffy I couldn't stay at home. *she and Willow sit* Mom won't even look at me.

Xander sits on the table facing them.

Willow What happened? Unless you don't want to talk about it.

Buffy We had a fight and I lost my temper. I really let him have it.

Willow The paper said he fell.

Buffy He fell. Hard.

Xander What was he?

Buffy What?

Xander What was he? A-a demon? A giant bug? Some kind of dark god with the secrets of nouvelle cuisine? I mean, we are talking creature- feature here, right?

Buffy looks at him a moment and then lowers her eyes.

Xander Oh man!

Willow But I'm sure it wasn't your fault. He started it.

Buffy Yeah. That defense only works in six-year-old court, Will.

Xander Court? Wa-wait. Are they charging you with something?

Buffy *shakes her head* I-I don't know. Not yet.

Willow looks at her sympathetically.

Buffy *eyes down* He was a person, and I killed him.

Willow Don't say that!

Buffy *looks up at Willow* Why not? Everyone else is. And it's the truth.

Xander It was an accident.

Buffy I'm the Slayer. I had no right to hit him like that.

Xander Look, Buffy, I don't know what happened exactly. But I do know you. And I know you would never hurt anyone intentionally. Well, you know, unless...

Buffy Unless they were dating my mother?

Xander has no response to that.

Buffy I gotta go.

She gets up and leaves at a quick pace. Xander and Willow watch her go and look at each other for what to do. Cut to the hall. Buffy comes striding around the corner. Ahead of her Giles comes out of a classroom and nods to a man standing outside the door, then sees her coming.

Giles Buffy?

Buffy stops in her tracks, but stays to face him.

Giles Are you alright?

Buffy just looks up at him.

Giles Oh, uh, stupid question, I'm sorry. Look, i-i-if there's anything you need, of course, just, just ask.

Buffy *notices the man guarding the door* What's going on? *walks toward the classroom*

Giles Oh, you needn't worry about that. They're just asking a few questions, your, your, your behavior and... um... uh...

Buffy looks into the room through the door window and sees Detective Stein talking with two of her teachers.

Giles Of course, I told them you, uh... I...

Buffy quickly walks off.

Cut to the library. Willow and Cordelia are at the table. Willow is surfing for information. Giles is behind them in the cage getting together some weapons. Xander is pacing.

Xander Man, this is killing me! That bastard was up to something, I know it. If I could just get my hands on him...

Willow gives him a look.

Xander Earlier this week.

Cordelia I thought you liked him.

Xander *steps over to her* I sometimes like things that are not good for me. Besides, no way, no how does Buffy put the big hurt on an innocent man. Nice Uncle Ted was dirty.

Giles comes out of the cage with his bag in one hand and the crossbow in the other.

Willow We've gotta prove that somehow. Xander, do you have a pen?

Giles sets the bag on the table and puts the crossbow in. Xander opens his satchel to get a pen.

Xander If Buffy has to go to jail because of that creep I'm gonna lose it. He's gotta be in there, Will. Uh, history of domestic violence, a criminal record? *finds a zip-lock bag* Ooo! Cookies!

Giles goes back into the cage for more weapons.

Cordelia I don't get it. Buffy's the Slayer. Shouldn't she have...

Xander What, a license to kill? *takes a bite of a cookie*

Cordelia Well, not for fun. But she's like this superman. Shouldn't there be different rules for her?

Willow Sure, in a fascist society.

Cordelia Right! Why can't we have one of those?

Willow Buffy's not going to jail. It's not fair.

Giles *comes back* Whatever the authorities have planned for her, it can't be much worse than what she's doing to herself. *adds an ax and other stuff to the bag* She's taken a human life. The guilt, it-it's, it's pretty hard to bear, and it won't go away soon.

Cordelia I guess you should know, since you helped raise that demon that killed that guy that time?

Giles Yes. Do let's bring that up as often as possible. *heads back to the cage*

Xander So, Giles, you takin' over tonight? *takes another bite of his cookie*

Giles Um, well, Buffy's not in any shape to patrol. *comes back to the table* The least I can do is pick up the slack. Someone has to. *adds several crosses to the bag*

Willow Giles, you shouldn't go out there without the Slayer.

Giles Until Buffy regains her equilibrium, there **is** no Slayer.

Xander takes another bite of his cookie.

Cordelia If you need help...

Giles No, uh, Buffy needs your help more than I. You carry on investigating, see if you can find out as much about this Buchanan chap as possible. *takes up the bag to go*

Willow Be careful.

Giles I-I will. *leaves*

Willow Ted's got no criminal record! Damn! This guy's like citizen of the year!

Xander Don't sweat it. It'll be fine.

Willow Don't sweat it?

Xander Yeah, cute buddy! *goes over to her* We'll work it out! *ruffles her hair* No worries!

Cordelia What happened to 'this is killing me'?

Xander *shakes his cookie at Cordelia* Worrying isn't gonna solve any problems.

The cookie catches Willow's eye and she grabs it from Xander, breaking off most of it. She turns it in her hand as she looks at it.

Cut to Buffy's house. Cut to the kitchen. Joyce is packing away a bunch of baking pans and bowls. Buffy comes in and stands at the door, fidgeting with her hands.

Buffy Can I help?

Joyce It's done. I've been meaning to clean out this junk for months. Do you, uh, have homework?

Buffy I didn't mean to hurt him.

Joyce I don't wanna talk about this.

Buffy Mom, please, you have to know...

Joyce I can't, not yet. Please, Buffy, just go to your room. Buffy looks like she's about to burst into tears as she turns to go to her room. Joyce waits for a moment, almost crying herself, too, then picks up the box and takes it into the basement.

Cut to the science lab at school. Several cookies are sitting on a scale. Willow is staring into a microscope.

Willow Okay!

Xander What do we know?

Willow Well, apparently the secret ingredient *looks up from the scope* is not love.

Xander What is it then?

Willow I'm not positive, but I think it's Dematorin. It's like a tranquilizer, keeps you all mellow and compliant. It also shares a few components with Ecstasy.

Xander This is evidence! This is real evidence that Ted was some kind of a crook! Buffy's cleared! Willow, you are the best human ever! I adore you!
She gives him a wide smile.

Xander Well, that's the cookies talkin', but you rock!

Cordelia comes into the lab Well, your search finally hit pay dirt. You got some personal records, marriage certificates and an address. *puts the printouts on the table*

Xander Well, let's check it out, get our Slayer back on her feet before somebody else gets hurt.

They all head out of the lab. Willow grabs the printouts on the way.

Cut to the park. Giles is walking slowly past some bushes, weapons bag in hand, when he's startled and spins around holding up a cross.

Giles Ah!

Jenny Yeah, I get that reaction from men all the time.

Giles Jenny! What are you doing here?

Jenny I saw your car back there. I wanted to apologize.

Giles Well, now is... not the best time to go ta...

Jenny No, no, please, please, lemme just, lemme get this out. *exhales* I was sooo... harsh the other day. I am so sorry. I mean, I know how badly you must feel about putting me in danger before, and...

Giles looks past her Right in harm's view now.

A vampire comes out of the bushes behind Jenny and growls at them.

Cut to Buffy's room. She's sitting at her desk facing into the room. She hears a noise.

Buffy Mom? *silence exhales* The hell with this.

She gets up and strides over to her window. She tries to lift the sash, but it's stuck in place. She looks at it and sees the problem.

Buffy She nailed it shut. Well, it's official, this day can't get any worse.

She senses something behind her and spins around to see Ted standing there.

Ted Beg to differ.

Part 4

Buffy's room. She has her back to the window as Ted confronts her.

Buffy You died.

Ted That's right, little lady, you killed me. Do we have something to say about that? Are we sorry?

Buffy What are you?

Ted I'm a salesman! That's what you should've remembered. No matter how you put him down...

He grabs her by the strap of her coveralls and yanks her across the room. She falls into her desk chair.

Ted ...a good salesman always bounces back!

Cut to the park. The vampire roars and attacks. Jenny screams in fright and jumps aside, so the vampire crashes into Giles, grabbing him and pulling him to the ground with him. Giles holds his cross in the vampire's face.

Giles to Jenny MY BAG!

Jenny jumps over to the dropped bag and pulls out the crossbow. Giles struggles with the vampire and punches him in the face, but the vampire isn't fazed.

Giles punches him again harder, and this time the vampire pulls away far enough for Giles to get his foot underneath him to push him off. The vampire lands on his back while Giles scrambles to his feet. The vampire jumps up and starts to wrestle with Giles. Jenny in the mean time has loaded a bolt into the crossbow and anxiously looks for an opening. They turn back and forth, not giving Jenny a clear shot.

Cut to Buffy's room. She gets to her feet as Ted comes for her. She immediately kicks him in the gut and follows up with a left to the jaw. Ted flinches, but doesn't

back off. Buffy punches him twice in the stomach and again in the face, but he isn't fazed, and he grabs her by the throat and backs her into and over her desk, pinning her against the wall.

Ted You see I had to shut down for a while to get you off my back. You should've seen the intern's face when I got up off the table, it was a hoot! Fun's over, though. He wraps his other hand around her throat and begins to squeeze.

Cut to the park. Giles and the vampire continue to wrestle, constantly turning so that Jenny still doesn't have a clear shot. At one point the turning stops, and Jenny decides it's time for her to shoot.

Jenny Say good night, big guy!

The vampire turns Giles around just as Jenny lets the bolt fly, and it hits Giles in the lower left of his back.

Giles AHHH!

Jenny lowers the crossbow and looks at them, shocked by what happened.

Jenny OH, GOD!

The vampire lets go of Giles and steps back. Giles grabs the shaft of the bolt and bends over in pain.

Jenny Oh, no!

She bends down to the bag and searches frantically for another bolt.

Vampire laughs Nice shot, lady!

Giles rends the bolt from his back and jams it into the vampire's chest. Jenny has found another bolt and stands back up to see Giles let go of the bolt. The vampire falls to the ground and explodes into ashes. Jenny stares in shock and relief at what she's just seen.

Cut to Buffy's room. Ted tightens his grip on Buffy's throat. She looks over at her nightstand for anything to use as a weapon and reaches for her nail file that's lying there. She grabs it and stabs Ted in the left forearm with it. Ted yanks his arm away from her, slicing it open on the file as he jerks back. Buffy collapses to the floor.

Ted That wasn't playing fair, missy!

He grabs his left wrist with his right hand and looks down at the wound. There are torn wires and sparks and smoke coming from it.

Ted You're gonna find...

His head jerks to the right when some short circuits result from the cut.

Ted Hell of a day! Makes you feel like you're eighteen again! *his head jerks back* ...that I don't like being disobeyed!

Cut downstairs. Joyce comes out of the basement with another empty box and closes the door behind her. Cut to Buffy's room. Ted hears the sound of the door closing downstairs. He kicks Buffy in the jaw, and knocks her out. He goes to her door, opens it and looks out into the hall. He gives Buffy another look as he pulls his sleeve down over the cut in his arm. His head jerks again from another short.

Ted Don't worry about me and your mother. We're gonna be very happy!

He leaves the room and closes and locks the door behind him.

Cut to Ted's small workshop. Xander looks in through the multi-paned window and sees the place is dark and empty. He breaks one of the panes with a crowbar and uses it to knock out the broken glass.

Willow Careful!

Xander reaches in through the window and opens the door from inside. He looks in as Willow comes to stand in the doorway also, and they scan around the place with their flashlights. Slowly they walk in with Cordelia right behind them.

Xander Let's look around.

Willow looks over the paperwork they have on him.

Cordelia I'll take the back.

Xander Check for cookies.

Willow gives Xander a look.

Xander For evidence!

Willow So far I've counted four marriage certificates.

Xander *looks at some shelves* Any divorce papers?

Willow Not a one.

Xander So either our boy was a Mormon, or...

Willow *notices* Whoa, whoa, 1957! Ted musta married young! Like pre-school young.

Cordelia *comes from the back* Nothing interesting back here. Doesn't look like anybody's worked here, let alone

lived here.

Xander Something's missing here. This doesn't seem like Ted at all.

Cordelia *looks down* Yeah, and this rug? It doesn't go with the rest of the decor.

Xander looks down at the new-looking Oriental rug. He and Willow exchange a look. Xander steps back off of the rug and lifts it back. Underneath is a trap door.

Cut to the Summers kitchen. Joyce starts to fill the box with more cooking pans and dishes. She hears someone coming and assumes it's Buffy.

Joyce Oh. Buffy, I'm sorry... *exhales* I know you didn't mean to...

She looks over expecting to see Buffy and steps back and inhales in fright when she sees Ted standing in the door.

Ted Joyce?

Joyce *whispers* Ted! Is it really you? But you were...

Ted *steps into the kitchen* I'm okay! I'm okay.

Joyce I-I don't understand this! You were dead!

Ted They said I must've been dead for six minutes. They said any longer and it would've caused brain damage.

Joyce Oh, why didn't they tell us?

Ted Nobody knew! They took me to the morgue. I was unconscious for almost a day. An intern found me. It's a miracle, Joyce. A miracle.

Joyce Oh, Ted!

She wraps her arms around him and hugs him close. He hugs her back.

Ted I know.

Joyce *lets go* Oh, my God, Buffy! Oh, Ted, I swear... she never meant to hurt you. You have to believe me.

Ted You don't have to worry about Buffy. *Joyce leans on him* You don't have to worry about anything. Daddy's here.

Cut to Ted's workshop. Xander pushes down the ladder and it unfolds into the basement below. He climbs down the steps and reaches up his hand to steady Cordelia as she follows. Willow comes down behind them. Xander finds a switch on the wall and flips it. The lights come on, and an old record player starts to play lounge music. They all look around. The place is furnished as an apartment.

Cordelia Feels like home. If it's the fifties and you're a psycho.

They continue looking around. Cordelia checks out some magazines on the coffee table. Willow finds a window and pulls aside the curtains. There's just a wall on the other side of the glass. Xander finds a closet door.

Xander Whatcha got in the closet, Ted?

He opens the door and looks inside with his flashlight and can't believe his eyes. He quickly slams the door

shut.

Xander Let's go.

Cordelia But we need evidence!

Xander We got it.

Willow What's in there?

Xander His first four wives.

Willow and Cordelia start back up the stairs. Xander turns off the light switch and follows them up.

Cut to Ted and Joyce in the kitchen.

Ted You know what brought me back, Joyce? It was you. I couldn't go into that light. I had to come back for you. I'm gonna make you so happy!

Joyce *smiles* You should sit down.

Ted I feel fine! Never better! *smiles*

Joyce *exhales* Ted, I think I should talk to Buffy first. Before she sees you, 'cause I'm sure she's...

Ted *angry* Do we have to worry about Buffy right now? How about worrying about Teddy? He's the one who died!

Joyce *taken aback* I-I-I'm, I'm sorry, I just... I... *exhales* I-I don't know what to do!

Ted Don't I always tell you what to do? I'm going to make things right. Then you and I... *shorts and jerks his head right* Want a little gravy with that? *jerks his head back* ...can go away where no one will bother us again.

Joyce *looking worried* Ted, I, I think you might wanna rest for awhile.

Ted *angry* I think you might wanna stop telling me what to do! I don't take orders from women! I'm not wired that way!

His circuitry can be heard shorting out.

Cut to the park. Jenny kneels next to Giles who is sitting on the ground pressing a handkerchief to his wound.

Jenny Oh, God, I am so sorry!

Giles I think I'm alright.

Jenny No, you're just in shock.

Giles No, no, really, I, uh, I don't think it went in too deep. The... advantages of layers of tweed. Better than kevlar.

He lifts the handkerchief off of his wound and Jenny sees the blood.

Jenny *squeamish* Oh, okay, alright, we have to get you to the hospital.

Giles Yes, yes.

Jenny C'mon.

She takes his arm and pulls him up.

Giles Ow! Ow! Ow! Oh!

Jenny Sorry! Sorry!

Giles Let's move slowly, shall we?

Jenny Sorry! Okay...

She goes around to his other side and takes his arm to help support him.

Jenny Okay...

They start to limp away, and Jenny begins to laugh.

Giles What? Wha-what is it?

Jenny Some night, huh? *Giles smirks* Yeah, you really know how to woo a girl back, don't cha?

Giles *laughs* Ow! Ow!

Jenny Hospital.

Giles Yes.

Cut to Buffy's room. She slowly regains consciousness. She coughs as she tries to get up. Cut downstairs. Ted follows Joyce down the hall.

Joyce I-I think I could use a drink. *looks at Ted* Um, to-to-to celebrate! *stops walking*

Ted We should probably be hitting the road.

Joyce Hitting the road?

Ted You're going to love the house. It's furnished just the way you like it. I spent a lot of... *shorts and jerks right* ...telling me what to do! *jerks back* ...time decorating.

Joyce *making an excuse to go* Well, then I'd, I'd probably better go pack.

Ted *takes her arm* I already have your clothes. They're your size, they're always your size. You left me once, but I keep bringing you back. Husband and wife is forever. *shorts* Forever.

Cut to the hall upstairs. Buffy kicks out her doorknob, taking a big chunk of the door with it. Cut downstairs. They hear the noise of the door breaking.

Ted *holding her arm* Let's go.

Joyce Ted, let go, please. *he doesn't* Get off me! *jerks her arm away*

He shoves her into the wall, knocking her out. She slides down to the floor.

Ted Fine then. I'll have to carry you.

He steps over to her and bends down to lift her up when he hears a creaking in the next room. He slowly walks into the foyer, around the stairs and down the hall into the kitchen.

Ted Buffy, come out! I don't stand for this kind of malarkey in my house!

Buffy Uncle Teddy?

He turns to face her, and she swings up into his face with the cast-iron skillet. Ted flies back and hits the floor hard.

Buffy This house is mine!

Ted rolls around to face her, and some of the skin has been torn from his lips and left cheek, revealing the metal underneath. Circuits are shorting and sparking. Buffy stares at him in shock. Ted stands back up.

Ted Buffy? How about a nice game of Parcheesi?

Buffy raises the pan and slams it down onto his head. Ted falls backward and convulses on the floor as his circuits begin to overload. He finally crashes, and his eye-

lids jerk open in a dead stare. Buffy stares at her handiwork in satisfaction.

Cut to the next day. The camera pans down from the tree in front of Buffy's house and over to the porch. Joyce and Buffy are sitting on the bench munching on cut vegetables.

Joyce Do you wanna rent a movie tonight?

Buffy Sounds like fun.

Joyce Just nothing with horror in it. Or romance. Or men.

Buffy I guess we're 'Thelma and Louise'ing it again.

Joyce Mm-hm. Good call. *munches* I still think he's gonna jump out at me. Especially after what the police found in his house. It's just too horrible.

Buffy I wouldn't worry. He's not coming back.

Joyce I wish I could be so sure.

Buffy Trust me. He's on the scrap heap. *gets a look* Of life.

Cut to Sunnydale High. Xander, Buffy, Willow and Cordelia come down the stairs and start down the hall.

Xander So, I'm Ted, the sickly loser. I'm dying and my wife dumps me. I build a better Ted. He brings her back, holds her hostage in his bunker'o'love until she dies. And then he keeps bringing her back, over and over. Now, now that's creepy on a level I hardly knew

existed.

Willow The sad part is the real Ted must've been a genius. There were design features in that robot that pre-date...

Buffy *interrupts* Willow, tell me you didn't keep any parts.

Willow Not any big ones.

Buffy Oh, Will, you're supposed to use your powers for good!

Willow I just wanna learn stuff.

Cordelia Like how to build your own serial killer? Willow frowns.

Xander Uh, it's so hard to rent one nowadays.

Cordelia Can we just drop the subject?

Buffy Absolutely. I plan to forget the whole thing and pick up right where we left off.

She and Willow look into the library through the round door windows and immediately turn around and leave.

Buffy Okay! That's it! I give up! Do I have to sound an air horn every time I walk into a room?

Xander and Cordelia look in, too, smile at each other and walk away.

Buffy I mean, what is it with grownups these days?

The camera closes in on a window and shows Giles and Jenny embracing and kissing.

Bad Eggs

Written by Marti Noxon

Directed by David Greenwalt

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Bad Eggs". It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.05

This episode was originally broadcast on January 12, 1998.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Sunnydale Mall. The low camera angle shows the legs of the people walking past the shops on the ground floor. The camera pans up past a cowboy and his girlfriend to the second floor and over the railing where Buffy and her mother are walking along. Joyce has a shopping bag in each hand, and Buffy has on a small backpack.

Buffy Come on, Mom, please?

Joyce I'm sorry, honey.

Buffy Don't you understand how important this is?

Joyce It's an outfit. An outfit that you may never buy.

Buffy But I looked good in it.

Joyce You looked like a streetwalker.

Buffy But a thin streetwalker. *gets a look from her mom* That's probably not gonna be the winning argument, is it?

Joyce You're just too young to wear that.

Buffy Yeah, and I'm gonna be too young to wear it until I'm too old to wear it.

Joyce That's the idea. *stops and looks around* The stores are closing, and I still need to order the flyers for the opening. *considers, then puts both bags in one hand* Okay. I'll go to the printers and then get our food, *pulls out a slip of paper* you go to the tailor and pick up my outfit from Everyday Woman. *hands Buffy the slip of paper*

Buffy *looks at the paper* Everyday Woman?

Joyce Mm-hm. There's the receipt.

Buffy Why didn't you just go to Muu-Muus R Us?

Joyce Do now, make fun of your mother later. *walks off* Buffy reluctantly starts for the tailors.

Cut to the escalators. Buffy gets on to go to the ground floor. She looks around idly as she descends. She sees the cowboy and his girlfriend come up the other escalator. She keeps looking around, and then notices that

the cowboy's reflection is missing from the mirrors that line the escalator corridor. She looks back at the couple, and he is indeed there. Immediately she turns and runs back up the escalator, weaving between the people coming down on it behind her.

Cut to the walkway. The cowboy and the girl go around a corner. Buffy walks quickly to catch up. Cut to a back hallway. Buffy slowly walks past a bank of payphones by the restrooms and looks around for them, apparently having lost them. She continues down the hall and hears a pinball machine. Reaching the rear door of the arcade she sees that the metal gate has been bent and forced open. She quietly squeezes by the gate and goes in. The place is deserted and quiet except for the sound of the one machine. She walks around one side of a bank of game machines while the camera pans along the other.

Lyle Turn around, baby, I have somethin' to show ya.

Girl Wait a sec. This is my high score.

The camera reaches them. The girl is hammering away at the flipper controls. The cowboy takes off his hat and comes up behind the girl. He takes her hair and sweeps it away from her neck. He's vamped out.

Lyle Well, ain't you just got the prettiest little neck I ever did see.

He moves in for the bite, but is interrupted by Buffy.

Buffy Boy, you guys really never come up with any new lines, do you?

The two of them look over at Buffy, annoyed.

Girl Do you mind? We were talking here.

Buffy *stares down the vampire* But you promised you'd never cheat on me again, honey.

Girl *pulls her bag onto her arm* Um, I better go.

Lyle But I ain't done yet.

She turns to look at him and gasps in fear when she sees his face. She runs from the arcade. The vampire looks back at Buffy.

Lyle Alright, sugar lips. *puts on his hat and faces off with her* Giddy-up!

He throws a punch at Buffy, but she blocks it and punches him in the face and the crotch. He grabs his groin, and Buffy shoves him into another pinball machine. He looks up at her and gives her an evil smile.

Lyle Well, you're a rough one, ain't cha! I like that!

He comes at her again with a swing, which she readily blocks it. He swings again, and she ducks the blow. He grabs her by the arms and throws her into a pinball machine. The plate glass on the top and back panel shatter as she lands on it hard. The cowboy rushes over and grabs her by the straps of her backpack.

Lyle You must be that Slayer I've been hearin' so much about. Lyle Gorch. Pleased to meet cha!

Buffy gets her leg between them and kicks him off of her. He staggers into another machine.

Buffy Pleasure's mine!

She leaps off of the machine at him, and he ducks and rolls out of the way. She spins around to face him and has a stake in her hand, up and ready. Lyle rolls up to his feet, grabbing his hat in midair along the way, and puts it back on. He points at her.

Lyle This ain't over!

He spins around and hightails it out of there.

Buffy Oh, sure. They **say** they'll call.

Cut to the food court. Buffy comes walking in and spots her mom at a table with their food, waiting for her. Joyce stares at the food, looking bored and watching it get cold. She looks up as Buffy arrives.

Buffy Oh, bliss. *sits* Mall food. *looks up*

Joyce Buffy?

Buffy *attentive* Mom?

Joyce Where's my dress?

Buffy *confused* Your dr...? Oh. *winces* Oh, God.

Joyce Let me guess: you were distracted by a boy.

Buffy *cringes* Technically.

Joyce *leans back* Buffy...

Buffy *exhales* Look, I-I can go get it right now.

Joyce They're closed. I'll just have to fit it in tomorrow.

Buffy Sorry.

Joyce *sternly* A little responsibility is all I ask. Honestly, don't you ever think about anything besides boys and clothes?

Buffy Saving the world from vampires?

Joyce *crosses her arms and shakes her head* I swear, sometimes I don't know what goes on in your head.

Buffy just looks back at her.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part 1

The utility closet at Sunnydale High. The light is off. Xander and Cordelia are sucking some serious face.

Cordelia Xander? *continues kissing*

Xander Shhh-sh-sh. *continues kissing*

Cordelia It's just that *kiss* I'm worried we're gonna miss class. *continues kissing*

He reaches up for the light string and yanks it to turn it on. They step back a bit from each other.

Xander You know what? This would work a lot better for me if you didn't talk.

Cordelia Well, it'd work a lot better for me with the lights off.

She grabs the string and yanks it. She puts her arms around him again and starts to kiss him, but Xander doesn't kiss back. He yanks the string again and the light comes back on. They step away from each other again.

Xander Are you saying that you can't look at me when we do... whatever it is we do?

Cordelia No, it's not that I can't, it's just more... I don't want to.

Xander That's great! That's just dandy! We're repulsed by each other, we, *indicates the door* we hide from our friends...

Cordelia Well, I should hope so! Please!

Xander *nods* All in all this is not what I'd call a big self-esteem booster.

Cordelia Tell me about it! *looks him over* Just look at you! And those clothes. Where did you get those shoes?!

Xander Okay, you know what? I don't need this.

Cordelia Ditto! Like a hole in the head!

They both reach for the doorknob, and their hands meet there. They hesitate a moment, and then wrap their arms around each other again and kiss even more passionately. Xander cradles her head in his hand as they slowly sink to the floor. He reaches up for the string and gives it a good yank.

Cut to teen health class. The instructor is writing 'SEX' on the board.

Mr. Whitmore S-E-X. Sex. *faces the class* The sex drive in the human animal is intense. How many of us have lost countless productive hours plagued by unwanted sexual thoughts and feelings?

Xander Yes! *raises his hand and nods* Mm-hm.

Willow gives him a concerned look.

Mr. Whitmore That was a rhetorical question, Mr. Harris, not a poll.

Several students giggle. Xander lowers his hand.

Xander Oh.

Cordelia looks away from him and stares down at her book.

Mr. Whitmore Of course, for teenagers such as yourselves these feelings are even more overwhelming. With all sorts of hormones surging...

Willow is clearly nervous, and looks back and forth between Xander and giving her attention to the teacher.

Mr. Whitmore ...through your bodies, compelling you to action, it's often difficult to remember that there **are** negative consequences to, uh, having sex. Would anyone care to offer one such consequence?

Cordelia raises her hand, and Mr. Whitmore indicates to her, giving her the floor.

Cordelia Well, that depends. Are you talking about sex **in** the car or **out** of the car? *Mr. Whitmore looks confused* Because I have a friend, not me, that was in a Miata at, parked at the top of the hill, and then she kicked the gearshift, and, and...

Mr. Whitmore *interrupts* Yeah, I, I was thinking of something a little more commonplace, Ms. Chase.

Xander raises his hand, and Mr. Whitmore indicates to him. Willow stares at him.

Xander You wanna talk negative consequence? What about the heartbreak of halitosis? *Cordelia looks at him and he looks back* I mean, a girl may seem spiffy, but if she ignores her flossing the bloom is definitely off the rose.

Cordelia immediately raises her hand again. Mr. Whitmore exhales and gives her permission to speak again.

Cordelia Like that compares to kissing a guy who thinks the Hoover technique is a **big** turn-on.

Willow looks back and forth between the two of them, very confused. The exchange begins to draw muffled comments from among the other students.

Xander What about having to feign interest in her vapid little chit-chat just so you can get some touch?

Cordelia is incensed.

Mr. Whitmore Now. Another consequence of sexual activity? Anyone?

Cordelia raises her hand again.

Mr. Whitmore Uh, else?

Willow raises her hand. He indicates that she should speak.

Willow How about pregnancy? That would be a major one, right?

Mr. Whitmore Thank you, Ms. Rosenberg! *Willow smiles smugly* Among teens unwanted pregnancy is the number one negative consequence of sexual activity. So, as discussed last week, I present you with... *takes a sheet off of two trays of eggs* ...your offspring. *Willow smiles* You will split into parenting teams. You and your partner will share equally in the daily task of raising in-

dicates the trays your egg. *takes a tray to distribute* Now, please choose a partner and come pick up your children.

Willow waves at Xander, but he ignores her and gets up to go over to Cordelia. She sees him coming and immediately grabs the shirtsleeve of the boy sitting across from her to get his attention.

Cordelia You wanna have a baby?

Xander is disappointed. He sees another girl walk up to the second tray of eggs still on the teacher's desk and approaches her.

Xander Hey. *chuckles* I know we just met, but isn't that Xander Jr. you're holding?

The girl giggles and smiles and turns around to walk away. Xander gives Cordelia another glance, then follows the other girl.

Cut to the library. Buffy walks over to the card catalog, pulls out a drawer and begins going through the cards. Giles is in the cage behind her. Xander opens the door for Willow and they come on.

Willow Buffy! How come you weren't in class?

Buffy Vampire issues. Did Mr. Whitmore notice I was tardy?

Xander I think the word you're searching for is 'absent'.

Willow Tardy people show.

Buffy Right.

Willow And, yes, he did notice, so he wanted me to give you this. *hands her an egg*

Buffy *rolls the egg around in her hands* As far as punishments go this is fairly abstract.

Willow No, it's your baby! *smiles*

Buffy *confused* Okay, I get it even less.

Xander Well, you know, it's the whole 'sex leads to responsibility' thing, which I personally don't get. You gotta take care of the egg. It's a baby. You gotta keep it safe and teach it Christian values.

Willow *looks at Xander* My egg is Jewish.

Xander Then teach it that Dreidel song.

Willow smiles at that.

Buffy I can't do this! I can't take care of things! I killed my Giga Pet. Literally, I sat on it and it broke.

She sets the egg down on top of the catalog, moans and quickly walks over to a book re-shelving cart.

Willow You'll do fine!

Xander Yeah, the only thing that stresses me is when do we tell them that they're adopted?

Buffy I'll just lay that one off on my partner. *looks up, worried* Who'd I get?

Willow Well, there were an uneven number of students, and you didn't show, so...

Buffy *in shocked disbelief* I'm a single mother?

Xander *nods* No man of her own.

Buffy Do you know what this says about me? That I am doomed to lead my mother's life! *paces back to them* How deeply scary is that?

Xander How 'bout this: it says nothing, it means nothing, this whole egg experiment thing is completely pointless!

Giles *in the cage* Success! *comes out with a book* At last. Your playmate is a fellow of repute, it seems. He moves to set the book on top of Buffy's egg. She inhales in fright and quickly snatches it away. Willow and Xander look on in wide-eyed surprise. Giles points out a picture in the book.

Giles That's, um, Lyle Gorch, and that one's his brother, Tector. They're from Abilene. They, uh, they made their reputation by massacring an entire Mexican village in 1886. *takes off his glasses to clean them*

Buffy Friendly little demons.

Giles That was before they became vampires. She raises her eyebrows at Giles. Willow and Xander exchange a look.

Giles B-but, um, the good news is that they're... not amongst the great thinkers of our times. I doubt if they're up to much. They're probably just drawn here by the, uh, Hellmouth's energy. *puts his glasses back on*

Xander 'Nuff said! I propose Buffy slays 'em. All in favor? *raises his hand*

Willow *raises her hand* Aye!

Giles I-I don't think you should underestimate them. I mean, y-you may need to have some help if, if, if, if... *notices the eggs* Why do you all have eggs?

Willow *smiles* Hey, maybe you can have Angel help you find the Gorches.

Giles *still confused* Yes! Yes, yes, that's not a bad idea. Strength in numbers.

Xander Oh, right. I see a lotta hunting getting done in **that** scenario.

Buffy Please. Like Angel and I are just helpless slaves to passion. Grow up!

Cut to the park. Angel and Buffy are locked in a passionate kiss. Buffy breaks off.

Buffy I really...

Angel I know.

They continue kissing. After a few seconds Buffy breaks off again.

Buffy You know, this isn't hunting in the classical sense. We should...

Angel You're right.

They kiss some more. A few moments later they break off again.

Angel Okay.

Buffy Okay. *kiss* Okay.

They walk side by side for a few paces.

Buffy You see anything?

Angel No.

Buffy Okay. *faces him* Enough hunting.

They begin their passionate kissing with renewed vigor. The camera pans away from them over to a wall among the trees. The Gorch brothers are crouched on top, watching them.

Tector That the Slayer?

Lyle Yep.

Tector Ain't that Angelus with her?

Lyle Yep.

Tector Well, how come she ain't slayin'? And how come he's about to make me blush?

Lyle Well, I don't know, Tector. And how come you's always askin' me so many stupid questions?

Tector So, you wanna take him, or, uh, you want me to, Lyle?

Lyle I say we leave it. Wait till she's alone.

Tector Why? You scared?

Lyle Nope. I could whip 'em both right now if I wanted to.

Tector Then why don't ya?

Lyle *looks at Tector* 'Cause I got me a plan. I'm the one that does the thinkin', 'member?

Tector Yeah. You do the thinkin', Lyle. That is definitely your department. So why don't you tell me again why we can't kill 'em now?

Fade to black. Cut to Buffy's room. She walks in and over to her bed.

Buffy Okay, little egg dude. *sits and opens her egg diary* Let's see. *reads* Feeding? Check. *marks* Burping? Eeeew... Check *marks* Diapers *looks at the egg's basket* Sort of, in theory, I guess. *marks*

She puts the pen in the binder coil.

Buffy Okay.

She sets the notepad down and crawls under the covers. She yawns and looks at her egg in its basket on her nightstand.

Buffy Good night, Eggbert.

She taps her egg gently and then reaches up to turn off the light. She pulls up the covers and settles in to sleep. Cut outside the house later that night. Cut to Buffy's room. The camera pans across her stuffed animals arranged on one side of her bed, past her and over to the egg. The clock reads 2:03am. The egg is rocking back and forth. The camera closes in on it. A small hole has almost been chipped out. The plug breaks open, and a long, thin tentacle begins to make its way out. It angles over towards Buffy and branches out into several fingers as it makes its way over to her.

Part 2

Buffy's room at night. The tentacle continues over to Buffy. One of its fingers goes into her ear. Another one lays itself across her left eye. A third one covers her right eye. Another goes around her neck and presumably into her other ear. Cut to a view of her with the egg in the foreground. The tentacles are now just lying on her face. The focus of the camera goes off of Buffy and onto the egg in its basket.

Cut to the sewers the next morning. The Gorch brothers are relaxing and waiting out the sunlight that is visible at the end of the tunnel. Tector is having breakfast. Lyle is lying back with his feet up and has his face covered with his hat.

Tector I'm tired of rat. How come we can't stay in a nice place? *puts the dead rat down* A motel or somethin'? Maybe, uh... Maybe one with an ice machine.

Lyle 'Cause we got to keep a low profile till we get this Slayer business taken care of.

Tector Well, how come Angelus is gettin' all cuddly with her, Lyle? I mean, does the man have no code?

Lyle *stirs* Tector... *leans up on his elbow* You gonna be pesterin' me with these questions all damn day?

Tector I just don't like it here. Ain't a decent whore in the whole city limits.

Lyle So, this is the thanks I get? *stands up* Well. Don't I take care of ya? Didn't I near raise ya myself? Hmm? Burden that you were, maybe I shoulda left you on that doorstep when Momma blew town.

Tector Don't say that, Lyle.

Lyle Now I'm takin' care of this.

Tector You afraid of the girl?

Lyle I'm just playin' it safe. We're just gonna follow her around a little while, find our time. 'Cause this ain't over.

Tector *smiles to himself* I think you **are** afraid of the Slayer.

Lyle *nods* Alright. I'm gonna beat you like a redheaded stepchild. *points* Throw your ass out in that sunlight. C'mon.

Tector You think you can?

Lyle *goads him on* Giddy-up, son.

He adjusts his hat and coat while he waits for Tector to stand up. Tector adjusts his hat, too, and smile at his brother. He rears back and takes the first swing, hitting Lyle squarely in the jaw. Lyle looks at his brother, nods and punches him hard in the face. Tector has to take a couple of steps backward to keep from losing his balance.

Tector *laughs* Oh, man!

He comes back and punches Lyle in the gut. Lyle doubles over for an instant, then straightens up and gives Tector a wide smile.

Lyle Yippe-ki-yay, matey!

He throws another punch at his brother.

Cut to Buffy's room in the morning. The camera pans across her stuffed animals to her face. The egg's tentacle is gone. Her alarm goes off, and she wakes. She reaches out to hit the snooze button. She runs her hand through her hair, sits up and moans.

Buffy Oh... Oh, God...

She gets up out of bed. The hole in the eggshell has sealed itself.

Cut to the kitchen. Joyce takes a sip of her coffee and sets the cup back down. She goes over to the toaster as Buffy comes in. Buffy sets her egg down on the island and walks around to where her mother was sitting. She takes the cup and sips the coffee as she sits down on the stool. Joyce brings the toast over to the island on a plate.

Joyce At least eat something if you're gonna drink that.

Buffy Not that hungry.

Joyce breaks off a piece of toast and munches it. She indicates the egg.

Joyce How's the parenting going?

Buffy Fine.

Joyce Are you sure your egg is secure in that?

Buffy *looks up at her* Did I ask for backseat mommying?

Joyce *gives her a look* Are we a little touchy this mornin'?

Buffy No, I just feel all funky.

Joyce Hmm. *feels her forehead* You don't have a fever.

Buffy Oh, no, it's not that, I just... I didn't sleep well.

Joyce *bends down to her daughter* What's the matter? Your egg keep you up all night?

Buffy *gives her mom a look* You're killing me. Parenting's a pain!

Joyce *straightens up and smiles smugly* Wait till it starts dating.

Buffy lets out an exasperated breath, picks up her egg and leaves.

Cut to the library. Giles is returning some books to the shelves. He walks out from behind the stacks to see Xander, Willow and Buffy looking up at him from the bottom of the steps.

Giles Oh! Why are you three hanging about? Don't you have classes to go to?

Willow Teen health got canceled.

Xander Mr. Whitmore's out. Couldn't find an egg sitter or something.

Buffy and Willow walk up a few steps.

Giles Well, then, can you give me a hand?

Buffy and Willow No.

They sit down on the steps. Xander hops up the steps to the mezzanine level.

Xander Sure! *starts to shelve some books*

Giles How did the, um... hunt go last night, Buffy?

Buffy No go.

Giles Uh, 'no', 'no' you didn't go, or, or, or you were unsuccessful?

Buffy No Gorches.

Xander Apparently Buffy has decided the problem with the English language is all those pesky words. *looks at her* You... Angel... big... smoochies?

Buffy Shut... up.

Giles I-it's true, Buffy, you and Willow do seem a little sluggish. Are you quite sure everything's alright?

Buffy and Willow exchange a look.

Willow Maybe something we ate.

Xander Or perhaps it's the burden of parenthood. Notice how seriously you two have taken this egg thing. *the girls clutch their egg baskets* While I, in turn, have, uh, well, chosen a *takes his egg out of his shirt pocket* more balanced approach. *starts tossing it around*

Willow *concerned* Xander, maybe you shouldn't...

Xander *interrupts* That's exactly what I'm talking about. *tosses* You can't stress over every little thing! *tosses* A child picks up on that. Which is a one-way ticket *tosses* to neurotic city.

He catches and tosses the egg again, but misses the next catch. The girls gasp in fright as the egg hits the floor. Giles lets out a yelp, too, but then stares at the egg curiously. It just wobbles to a stop, unbroken.

Willow *surprised* It didn't break! *suspicious* How come it didn't break?

Xander *realizes he's been found out* Which is another secret to **conscientious egg care** pot of scalding water and about eight minutes.

Willow You boiled your young?

Xander Yeah! I know it sounds cruel, but sometimes you gotta be cruel to be kind! I mean, you can bet that little Xander here is thick skinned now.

Xander reaches down for the egg and picks it up.

Giles Technically that would be cheating, yes?

He reaches up to put a book on a high shelf. At the back of the shelf there's an egg.

Xander No! It's like a short cut. You know, when you run a race?

Buffy That would also be cheating.

Willow *shakes her head* You should be ashamed.

Giles I suppose there is a sort of... Machiavellian ingenuity to your transgression.

Xander I resent that! *gets a look from Giles* Or possibly thank you.

Cordelia comes walking into the library.

Cordelia Figures you three would all be hanging in the

dungeon while something major's going on at Sunnydale High.

Xander And what would that be, Cordelia? Barrette Appreciation Day? *goes back to his shelving*

Cordelia Mr. Whitmore didn't show today.

Buffy That news is of the past.

Cordelia He's missing? *the girls all look at Giles* Presumed dead?

Giles Presumed by whom?

Cordelia Well, me! *crosses her arms*

Giles I think we should give him a few hours before we give up on him completely.

Cordelia Well, I think we should look around, don't you Xander?

Xander *looks at her and shakes his head* It can wait.

Cordelia Well, his body could fall out of a closet somewhere.

Xander looks at the others nervously.

Cordelia So we should check some closets to see if he's in a closet?

Xander *points at her* You're right. There could be a closet. Let's go.

He points at Buffy and Willow as he comes down the stairs.

Xander You guys look for more clues. We'll meet back here.

He takes Cordelia by the arm and guides her out of the library.

Buffy *unenthusiastically* We'll get right on it.

Willow *staring after them* Are they getting weirder? Have you noticed the weirdness of them? *looks at Buffy*

Buffy They're weird. *to Giles* Should I have guilt about not looking for Mr. Whitmore?

Giles I-I'd rather you conserve your strength for hunting the Gorches.

Buffy I'll be fine by tonight. Maybe I'll sweep the cemetery?

Giles *concerned* Well, be careful, i-i-if you're still feeling a little sluggish.

Buffy No worries.

Willow And Angel's helping you, right?

Buffy He does what he can.

Cut to the cemetery that night. Buffy and Angel are engaged in a passionate kissing session once again.

Buffy Ahh... *kisses breaks off* As much as I hate to say this, we should really go kill bad guys. *kiss*

Angel It's late. You should really get home. Hmm? *kiss*

Buffy What about the Gorches? *kiss*

Angel I'll hunt. *kiss*

Buffy Really? *pulls back and smiles* You'd do that?

Angel Not like I have an early day tomorrow.

Buffy Mm, *kiss true. they walk* I still have to go home and fill out my egg diary.

Angel Your what?

Buffy Oh, I told you, that faux parenting gig we're doing at school. *faces him* Like I'm really planning to have kids anytime soon. Uh, maybe **someday**, in the future, when I'm done having a life, but... right now kids would be just a little too much to deal with.

Angel I wouldn't know. *looks at her* I don't... Well, you know, I, I can't.

Buffy Oh. *looks away briefly, then back* That's okay, um... I-I figured there were all sorts of things vampires couldn't do. You know, like work for the Telephone Company, or volunteer for the Red Cross, or... have little vampires.

Angel So you don't think about the future?

Buffy No.

Angel Never?

Buffy No.

Angel *swallows* You really don't care what happens a year from now? Five years from now?

Buffy Angel, when I look into the future, a-a... all I see is you! All I want is you.

Angel I know the feeling.

He reaches down to kiss her. He finds her lips and she responds. They kiss more and more passionately. The camera pans away from them and across a gravestone that reads 'In Loving Memory'.

Cut to the halls at school that night. The night watchman comes walking along and checks a door. Finding it properly locked he continues on. He stops at the hall intersection and looks each way. To his right he sees the door to the basement standing ajar, and goes over to it. He opens it wider, looks in and enters. Cut into the basement. The watchman comes down the steps making no attempt to be quiet. The doors to the boiler room are open, and he steps in. He tries the light switch, but it doesn't work.

Watchman Hello? Is anybody in here?

He pulls out his Maglite, turns it on and continues into the room. The lights on the boiler controls are active and the fires are burning. When he's walked past the boilers he sees a huge hole in the concrete wall behind a bunch of stacked up barrels and boxes. He slowly walks over to the stack with his flashlight held over his shoulder like a bat, lighting the way but ready to swing if need be. Finding no one there he puts his Maglite down and pushes aside a stack of boxes blocking the way. He can see the hole clearly now, and a tunnel continues on beyond it. He picks up his flashlight again and holds it ready like before. He steps up to look through the hole. Behind him Mr. Whitmore appears holding a pick

and slams him across the back with it, making him fall through the hole and knocking him out. Mr. Whitmore climbs through the hole after the watchman.

Cut to Buffy's room. She climbs in through the window, and her egg rocking in its basket immediately grabs her attention. She stares at it a second, and then comes over to it. She bends down to look at it closely, not having expected it to hatch and curious about it. She gets closer and closer, staring at it intently. The top half of the shell cracks into thirds. Suddenly two of the pieces fly away while the third just falls back, and she sees a purplish-gray thing with tentacles is curled up inside of it. It jumps out at her, and she reacts instantly. It misses her, lands on the floor and quickly crawls under her bed. Buffy is stunned, but quickly regains her composure, and reaches down into her wicker laundry basket for her iron. She stands back up and looks at the darkness under her bedspread. Slowly she approaches her bed and kneels down. She quickly raises the spread and looks underneath with the iron held ready to smash anything that might come at her. Nothing. She stands back up and scans around her room. Whatever it was, it's nowhere to be seen. Suddenly it falls onto her shoulder from above. It tries to crawl down her back, but she grabs it and flings it off. It crawls quickly behind her desk and along the wall past her bookcase toward her bed. She looks for a different weapon, and grabs a pair of scissors from her desk. The creature, in the mean time, has disappeared again. She approaches her bed with the scissors held ready to stab. Behind her the hatchling crawls up the wall. Buffy senses it and swings around with the scissors and stabs it dead center. She pulls it off of the wall, impaled on the scissors, and slams it to the floor. She steps on its tail to hold it down while she stabs it several more times. Satisfied of its demise she drops the scissors and crawls backward to lean against her bed. Her next thought is to call Willow. She frantically grabs for her phone on the nightstand and knocks it and the clock to the floor. She grabs the receiver and nervously taps in the numbers.

Buffy Come on! Pick up!

Willow *after the first ring* Hello?

Buffy Willow! Are you okay?

Willow *cut to her* Why shouldn't I be?

Buffy *cut to her* Your egg! I-is it doing anything?

Willow *cut to her confused* Doing what?

Buffy Break it! *cut to her* Right now! I want you to smash it with something heavy!

Willow Buffy, what...

Buffy My egg! It went... It went postal on me! The thing hatched, and it, it sprung this creepy-crawly thing, and it attacked me!

Willow *cut to her* Are you okay?

Buffy *cut to her* Yeah, no, I'm fine, but, but your egg!

Willow *cut to her* I-is totally normal. Uh, I put it in the fridge.

Buffy Oh.

Willow Maybe it's a trap. Something the Gorch bothers planted for you?

Buffy *cut to her* Maybe. Yeah, uh... I'm sorry, I shouldn't have woken you. Uh, g-go back to sleep.

Willow *cut to her* You sure?

Buffy *cut to her* Yeah! Yeah, I'm, I'm better. I'm, I'm fine.

Willow *cut to her* Okay. I'll see ya tomorrow.

Cut to Buffy. She lowers the phone and turns it off.

Cut to Willow. She puts her phone back in its cradle. The two halves of the empty eggshell are covered on the inside with a grayish-blue slime. The camera pulls in for a close-up of Willow's face. She stares blankly off into space.

Part 3

Buffy's room at night. She puts her phone and its cradle back on her nightstand behind her clock. It's 2:45am. Suddenly she hears her door open and her mother coming in.

Joyce What's going on in here?

Thinking quickly Buffy grabs the cloth from her former egg's basket and lays it over the dead creature.

Joyce Buffy, who are you talking to at this ho...?

Buffy scrambles to her feet and faces her mother, eyes wide with surprise.

Joyce Why are you dressed? Where exactly do you think you're going at this hour of the night?

Buffy Nowhere.

Joyce Who was that on the phone? *comes in further*

Buffy Um, uh, Willow. *exhales* She wasn't feeling well today, so I was just calling to make sure she was feeling better.

Joyce *crosses her arms* You're gonna have to do much better than that, young lady.

Buffy I had a bad dream?

Joyce Oh, no, you're about to have a bad dream! *comes to stand next to her* A dream that you are grounded for the rest of your natural life.

Cut to the next morning in their Jeep pulling to a stop in front of the school.

Joyce Which means: no after school socializing, no Bronze, no nothing. Not until I say so. Do you understand?

Buffy Yeah, but I think you're...

Joyce *interrupts* Now, school ends at 2:30. I want you to go to the library at 2:33 and study until I pick you up there at 5:30. Understood?

Buffy Yeah.

Joyce Good. Have a nice day.

Buffy undoes her seatbelt, grabs her backpack and gets out of the car. She closes the door behind her and pulls on the backpack while she watches her mother drive off. She climbs the stairs up from the street and goes over to Cordelia who just finished talking with a friend. She has a teddy bear backpack.

Buffy Nice bear. Listen is your...

Cordelia *interrupts* Hey, I'll have you know that my father brought this bear back from Gstaad years ago. Then all of a sudden these trendoids everywhere started sporting them. So I'm totally not wearing it. Then I thought, hey, I'm the one who started this nationwide craze! What am I ashamed of?

Buffy Okay, Soliloquy Girl, I just wanted to ask about your egg.

Cordelia My egg?

Buffy Yeah. Your egg. The one Mr. Whitmore gave you.

Cordelia It's in my bear.

Buffy So, your egg isn't acting odd or anything?

Cordelia It isn't acting anything. It's an egg, Buffy, it doesn't emote. *sees another friend Shanisse! goes away* Is that your real hair?

Buffy watches her go. Willow puts her hand on Buffy's shoulder, and she turns to face her.

Willow Hey!

Buffy Hi!

Cut to Xander munching on a candy bar. He looks down at it as he chews hard.

Xander Mm. Cardboardy!

He sits on a wall and discards the rest of the candy bar. He opens his satchel and digs through it for his egg. He pulls it out, looks at it and lets out a breath.

Xander Sorry, Junior, but a man's gotta eat.

He taps the egg a few times on the wall next to him and then rolls it back and forth under his hand. *Cut to Buffy and Willow walking across the grass toward Xander.* Behind them Cordelia catches up as she looks through a book.

Willow So, was there any more hatchling activity last night?

Buffy No. Uh, you were probably right. It was just a trap from them set for me. And, *sees Cordelia* mm, *indicates her* everyone else's egg seemed perfectly normal.

Xander Did you bring the thing that attacked you.

Buffy Yeah. Giles wants to see it. He's in full research mode.

Willow Okay. Well, bring it to the science lab, and I'll get Giles, and we'll analyze it.

The camera pans around them and focuses on Willow's lower back.

Buffy Great. You know, I always say that a day without an autopsy... is like a day without sunshine.

The camera shows a hatchling attached to Willow's back under her shirt. Cut to Xander. He smiles and nods at the girls when he sees them coming.

Xander Hey.

He holds up the egg, ready to take a bite. There's a purplish-gray creature still inside, dead from being boiled. Xander looks at it just as he's about to bite into it and freaks out. He screams as he tosses the egg away from him.

Cut to the science lab. The hatchling is laid out in a dissection tray. Xander taps his fingers on the table as he and Buffy look at it.

Xander Can I just say Gyughhh!

Buffy I see your 'Gyughhh!' and raise you a Nyaghhh!

Cordelia What is it?

Xander We don't know what it is, Cordelia, that's why we're here. Capisce?

Cordelia 'Capisce'? What are you, world traveler now? Willow comes into the lab.

Buffy Hey, where's Giles? I know he won't wanna miss this.

Willow He said to get started. He'll be by as soon as possible.

Xander So, okay! Get started, Buffy! Dissect it or something. *hands her a scalpel*

Buffy *takes the blade* Me? Why do I have to dissect it?

Xander Uh, because you're the Slayer?

Buffy And I slayed! My work here is done. *puts the scalpel on the table in front of Xander*

Xander Oh, no, I almost **ate** one of those things. I think I've fulfilled my gross-out quota for the decade.

Willow Guys...

She takes the scalpel and starts the dissection. The camera pans around Cordelia to her bear.

Xander Do we even know what to look for? I mean, how are we supposed to figure out what this thing is?

The bear's right eye pops out and a tentacle emerges.

Buffy Turn it over. Maybe we missed its ID bracelet.

The bear's left eye pops out and another tentacle emerges.

Xander So, now I guess, uh, we know what happened to Mr. Whitmore.

Cut to them talking.

Cordelia He saw this and ran away?

Buffy Try best case scenario.

Willow It's possible that Mr. Whitmore wasn't harmed. Maybe the offspring simply used him to return to the mother bezoar.

Cordelia leans over to pick something up.

Xander Yeah. Maybe he... *turns to Willow* What?

Cordelia straightens back up holding a metal bar, which she wields like a baseball bat.

Buffy What's a bez...

Cordelia hits Buffy in the face with the bar, knocking her down and out.

Xander Cordy! What...

Willow picks up a microscope and hits Xander over the head with it just as he looks back at her again. The screen goes black.

Cut to the utility closet. It's pitch dark inside. Willow opens the door, and she and Cordelia drag Xander in. They heave him in, and he falls to the floor. They step out to let two boys drag Buffy in as well, and they let her drop unceremoniously. They leave the closet, and Willow closes and locks the door.

Cut to the groundkeeper's shed. Willow opens the double doors and walks in. Cordelia follows her, and a line of students is right behind. Willow walks up to a post where a couple of dozen picks, axes, hoes and shovels are kept. She grabs a pickaxe and heads back out of the door. Cordelia grabs a hoe and follows. Student after student, and even an occasional teacher, grabs a digging tool and follows Willow.

Cut to the hall outside the basement door. Willow walks up to the open door and heads right in. The line of students is right behind her. Cut inside the basement. They come down the stairs and head into the boiler room. One by one they step through the hole in the wall and follow the tunnel down. Mr. Whitmore is standing by the hole keeping guard.

Cut outside the school. It's gotten dark. Cut to the library. Joyce walks in and looks around.

Joyce Buffy?

She continues in and keeps looking.

Joyce Hello?

Giles *pokes his head out of the cage* Hello?

Joyce *faces him* Oh! Mr. Giles, hi. Uh, I-I was looking for Buffy. She, she was supposed to wait for me here.

Giles Well, sh-she hasn't been in. I-I've been waiting to talk to her myself about, uh, uh... h-history texts.

Joyce *leans on the card catalog* That is just the last straw!

Giles I-I'm sure she didn't mean to, uh...

Joyce She never means to, but somehow she always manages to anyway. Do you have children, Mr. Giles?

Giles Um...

Joyce *whispers* Sh-should I be whispering?

Giles *whispers* No. *speaks* A-a-and, uh, no, I, I haven't any children. A-although, uh, sometimes I feel as though I do, uh, working here...

Joyce They can be such a... *considers her words* Oh, uh, I-I-I don't want to say 'burden', but, uh... Uh, actually I kind of **do** want to say 'burden'! *smiles*

Giles *smiles* Feel free!

Joyce Oh, they're just so irresponsible.

Giles Sometimes.

Joyce *notices the books lying on the catalog* 'Bristow's Demon Index', 'Hell's Offspring'?

Giles *takes the books* A hobby of mine, uh, but, uh, having nothing to do with Buffy in any way.

He takes the books into the cage, stows them on a shelf

and then comes back out.

Giles Um, you say Buffy told you that she'd be here all afternoon?

Joyce Well, yes. I-i-is something wrong?

Giles Oh, I'm sure it's nothing. *pulls open a drawer hears a noise in the hall* What was that?

Joyce Mm, probably the janitor.

She faces the door to look. Giles takes a hatchling out of the card catalog drawer and sets it on Joyce's back. She screams as she tries to reach around her back and falls to the floor. Giles stares blankly off into space.

Part 4

The hall outside the library. Giles and Joyce come walking out into the hall staring blankly ahead and join the line of students and teachers heading for the basement. Cut to the utility closet. Buffy has regained consciousness and reaches up for the light string and gives it a yank. She takes a quick look around and then looks down at Xander, still out cold on the floor.

Buffy Hey! Xander! *slaps his cheek* Hey! You alright?

Xander *wakes, moans and blinks his eyes* Last time Cordy dragged me in here it was a lot nicer.

Buffy What?

Xander Uh... *fully awake now* Huh? Nothing. Uh, crazy talk. Head trauma.

Buffy *helps him sit up* Tell me about it. I'm gonna have a *feels her head* big bump.

Xander Uh, I'm gonna have a peninsula! *points at his head* Here, *she helps him up* what, what the hell's goin' on? Cordy and Willow?

They look around the room.

Buffy Something to do with the hatchlings, I'm sure of it.

She tries the door but finds it locked.

Xander What, are they possessed?

Buffy I don't know. But they sure wanted us out of the way.

Xander *holding his head* Well, why not kill us? *lets go of his head* Why, uh, why drag us in here?

Buffy spots two eggs on the floor. Xander follows her gaze. One of them is rocking.

Xander Oh. *steps back* Bad now.

Buffy looks around for something heavy and sees a toolbox. She picks it up from the shelf, raises it and smashes it onto the two eggs. A dark blue slime squirts out around the toolbox. Then she kicks open the door.

Xander *holds his head again* Thank you. *moans and follows her out*

Cut to the library. Buffy and Xander come rushing in.

Buffy Giles!

Xander Giles!

They look around, but find the place deserted.

Xander He must be out somewhere.

Buffy Well, he picked a helluva time to get a life.

Xander What are we gonna do?

Buffy We can't fight these things until we know something about 'em.

Xander *thinks* Alright, Willow said something. Uh, a name. What was it?

Buffy A bozo! Not a bozo.

Xander A bezoar.

Buffy That's it! Okay, so now... we look it up?

Xander In what?

Buffy A book?

They look over at the counter where there are several books lying open and go over to them.

Buffy Giles said he was gonna try to find something... She takes the book on top that's open to a picture and turns it around to look at it. The sketch is of a disk-shaped, tentacled monster.

Buffy And I'd say he found something.

Xander moves around her to have a look himself, steps on half an eggshell and looks down at it.

Xander I'd say something found him.

Cut to the basement. Giles and Joyce lead a line of students to the hole and step through. They head down the tunnel and come out into another room deeper underground. Giles heads to the side ramp that leads to a slightly lower level and takes a crowbar handed to him by Mr. Whitmore, who has a box of new bezoar eggs in his other arm. The camera pans across the room, past Cordelia wiping off eggs being handed to her from below by another student, to Willow pounding on the concrete floor with a sledgehammer. Joyce goes down the other side and takes a hoe held out to her by the watchman. She starts banging it on the floor as the watchman goes back to his post. Cut to a close-up of the floor. A large chunk has broken off and appears to be floating on something. Willow and Joyce keep pounding on it to break it up into smaller pieces. Cut to a student

pulling an egg out from between some larger gaps in the floor. He hands it up to Cordelia, who wipes it off in a towel and hands it to Mr. Whitmore, who places it in a wooden box filled with wood shavings and more eggs. Cut to the floor again. The camera pans over to a large hole in the floor where the concrete has already been removed and shows the pink-fleshed mother bezoar's body as it moves and throbs.

Cut to the library. Buffy reads from the book out loud.

Buffy 'Pre-pre-historic parasite. The mother hibernates underground, laying eggs. The offspring then attach themselves to a host, taking control of their motor functions through neural clamping.'

Xander 'Neural clamping.' That sounds skippable.

Buffy So, our people are taking orders from the mama bezoar. Which begs the question...

Xander What does mama want?

They hear a student screaming out in the hall.

Jonathan Somebody help me!

They run out to investigate. Cut to the hall. Jonathan is struggling with a hatchling on his back and falls to the floor, screaming.

Jonathan Get this thing off me! Get this... Somebody help me! Help!

Buffy and Xander come running out the door and see Jonathan get back up.

Buffy Are you okay?

Jonathan *deadpan* I'm fine. I slipped.

He turns and heads down the hall. Buffy and Xander exchange a look.

Buffy I think I hear mommy calling.

Xander Uh-huh.

They follow Jonathan down the hall. Cut to the boiler room. Jonathan comes walking in and heads straight for the hole. Buffy and Xander peek in, and seeing no one else is there follow him in. Around the corner from the boilers they see Jonathan climb through the hole and head down the tunnel.

Xander Do we really wanna go in there?

Buffy We really don't.

They exchange another look and make for the hole. Buffy climbs in and looks back at Xander before continuing down the tunnel.

Xander Careful.

He starts through as well, but doesn't lift his foot high enough and trips through the hole and falls into the tunnel.

Cut to the room below. The digging and egg gathering activity continues. Jonathan comes walking in. Behind him Buffy and Xander peek into the room.

Xander What are they diggin' up?

The camera pans over to a student and shows the pink mother bezoar in the pit.

Buffy Oh, boy.

She sees Cordelia handing Mr. Whitmore an egg.

Buffy We can't let them spread those eggs.

Xander I'll handle it. Um, can you, uh, hold down the fort?

Buffy I'm gonna need a weapon. I'm gonna need a **big** weapon.

Xander Yeah.

Buffy heads back up the tunnel to see what she can find in the way of a weapon. Xander starts walking into the room staring blankly ahead. Giles hands him a chunk of concrete to carry away. He takes it and drops it to the side. Cordelia and another student start into a utility tunnel with a box of eggs. Xander follows them.

Cut to the boiler room. Buffy steps through the hole back into the room and looks around for anything that might be of use. She spots a barrel with several scrap pieces of pipe and grabs the largest one. The Gorch brothers come over and stand behind her. She turns to face them.

Lyle I told you this weren't over.

Tector She's so cute. And little. Think we can keep her?

Buffy Guys, this really isn't a great time.

Lyle Oh, it's gonna be. *smiles*

Buffy jams the pipe into both their faces and again into Lyle's gut. Tector punches her, and she stumbles toward the hole a bit, but turns around and kicks him in the chest, sending him back into some metal shelves.

Lyle ALRIGHT! THAT'S MY BROTHER!

He charges Buffy and grabs her. They go flying through the hole and into the tunnel. Cut to the room below. They come tumbling out of the tunnel and onto the floor. They both quickly get up and face off, but Lyle is distracted by all the activity.

Lyle What the hell is this?

Buffy sees her mother with a pick going back to continue digging next to Willow.

Buffy Mom?

Joyce and Willow look up at her.

Willow *deadpan* Kill them.

Several students start to advance on Buffy and Lyle. She does a roundhouse kick and gets two of them. Lyle ducks a swing with a shovel from another and hits him in the back, knocking him to the floor. Buffy follows up her kick with two more, and then sidesteps Giles as he swings his crowbar at her. He stumbles past her and into the wall behind her. Lyle backhand punches another one and picks the one up from the floor and throws him back. Buffy pushed a boy with a pick away from her and follows up with a kick to his head, making

him flip over backward. Giles comes at her again from behind, and she grabs him and shoves him into the next attacker. Lyle punches a girl, and she spins away. Buffy kicks another one in the gut. Lyle picks another one up off of the floor and tosses him aside.

Lyle What the hell is goin' on?!

He punches another student and Buffy kicks still another.

Buffy Long story.

Lyle hits a boy over the head with a chunk of concrete. The students have all been knocked back, so Lyle turns his attention back to Buffy. He smiles at her and takes a swing. She ducks it and punches him in the gut and face. He swings again and she ducks again. His momentum turns him around, and she kicks him in the back. The students start coming again, and Buffy and Lyle each punch one.

Cut to the utility tunnel. Cordelia and the other student turn a corner and walk down a side tunnel. Xander follows them at a short distance behind. The far end of the tunnel appears to exit onto a body of water. Xander comes up behind the student and shoves him into the wall, knocking him out. Cordelia turns and sees, sets the box down and takes a swing at Xander. He ducks away and gets around her, blocking her way to the water and holding his hands out in front of him.

Xander Cordelia! I don't wanna hurt ya. Some of the time.

When she doesn't make another move against him he bends down to pick up the box. Cordelia punches down at his head. Xander stands back up and yells out in pain and frustration, trying to restrain himself.

Xander That's my BUMP!

He can't hold back any longer and punches her. She spins around and falls unconscious to the floor. He raises his hands in disbelief and regret.

Cut to the underground room. Buffy and Lyle continue to fight the students coming at them. Lyle gets hit and staggers into the wall. Buffy kicks one. Tector finally shows up at the tunnel mouth and rubs his hands together.

Tector Well, alright!

He spits into both hands to get ready to fight, but notices the mother bezoar and lets it distract him. He walks over to the edge of the pit and looks in.

Tector Well, looky there!

He bends over the pit for a better look. The mother bezoar opens its eye and looks up at him.

Tector *smiles* Well, hello!

Mama sends up a tentacle and wraps it around his neck. He begins to choke as he struggles not to get pulled in. He loses out and falls into the pit. Buffy and Lyle watch

it happen.

Lyle TECTOR!

Tector's boots disappear into the pit.

Lyle Tector?

The bezoar lets out a deep, loud belch. Lyle looks over at Buffy.

Lyle This is all **your** fault!

Buffy How?

Lyle takes her by the shoulder and flips her over onto her back. Joyce comes up to her and swings her pick down at her. Buffy rolls out of the way, but her feet end up over the bezoar's pit. Mama wraps a tentacle around her ankles and pulls her in. Buffy grabs Joyce's pick and drags it in with her. Lyle watches in amazement. Buffy and the mother bezoar begin to fight, and the digging activity in the room comes to a stop. The students and teachers gather around the pit and watch. Slashing sounds and bezoar screams emanate from the pit. Lyle steps closer for a better look. The bezoar lets out a dying scream and its eye closes. The hatchlings all fall from their hosts, and the students and adults all collapse to the floor unconscious. Lyle is suddenly the only person awake in the room. He slowly gets closer to the pit, looking around at all the prone bodies. He guardedly steps to the edge and looks in. A pick comes flying out and lands on the floor next to him. He quickly takes several steps back. A hand covered with slime comes out of the pit. Another hand follows, and Buffy pulls herself up and out. She is streaked with slime. She stands up and faces Lyle. He can't believe his eyes.

Lyle *nods* Alright. *tips his hat* It's over.

He turns and hightails it out of there. Buffy just watches him go.

Cut outside the school building. Several students come walking out, dirty and dazed. Giles tries to calm several others with an explanation, but is himself confused as he makes his way over to Xander, Willow and Cordelia. Fire trucks and police can be heard arriving.

Giles Yes, yes, uh, i-i-it was a-a, a gas leak, everyone. Uh, well, just, uh, get some air, and a... good night's rest, you know, uh, you'll be fine. These gas things... will happen. *to Xander* W-w-what was it really?

Xander Stick with the gas thing. I'll fill you in tomorrow.

Giles Right. *walks off*

Xander *faces Willow and Cordelia* How you guys doin'?

Willow Did I really hit you?

Xander *nods* You knocked me out.

Cordelia Did I hit you?

Xander *nods hard* Yes, everyone hit me.

Cordelia Good. Well, I don't mean 'good' because I hit you, but I didn't wanna be left out.

Xander sees Buffy approaching and goes over to her. She's washed up and changed.

Buffy How is she?

Xander She's a bit confused, but it's goin' around.

He nods in the direction of her mother, and she starts toward her. Joyce comes walking the other way looking around for Buffy. They meet halfway and clasp hands.

Buffy Are you okay?

Joyce Buffy, I was worried you'd gotten caught in the building. There, there was a gas leak. *they walk*

Buffy Uh, yeah, I-I just heard. I was in the gym.

Joyce I went looking for you in the library.

Buffy Oh, well, I was on my way there, when I...

Joyce *interrupts* I thought I made it pretty clear that you weren't to leave the library till I came.

Buffy The other side of that is there was a gas leak, and...

Joyce *interrupts* Well, I'm not really interested in the other side right now. Young lady, you have to learn some responsibility, okay? Once and for all.

Buffy I'm grounded?

Joyce You're already grounded.

Buffy Oh, yeah.

Joyce *stops walking* Until further notice you are confined to your room. You will not leave your room at any time except to go to school or the bathroom. Am I making myself clear?

Buffy You're clear. I won't leave my room.

Joyce You're damn right, you won't.

She stalks off angrily. Buffy follows her a moment later.

Cut to Buffy and Angel kissing. Angel breaks off.

Angel Are you sure you're not gonna get in trouble?

Buffy Hey, I earned this. *kiss* Besides, I'm not breaking any rules.

The camera pulls back slowly and shows Buffy is inside her room at her window with Angel standing outside on the roof.

Joyce *from the hall* Buffy? Are you going to bed?

Buffy In a minute!

She turns back to Angel and smiles at him. They start kissing again as the camera continues to pull back.

Surprise

Written by Marti Noxon

Directed by Michael Lange

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Surprise". It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.05

This episode was originally broadcast on January 19, 1998.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Buffy's room at night. She sleeps fitfully. She wakes with a start and puts her hand to her head. She reaches over to her lamp, turns it on and lets out a sigh. She takes her glass from her nightstand for a drink, but finds it nearly empty. She gets up to fill it.

Cut to the hall. Buffy comes out of her room holding the glass and walks down the hall. Behind her Drusilla stalks her. Buffy opens the door to the bathroom and suddenly finds herself at the Bronze. A slow ballad, "Anything", by Shawn Clement and Sean Murray, is playing. Buffy ventures in.

Lyrics Take me over, I'm lying down / I'm giving in to you

She finds Willow sitting at a table with a large cup of cappuccino and an organ grinder's monkey.

Willow to the monkey L'hippo a pique' ses pantalons.

Translation The hippo stole his pants.

Lyrics I'm a hurricane

The monkey on the table with her squeaks. Buffy walks up to the table and looks at Willow curiously. Willow smiles at her and waves. Buffy raises her hand back, but remains confused about the monkey.

Lyrics I cannot describe this feeling

Buffy continues on and finds her mother holding a large cup and saucer.

Lyrics Now that I've found this love

Her mother sees her coming, and she turns to face her daughter.

Joyce Do you really think you're ready, Buffy?

Buffy What?

Joyce drops the saucer. Buffy watches it fall. It shatters on the floor. Joyce just turns and slowly walks away.

Lyrics I'll do anything for you

Buffy watches her go, then looks around the room again.

Lyrics Now that I've found this love

She walks past Willow again and through the crowd to the stage. It's empty, no band tonight. She turns around and smiles warmly.

Lyrics I'm a fire, burning like a house aflame

Angel is standing at the pool table. He smiles and starts toward her.

Lyrics I'm a hurricane

Buffy begins to walk toward him.

Lyrics I cannot move or see you fly / Now that I've found...

Drusilla suddenly appears behind Angel. She is vamped out, and thrusts a stake into his back and pulls it out. He arches backward in pain.

Buffy ANGEL!

Lyrics ...this love

They reach out for each other. Before she can touch him his hand begins to disintegrate. The rings on his fingers fall to the floor. His body doesn't explode like most vampires', but just crumbles to dust. Drusilla lowers the stake and takes the few steps over to Buffy.

Drusilla Happy Birthday, Buffy.

Cut to Buffy's room. She wakes from her nightmare and quickly sits up, surprised and confused.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part 1

Angel's apartment. There's a knock at the door.

Angel Hold on.

He reaches for the knob and opens it. Buffy is standing there with a worried look on her face.

Angel Hey. Is everything okay?

Buffy That's what I was gonna ask you. You're okay, right?

Angel Sure. I-I'm fine. *gestures for her to come in* What's up?

She comes in and puts her bag down. He swings the door partially closed and walks over to grab a shirt.

Buffy Um... I-I had this... dream that Drusilla was alive.

Angel *pulls on the shirt* What happened?

Buffy She killed you. Right in front of me.

Angel It was just a dream. It wasn't real.

Buffy But it felt so real.

Angel *puts his hand to her cheek* It wasn't. I'm right here.

Buffy Angel, th-this happened before. The dreams that I had about the Master, they came true.

Angel *reassuringly* Still, not every dream you have comes true. I mean, what else did you dream last night? Can you remember?

Buffy *looks down* I dreamt... I dreamt that Giles and I opened an office supply warehouse in Vegas.

Angel See my point?

Buffy *exhales* Yeah, I-I do, but... what if Drusilla is alive? We never saw her body.

Angel *reassures* She's not. But even if she was, we'd deal.

Buffy W-w-what if she is...

He grabs and kisses her, and she responds. A couple of kisses later they break off and look at each other.

Angel What if what?

Buffy *whispers* I'm sorry. Were we talking?

Angel leans over to kiss her again. They put their arms around each other and hold each other closely as they kiss. Buffy suddenly breaks off and looks down.

Buffy I'm sorry. I, um... I-I have to go to school.

She turns and quickly heads for the door.

Angel I know.

He follows her, takes her arm, turns her around and kisses her again passionately. They take hold of each other again. They stop kissing a moment later but keep touching foreheads.

Buffy Oh, God, you feel...

Angel You have to go to school. *guides her to the door*

Buffy Right. I know. This is me. *backs into and shuts the door* I'm going.

They begin kissing passionately again. After a while they stop and look at each other.

Angel You still haven't told me what you wanted for your birthday.

Buffy *smiles* Surprise me.

Angel *smiles* Okay. I will.

They kiss.

Buffy *smiles* This is nice. I like seeing you first thing in the morning.

Angel It's bedtime for me.

Buffy Well, then I like seeing you at bedtime. Um... Um, heh... Y-you know what I mean.

Angel I think so. What do you mean?

Buffy I like seeing you. The part at the end of the night where we say good-bye... It's getting harder.

Angel Yeah. It is.

Willow 'I like you at bedtime?'

Cut to the lawn under the trees at Sunnydale High. Willow and Buffy are walking.

Willow You actually said that?

Buffy I know, I know.

Willow Man, that's like... I-I dunno, that's moxie or something.

Buffy Totally unplanned. It just... came out.

Willow *giggles* And he was into it? I mean, he wants to see you at bedtime, too?

Buffy Yeah, I, I, I think he does. Well, I, I mean he-he's cool about it.

Willow Well, of course he is. 'Cause he's cool. I mean, he would never... you know...

Buffy Push.

Willow Right. H-he's not the type.

Buffy Will, what am I gonna do?

Willow What do you wanna do?

Buffy I don't know. I... I mean, *they sit on a bench* 'want' isn't always the right thing to do. To act on want can be wrong.

Willow True.

Buffy But... to **not** act on want... What if I never feel this way again?

Willow Carpe diem. You told me that once.

Buffy 'Fish of the day'?

Willow Not carp. *smiles* Carpe. It means 'seize the day.'

Buffy Right. I... I think we're going to. Seize it. Once you get to a certain point, then seizing is sort of inevitable.

Willow *wide-eyed* Wow...

Buffy *smiles* Yeah.

Willow Wow...

The school bell rings.

Buffy Oh... *gets up and goes*

Willow *gets up and follows* Wow!

Cut to them still walking. Willow stares at Buffy.

Willow Wow.

Buffy *smiles* Yeah.

She looks over to the side and sees Oz sitting at a bench with his guitar.

Buffy Hey, speaking of 'wow' potential, there's Oz over there. What are we thinking, any sparkage?

Willow *smiles* He's nice. Hey, I like his hands.

Buffy Mm. A fixation on insignificant detail is a definite crush sign.

Willow Oh, I don't know, though. I mean, he is a senior.

Buffy *stops* You think he's too old 'cause he's a senior? Please. My boyfriend had a bicentennial.

Willow That's true. *unsure* Uh... I guess... I just...

Buffy You can't spend the rest of your life waiting for Xander to wake up and smell the hottie. Make a move. Do the talking thing.

Willow Well, what if the talking thing becomes the awkward-silence thing?

Buffy Well, you won't know until you try.

She walks off leaving Willow to consider her next action. She looks at Oz, at Buffy walking away and back at Oz.

Cut to Oz on the bench. He's practicing with his guitar. Willow walks around the bench and stands next to him.

Willow Hey.

Oz *looks up* Hey. *gives her his attention*

Willow Do you guys, uh, have a gig tonight?

Oz Oh, no. Practice. See, our band's kinda moving towards this new sound where... we suck, so... practice.

Willow *smiles* I think you guys sound good.

Oz Thanks.

Willow I bet you have a lot of groupies.

Oz *nods* It happens. Now, I'm living groupie-free nowadays. I'm clean.

Willow *smiles* Oh. *begins to feel awkward*

Oz I'm gonna ask you to go out with me tomorrow night. And I'm kinda nervous about it, actually. It's interesting.

Willow Oh. Well, if it helps at all, I'm gonna say yes.

Oz Yeah, it helps. It-it creates a comfort zone. *Willow smiles* Do you wanna go out with me tomorrow night?

Willow *cringes and slaps her hand to her forehead* Oh! I can't!

Oz Well, see, I like that you're unpredictable.

Willow Oh, it's just it's Buffy's birthday, and we're throwing her a surprise party.

Oz It's okay.

Willow But you could come. If you want to.

Oz Well, I don't wanna crash.

Willow No, it's fine! Well, you could be m... my date.

Oz *nods* All right. I'm in. *smiles*

Willow smiles back, and after a moment indicates she has to go. Oz nods to give her leave. She starts away, smiling widely.

Willow *to herself* I said 'date'.

Cut to Cordelia's locker. The camera is inside looking out. Cordelia swings the door open. Xander is standing

behind her.

Xander So... Buffy's party. Manana.

Cordelia Well, just because she's Miss Save-The-World and everything, you have to make a big deal? I have to cook! And everything.

Xander You're cooking?

Cordelia Well, I'm chips and dips girl.

Xander *gasps* Horrors! All that opening and stirring.

Cordelia And shopping and carrying.

Xander Well, then you should have a person who does such things for you.

Cordelia Well, that's what I've been saying to my father, but does he listen?

Xander Um, so, uh... You're going, and, and, and I'm going. Should... we maybe... go?

Cut outside the locker.

Cordelia Why?

Xander I dunno. This... thing with us, despite our better judgment, it keeps happening. Maybe we should just admit that we're dating.

Cordelia Groping in a broom closet isn't dating. You don't call it a date until the guy spends money.

Xander Fine. I'll spend, then we'll grope. Whatever. I just think it's some kind of whacked that we feel we have to hide it from all our friends.

Cordelia Well, of course **you** wanna tell everybody. You have nothing to be ashamed of. I, on the other hand, have **everything** to be ashamed of.

Xander You know what? 'Nuff said. Forget it. It must've been my multiple-personality guy talking. I call him Idiot Jed, glutton for punishment.

He looks at her and exhales, then turns and walks off.

Cut further down the hall. Giles comes walking out of the lounge and sees Xander.

Giles Oh, good morning. *quietly* Is everything in order for the party?

Xander Absolutely. You ready to get down, you funky party weasel?

Giles looks at the stairs and sees Jenny and Buffy coming down.

Giles Here comes Buffy. *to Xander* Now remember: discretion is the better part of valor.

Xander You coulda just said, 'shh!' God, are all you Brits such drama queens? *to Buffy* Buffy, I feel a pre-birthday spanking coming on.

Jenny I'd curb that impulse if I were you, Xander.

She and Buffy sit at a table in the lounge.

Xander *into his shirt* Check, cancel spanking.

Giles *sits also* You alright, Buffy? You seem a little fatigued.

Buffy Rough night. I had a dream that Drusilla was alive and she killed Angel. I-it just really freaked me out.

Giles You fear it was more of a, a... a portent?
Buffy See, I don't know. I don't wanna start a big freak-out over nothing.
Giles Still, best to be, uh, on the alert. If Drusilla is alive, i-i- it could be a fairly... cataclysmic state of affairs.
Xander Again, so many words! Couldn't you just say, 'we'd be in trouble'?
Giles *gives Xander a look* Go to class, Xander.
Xander Gone. *gets up and starts away, but stops* Notice the economy of **phrasing** 'gone.' Simple. Direct. *points at Giles and leaves*
Buffy Maybe I should get 'gone', too. *stands up*
Giles *stands up* Uh, don't worry unduly, Buffy. I-I-I'm sure it's nothing.
Buffy I know. I should keep my Slayer cool, but... it's Angel, which automatically equals maxi-wig.
Giles Hmm.
 He gives her a smile as she goes.
 Cut to Spike's warehouse. Dalton comes in carrying a large wooden box.
Dalton I have your package.
Spike Just put it on the table... near the other gifts.
 Dalton walks past the camera to the table as Spike rolls into view in a wheelchair. Drusilla follows him, guiding the chair.
Spike Are you dead set on this, pet? Wouldn't you rather have your party in Vienna?
Drusilla But the invitations are sent.
Spike Yeah. It's just I've had it with this place. Nothing ever comes off like it's supposed to.
Drusilla *leans in and puts her hands on his chest* My gatherings are always perfect. Remember Spain? *crouches next to him* Hey... The bulls? *walks her fingers up his arm*

Spike I remember, sweet. But Sunnydale's cursed for us. Angel and the Slayer see to that.
Drusilla Shhh... *into his ear* I've got good games for everyone. *licks his cheek* You'll see.
 She walks over to the table and inspects the roses and other red flowers that have been woven into the high backs of the chairs. She steps up to one.
Drusilla These flowers... are wrong. *the decorators look worried* They're all... wrong! *moans* Spike looks worried I can't abide them! *screams and rips at them*
Spike Let's try something different with the flowers then.
 She looks at him and calms down a bit. Then she eyes the boxes on the table and slowly walks around to them.
Drusilla Can I open one? Can I?
 Spike smiles at her, and she smiles back.
Drusilla Can I? Ooo...
Spike Just a peek, love.
 She excitedly reaches for the latch on one of them.
Spike They're for the party.
 He wheels himself over to her. Cut inside the box. Drusilla lifts the lid, inhales in wonder and smiles.
Spike Do you like it, baby?
Drusilla It reeks of death.
 Cut outside the box. She sighs and kneels in front of Spike.
Drusilla This will be the best party ever.
Spike Why is that?
Drusilla Because...
 She stands back up and leans toward the box. Cut inside the box.
Drusilla It will be the last.
 She slams the lid shut.

Part 2

The kitchen at the Summers house. Joyce gets up from the far side of the island and takes her plate over to the sink. Buffy is sitting on the other side of the island.
Joyce Mall trip for your birthday on Saturday. Don't forget.
Buffy Space on a mom-sponsored shopping opportunity? Not likely.
Joyce Hmm. So, does, um, 17 feel any different than 16?
Buffy It's funny you should ask that. *gets Joyce's attention* You know, I woke up feeling more responsible, mature and levelheaded.
Joyce Really? Tch. It's uncanny.
Buffy I now possess the qualities one looks for in a... licensed driver. *looks at her mom hopefully*
Joyce Buffy...
Buffy You said we could talk about it again when I was

17.
Joyce Do you really think you're ready, Buffy?
 She gives her mom a surprised look. Joyce drops her plate. Buffy watches it fall and sees it shatter on the floor.
 Cut to Ms. Calendar's classroom. She walks to her desk with an arm full of papers. She sets down her mug and a couple of other things and begins to go through them. Behind her a man in a dark suit and hat approaches her. He stops and looks at her.
Enyos Jenny Calendar.
 Jenny spins around, startled. She stares at him in surprise.
Jenny You startled me.
Enyos You look well. *steps up to her desk*

Jenny Yes, I'm fine. *goes around her desk* I know I haven't written as much lately. I've been busy.

Enyos I cannot imagine what is so important to make you ignore the responsibility to your people.

Jenny Well, I've been working and...

Enyos *interrupts* The elder woman has been reading signs. Something is different.

Jenny Nothing has changed. The curse still holds.

Enyos The elder woman is never wrong. She says his pain is lessening. She can feel it.

Jenny *looks down* There is...

Enyos There is what?

Jenny *looks up* A girl.

Enyos *exhales in disgust* What? How could you let this happen?

Jenny I promise you. Angel still suffers. And he makes amends for his evil. He even saved my life.

Enyos So you just forget that he destroyed the most beloved daughter of your tribe?! That he **killed** every man, woman and child that touched her life?! Vengeance demands that his pain be eternal as ours is! If this, this girl gives him one **minute** of happiness, it is one minute too much!

Jenny I'm sorry. I thought...

Enyos You thought what?! You thought you are Jenny Calendar now?! You are still Janna, of the Kalderash people! A Gypsy.

Jenny I know... Uncle. I know.

Enyos Then prove it. Your time for watching is past. The girl and him, it ends now! Do what you must to take her from him!

Jenny I will see to it.

Cut to the library. Buffy is sitting at the table while Giles paces behind her.

Buffy ...and then my mom broke the plate. It was just like my dream. Every gesture, every word. *looks up at him* It was so creepy.

Giles Yes, well, I-I-I'd imagine it would be... fairly unnerving.

He sits on the end of the table. Xander and Willow come bounding in.

Xander Hey! It's the woman of the hour.

Willow It's Happy Birthday Buffy!

She jumps over to the table, hugs Buffy's shoulders and gives her a big smile. She lets go and goes around to the other side of the table with Xander. Buffy just looks down and pulls her hair behind her ear.

Willow Not Happy Birthday Buffy?

Giles I-it's just that, um, part of the nightmare that Buffy had the other night actually transpired.

Buffy Which means Drusilla might still be alive. Giles, in my dream, I couldn't stop her. She blindsided me.

A-Angel was gone before I knew what happened.

Giles Even if she is alive, uh, we can still protect Angel. Dreams aren't prophecies, Buffy. Y-y-y-you dreamt that the Master had risen, but you stopped it from happening.

Xander You ground his bones to make your bread.

Buffy That's true. Except for the bread part. *to Giles* Okay, so, fine. We're one step ahead, but I wanna stay that way.

Giles Absolutely. *stands up* Let me read up on Drusilla, uh, see if she has any particular patterns. *starts toward his office* Why don't you meet me here at 7:00? We'll map out a strategy.

Buffy What am I supposed to do until then?

Giles Go to classes, do your homework, have supper...

Buffy Right. Be **that** Buffy.

She gets up from the table, grabs her bag and heads out of the library.

Xander *pointing* Well, that's not a perky birthday puppy.

Willow So much for our surprise party. I bought little hats and everything.

Xander Mm-hm.

Willow Oh, well. I guess I'll tell Cordelia. *starts to go*

Giles No, you won't. *Willow and Xander stop* We're having a party tonight.

Xander *stares at Giles* Looks like Mr. Caution Man, but the sound he makes is funny.

Willow frowns and nods in agreement.

Giles Buffy's surprise party will go ahead as we planned. Except I won't be wearing the little hat.

Willow But Buffy and Angel...

Giles May well be in danger... as they have been before, and, I imagine, will be again. One thing I've learned in my tenure here on the Hellmouth is that there is no good time to relax. And Buffy's turning 17 just this once, and she deserves a party.

Xander You're a great man of our time.

Willow *smiles* And anyway, Angel's coming. So she'll be able to protect him **and** have cake.

Giles Precisely.

He goes into his office. Willow and Xander leave with a happy bounce in their step.

Cut to the school that night. Cut to a hall. Buffy comes walking down. Jenny sees her.

Jenny Buffy.

Buffy *startled* Oh, my God, I didn't see you there.

Jenny Sorry. Um, Giles wanted me to tell you that there's been a change of plans. Uh, he wants to meet you someplace near his house 'cause he had to run home and get a book or something.

Buffy 'Cause heaven knows there aren't enough books in the library.

Jenny Uh, he's... very thorough.

Buffy Oh, which is not to bag. It's kind of manly in an obsessive- compulsive kind of way, don't you think?

Jenny Mm-hm. Um, you know, my car's here. Why don't I drive you?

Buffy Okay.

She starts out to the parking lot. Jenny watches her go a few steps and then follows.

Cut to the alley outside the Bronze. Jenny's Beetle rolls slowly along.

Buffy Are we goin' to the Bronze?

Jenny I'm not sure. Giles gave me an address. I'm just following his directions.

They round a corner, and Buffy sees something going on.

Buffy This looks funky. Stop for a sec.

A truck is parked in an adjacent loading area. A man jumps off of the truck bed while another walks across the loading dock.

Jenny No, Buffy, maybe you shouldn't.

Buffy Sorry. Sacred duty, yada yada yada.

She gets out of the car and goes to investigate.

Jenny *sighs* What is this? *leans her head on her hand*

Cut to the truck. Buffy walks up and stops by the cab. She sees Dalton carrying a wooden box.

Buffy Every time I see you, you're stealing something. *Dalton growls* You really should speak with someone about this klepto issue.

The truck's engine starts. Buffy turns and reaches for the door handle. Dalton makes a hasty escape. The truck door swings open before Buffy can reach it, and a vampire kicks out at her, hitting her in the arm, but not hard. She grabs for him and pulls him out of the cab and onto the ground. Dalton lifts the box onto the back of the truck. The vampire gets up from the pavement, and Buffy punches him, knocking him back down again. She backs up toward the truck to get around him, but a third vampire standing in the bed grabs her by the jacket and lifts her up. He gets her in a full Nelson hold. She pushes him back into a large box. He is stunned and lets go of his hold. She snaps her head back and butts him hard. The other vampire has climbed onto the truck bed also and comes at her. She punches him, turns and punches the one behind her, turns and punches the other one again, then kicks him in the chest, making him fall and roll over a crate. She blocks a swing from the one behind her, grabs his arm and shoves his head into the crate.

Cut inside the Bronze. Angel peeks out from behind a pillar and looks around.

Angel Where is she?

The others peek out from behind the pool table and look up at him.

Willow Shhh! I think I hear her coming.

Cut outside. Buffy punches one of the wooden bed retainers and breaks off a piece. She jams it into one of the vampires' chests, and he bursts into ashes. The other grabs her from behind, lifts her up and carries her onto the loading dock. He throws her at a door. She hits it and rolls away.

Cut inside. The gang hears the fighting going on outside and looks toward a window. Cut to the window. Buffy and the vampire come crashing through and hit the floor. Everyone gets up to look. Buffy scrambles to her feet and kicks the vampire as he comes for her. He stumbles back a few steps. The others come closer to see. Buffy grabs a drumstick from a drum set, spins around with it, thrusts it into the vampire's chest and pulls it back out. The vampire explodes into ashes. Oz watches in astonishment. Cordelia jumps up from behind the pool table with her arms raised high.

Cordelia Surprise!

The others all look back at her.

Oz That pretty much sums it up.

Xander shakes his head at Cordelia.

Xander Tch.

Buffy hops down from the stage. Angel goes over to her. Cordelia lowers her arms.

Angel Buffy, are you okay?

Giles Yes. W-what happened?

Buffy *points behind her* Uh, there were these vamps outs... *looks around* W-what's going on?

Giles Oh, um... A surprise party. *blows on a party favor*

Cordelia Happy Birthday.

Buffy *smiles* You guys did all this for me? *to Angel* That is so sweet.

Angel You sure you're okay?

Buffy Yes, I'm fine.

Willow *to Oz* Are you okay?

Oz Yeah. Hey, did everybody see that guy just turn to dust?

Willow Uh, well, uh... sort of.

Xander Yep. Vampires are real. A lot of them live in Sunnydale. *gestures between Willow and Oz* Willow will fill you in. *walks off*

Willow I know it's hard to accept at first.

Oz Actually, it explains a lot.

Jenny comes into the Bronze carrying Dalton's box.

Jenny Hey, can somebody give me a hand here?

Angel and Giles take it from her and set it on a table.

Jenny Those creeps left this behind.

Buffy What is it?

Giles I have no idea. Can, can it be opened?
Buffy Yeah. This looks like a release right here.
She works the latch and opens the box. Inside is an arm

clad in armor. Buffy looks over at Giles in disgust. Suddenly the arm raises up, grabs Buffy by the throat and begins choking her.

Part 3

The Bronze. Buffy struggles with the arm. Angel tries to pull it off of her. Between them they get it off, and Angel stuffs it back into the box while Buffy steps back and tries to catch her breath. Giles slams the lid shut. Buffy coughs as Angel helps her aside.

Xander Well, clearly the Hellmouth's answer to 'what do you get the Slayer who has everything?'

Giles Good heavens. Buffy, are you all right?

Buffy Man, that thing had major grip.

Willow W-what was that?

Oz It looked like an arm.

Angel It can't be. She wouldn't.

Xander What, uh, vamp's version of 'snakes in a can', or do you care to share?

Buffy Angel?

Angel It-it's a legend... *Giles looks at the box* way before my time... of a demon brought forth to rid the Earth of the plague of humanity... separate the righteous from the wicked... and to burn the righteous down. They call him the Judge.

Giles The Judge? This is he?

Angel Not all of him.

Buffy *raising her hand* Um, still needing backstory here.

Giles Um... He, he, he couldn't be killed, yes? Um, a-an army was sent against him. Most of them died... but, uh, finally they were able to dismember him, but, uh... not kill him.

Angel The pieces were scattered... buried in every corner of the Earth.

Jenny So all these parts are being brought here.

Buffy By Drusilla. The vamps outside were Spike's men.

Angel She's just crazy enough to do it.

Willow Do what, reassemble the Judge?

Angel And bring forth Armageddon.

Cordelia Is anybody else gonna have cake? *goes to the pool table*

Giles We need to get this out of town.

Jenny Angel.

Buffy What?

Jenny *to Angel* You have to do it. You're the only one that can protect this thing.

Buffy What about me?

Jenny What, you're just gonna skip town for a few months?

Buffy 'Months'?

Angel She's right. I gotta get this to the remotest region possible. *goes to Buffy*

Buffy But that's not months.

Angel *gestures grandly* I gotta catch a cargo ship to Asia, maybe trek to Nepal...

Buffy You know, those newfangled flying machines really are much safer than they used to be.

Angel I can't fly. There's no sure way to guard against the daylight. I-I-I don't like this any more than you do, Buffy. But there's no other choice.

Buffy When?

Angel Tonight. As soon as possible.

Buffy But it's my birthday.

Jenny *comes over* I'll drive you to the docks.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. Drusilla is confronting Dalton. He has his eyes lowered.

Drusilla You lost it? You... lost my present.

Dalton I know. I'm sorry.

Spike It was a bad turn, man. She can't have her fun without the box.

Dalton The Slayer. She came out of nowhere. I didn't even see her. She...

Drusilla cuts him off by putting her finger to his lips. She stares into his eyes. She lifts off his glasses and drops them to the floor. She stomps on them and grinds them into the concrete. She lifts her head with her eyes closed.

Drusilla Make a wish.

Dalton What?

She holds two fingers up to his eyes.

Drusilla I'm going to blow out the candles.

Spike You might give him a chance to find your lost treasure. He is a wanker, but he's the only one we've got with half a brain. If he fails, you can eat his eyes out of the sockets for all I care.

Dalton I'll get it. Please. I swear.

Drusilla thrusts both hands at him and pulls them back at the last instant and up into raised fists, and smiles at him evilly. She bends down and picks up his glasses.

Drusilla Okay.

She unfolds them and sets them back on his nose.

Drusilla Hurry back then. *pats his head*

She steps over to Spike and sits in his lap. Dalton breathes a sigh of relief and leaves to begin his task.

Cut to the docks. Buffy and Angel make their way to a ship. Angel has the box on his shoulder. They walk arm in arm. Buffy leans into him, and he kisses her on the head. When they reach the gangplank Angel sets the box down. They take a few steps away from the box.

Angel I should go the rest of the way alone.

Buffy Okay.

Angel But I'll be back. I will.

Buffy When? Six months, a year? You don't know how long it's gonna take or if we'll even... *looks down*

Angel Hey... *raises her chin* If we'll even what?

Buffy *tears in her eyes* Well, if you haven't noticed, someone pretty much always wants us dead.

Angel Don't say that. We'll be fine.

Buffy We don't know that.

Angel We can't know, Buffy. Nobody can. That's just the deal. *reaches into his pocket* I have something for you. For your birthday. I... I was gonna give it to you earlier, but... *shows her a ring with an intricate design*

Buffy It's beautiful.

Angel My people – before I was changed – they exchanged this as a sign of devotion. It's a claddagh ring. The hands represent friendship, the crown represents loyalty... and the heart... Well, you know... Wear it with the heart pointing towards you. It means you belong to somebody. Like this.

He shows her his own ring on his finger. She touches his hand, leans over and kisses the ring.

Angel Put it on.

He takes the ring from her and slips it onto her finger.

Buffy *sobs* I don't wanna do this.

Angel Me either.

Buffy So don't go.

They kiss. She puts her arms around him. After several kisses they stop and look at each other.

Angel Buffy... I...

Two vampires suddenly jump at them from some cargo netting. One pulls Buffy off of Angel and throws her back. The other begins to fight with Angel. Buffy rolls to her feet. The vampire swings at her, but misses. She grabs him and starts pummeling his gut. Angel flips the other one over onto his back. He gets up, and Angel swings at him three times, but he blocks all of them. Angel's next punch lands on the vampire's face. Buffy ducks a swing, lifts herself up on the dock railing and kicks her assailant in the chest with both feet, sending him staggering back into the gangplank. She gives chase and grabs him by the back of the shirt and hair. He growls. Dalton drops out of the cargo netting now, too, runs over to the box, grabs it and starts to run.

Buffy Angel! The box!

Angel ducks a roundhouse kick, grabs the vampire's arm and flips him over onto his back. He runs after Dalton and tackles him to the deck. Buffy's attacker shakes free of her and shoves her into a stack of crates. He follows up with a roundhouse kick, but she ducks it and he just hits the crates. She makes a grab for him, but he

punches her in the face. Angel gets ready to punch Dalton but gets distracted when the vampire he was fighting before grabs the box and makes a run for it. Buffy's opponent grabs her by the jacket and roars as he swings her around, over the railing and into the water. Angel sees her go flying.

Angel Buffy!

He jumps over the railing and into the water after her. Cut to the library. Giles is researching the Judge. He looks up from his books.

Giles They should be back by now.

Willow Maybe Buffy needed a few minutes to pull herself together. Poor Buffy, on her birthday and everything.

Xander Hmm, it's sad, granted. But let's look at the upside for a moment. *gets up* I mean, what kind of a future would she've really had with him? *Willow looks sadly up at him* She's got 2 jobs – Denny's waitress by day, *Giles looks up, too* Slayer by night – and Angel's always in front of the TV with a big blood belly, and he's dreamin' of the glory days when Buffy still thought this whole creature of the night routine was a big turnon.

Willow You've thought way too much about this.

Xander No, no. That's just the beginning. Have I told you the part where I fly into town in my private jet and take Buffy out for prime rib?

Willow *sees Buffy come in* Xander...

Xander And she cries?

Giles *stands up* What happened? *Xander sits*

Buffy Dru's guys ambushed us. They got the box.

Giles Where's Jenny?

Buffy Uh, she took Angel to get clothing. I, I had some here.

Xander And we needed clothes because...

Buffy We got wet. Giles, what do we know?

Giles The more I study the Judge, the less I like him. His touch can literally burn the humanity out of you. A true creature of evil can survive the process. No human ever has.

Xander What's the problem? We send Cordy to fight this guy, and we go for pizza. *smiles*

Buffy Can this guy be stopped? Without an army?

Giles Um, *reads* 'no weapon forged can kill him.' Not very encouraging. If we could only stop them from assembling him.

Buffy We need to find his weak spots, and we need to figure out where they'd be keeping him.

Giles This could take time.

Willow Better do a round robin. Xander, you go first.

Buffy Good call.

Xander heads for the phone.

Giles Round robin?

Willow It's when everybody calls everybody else's mom and tells them they're staying at everyone's house.

Buffy Thus freeing us up for world saveage.

Willow *smiles* And all-night keggers! *gets looks from Buffy and Giles* What, only Xander gets to make dumb jokes?

Xander *on the phone* Mom, hi. Xander. Yeah, uh, Willow and I are gonna be studying all night long, so I'm not gonna be coming home.

Cut to later. The research is going hot and heavy. Xander walks over to Willow at the counter with another open book.

Xander Tsk. I think I read this already.

Willow I can't get over how cool Oz was about all this.

Xander Gee, I'm over it.

Willow *smugly* You're just jealous 'cause you didn't have a date for the party.

Xander No, I sure didn't.

Giles *comes out into the main room* Angel? Any luck?

Angel comes down out of the stacks. Giles sees Buffy asleep in his office and holds up his hand to silence Angel. He follows Giles' gaze into the office.

Giles Sh-sh-sh.

They see Buffy with her head down on the desk. He waves Angel to follow him.

Giles *whispers* Seems Buffy needed some rest.

Angel Yeah. She hasn't been sleeping well. Tossing and turning. *everyone looks at him* She told me. Because of her dreams?

They all go back to their tasks. The camera closes in on Buffy and loses its focus.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. Buffy walks in, looking at the party decorations. All around candles on tall sticks have burned way down. She goes to the table and walks around it. On the other side she sees Jenny walking the other way. She's confused about that, but gets distracted by several boxes sitting on the floor and goes over to them.

Drusilla Now, now.

Buffy spins around to see her on the upper level holding Angel in front of her.

Drusilla Hands off my presents.

She puts a sharp blade to Angel's neck.

Buffy No!

Cut to Giles' office. Buffy wakes from her nightmare with a start.

Buffy Angel!

Angel Buffy, it's okay. *she turns to him* I'm here. *she hugs him close* I'm right here.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. Drusilla stands at the top of the spiral staircase and claps her hands.

Drusilla More music!

She bobs her head to the gothic beat as she descends the steps. The party is going well. She makes her way to the head of the table and begins to dance there. "Transylvanian Concubine", performed by Rasputina, plays.

Lyrics If you want to know how / To fly high then go now / To the place where all the concubines... / Meet and converse with them / Marvel at their pale skin / Wonder how they chew on their pointy... / Teeth and hair are beauty / They know it's their duty / To be Countess in their hearts and their...

Spike comes rolling in with a large box in his lap.

Spike Look what I have for you, ducks.

Drusilla looks over at him.

Lyrics Minds that have to whisper / See in them a sister / Look into their eyes and you'll become / Transylvanian Concubine

Drusilla smiles and steps over to him.

Drusilla Ahh... The best is saved for last.

She takes the box from him and hands it to two vampires.

Lyrics You know what flows there like wine / Sorrow is their master / Cackling with laughter / Now he's having just one piece of...

The two vampires take it over to where the other boxes have been assembled into the shape of a body. They raise the box and set the head in place.

Lyrics Cakey is their make up / Catholics try to shake up...

Once in place, a bright light emanates through the cracks in the boxes.

Drusilla *smiles* Hmm.

The front of the now unified boxes opens like a pair of twin gates to allow the Judge to step out. His skin is blue, and he has small horns on his forehead. He opens his eyes.

Drusilla He's perfect, my darling.

Spike looks up at her.

Drusilla Just what I wanted.

She steps back to him and takes his hand.

Part 4

Spike's warehouse. Drusilla looks up at the Judge.

Drusilla Goll...

The Judge steps out of his box. He has difficulty keeping his balance. He points at Drusilla.

Judge You!

Spike *rolls over to him in Dru's defense* Ho, ho, ho. What's that, mate?

Judge You two stink of humanity. You share affection

and jealousy.

Spike Yeah. What of it? *taps his armor* Do I have to remind you that we're the ones who brought you here?

Drusilla *smiles* Would you like a party favor? *indicates her guests*

The Judge looks at the party guests. His gaze settles on Dalton.

Judge This one is full of feeling. He reads. Bring him to me.

Another vampire grabs Dalton and keeps him from running away.

Spike What's with the bringing? I thought you could just zap people.

Judge My full strength will return in time. Until then... I need contact.

The Judge steps over to Dalton.

Dalton No. No! NO!

The Judge puts his hand on Dalton's chest, and he begins to smoke. Drusilla watches excitedly. The Judge's hand begins to burn into Dalton, who quickly combusts, disappearing in a flash of flame and smoke.

Drusilla *gasps gleefully* Do it again! Do it again!

She smiles down at Spike. The Judge smiles as he feels his power begin to return.

Cut to the library. Buffy comes striding out of the cage. Angel follows her out. Giles looks down at them from the stacks.

Giles Buffy, what's happening?

Angel She had another dream.

Buffy I think I know where Spike and Drusilla are.

Giles *comes down the stairs* That's very good, however, you, you do need a plan. I-I know you're concerned, Buffy, but you can't just go off half-cocked.

Buffy I have a plan. Angel and I go to the factory and do recon, figure out how far they've gotten assembling the Judge. You guys check any places the boxes could be coming into town. Shipping yards, airports, anything. We need to stop them from getting all the boxes in one place.

Giles Yes. Yes, well, um, actually, that's quite a good plan.

Buffy This thing is nasty, and it's real, Giles. We can't wait for it to come get us.

Giles Right.

Buffy grabs her bag, and she and Angel make tracks for the door.

Cut to outside Spike's warehouse. The camera pans up to a second floor window. Cut inside. Buffy and Angel sneak quietly along the upper level. They look down at the party going on below. They walk to the railing.

Buffy I saw this. *whispers* The party.

They see the Judge walk into view flanked by Spike with Drusilla following. The Judge stops and senses something.

Spike What? What is it?

The Judge looks around, then up at Buffy and Angel and growls.

Angel We gotta get outta here.

They try to make a run for it, but there are vampires heading them off on both sides. They are captured. Cut below. Buffy and Angel are brought before Spike, Drusilla and the Judge.

Spike Well, well. Look what we have here. Crashers.

Buffy I'm sure our invitations just got lost in the mail.

Drusilla It's delicious. *licks her fingers to Angel* I only dreamed you'd come. Rrrr.

Angel *struggles* Leave her alone.

Spike Yeah, that'll work. Now say 'pretty please'. *smiles*

Judge The girl.

Drusilla Chilling, isn't it? She's so full of good intention. Angel gets himself between the Judge and Buffy.

Angel Take me!

Buffy No!

Angel Take me instead of her!

Spike *raises his hand* Uh, you're not clear on the concept, pal. There is no instead. Just first and second.

Drusilla And if you go first, you don't get to watch the Slayer die.

Angel's captors pull him back. The Judge reaches for Buffy. Angel looks up and around for a way out of this. Drusilla wraps her arms around Spike and smiles. Angel sees the chains holding up Spike's video monitors. Then he sees Buffy getting ready to defend herself.

Angel Don't touch him!

Buffy kicks the Judge in the chest and knocks him back. Angel shakes off his captors and lunges for the chains. The Judge comes to a stop beneath the monitors, and Angel releases them. They crash to the floor on top of the Judge, hard enough to knock a hole in the floor. Buffy struggles free also, and runs to Angel. She sees the hole in the floor.

Buffy This way!

They go to the hole, and Buffy jumps down into the sewers below. Cut to the sewers. Buffy rolls away from the hole, and Angel drops down behind her. They get to their feet and start down the tunnels. Cut inside the warehouse. Drusilla gives the order to pursue.

Drusilla Go!

Two vampires rush to give chase. Cut to the sewers. Buffy and Angel pull a door closed behind them as their two pursuers drop through the hole and start after them. They look around to see where they went, but

don't see anyone. They start down the tunnel, checking the side tunnels as they go, and continue past the door. When they've gone by Buffy opens the door and checks if the coast is clear. Seeing no one she steps over to a ladder and starts up. Cut to the surface. She lifts a manhole cover up, pushes it aside and quickly climbs out into the pouring rain. Angel follows right behind.

Angel Come on. We need to get inside.

Cut to Angel's apartment. He opens the door, and they come in. He turns on the light. Buffy closes the door behind them. He takes off his heavy coat and lays it aside. Buffy is soaked through to her skin without a coat or jacket.

Angel You're shaking like a leaf.

Buffy Cold.

Angel Let me get you something.

He gets some things from his armoire and hands them to her.

Angel Put these on. Get under the covers, just to warm up.

Buffy walks over to his bed and sits down. She looks up at him. He faces away to give her privacy.

Angel Sorry.

Buffy takes off her top shirt and winces and inhales in pain.

Angel What?

Buffy Oh, um... It's okay. I just have a cut or something.

Angel Can I... Lemme see.

Buffy clutches her shirt to her chest.

Buffy *whispers* Okay.

Angel turns around and sits down on the bed behind her. He gently touches her back and looks at the cut.

Angel It's already closed. You're fine.

Buffy leans back into him and cuddles her face to his. He puts his arms around her.

Buffy You almost went away today.

Angel We both did.

Buffy *sobs* Angel... *sniffles* I feel like I lost you... *sniffles* You're right, though. We can't be sure of anything.

Angel Shhh. I...

She turns around to look at him.

Buffy You what?

Angel I love you. I try not to, but I can't stop.

Buffy Me, me, too. I can't either.

They start to kiss. After a moment Angel breaks off.

Angel Buffy, maybe we shouldn't...

Buffy *stops him* Don't. Just kiss me.

Cut to later. They are both in bed asleep. Outside lightning strikes, and Angel wakes with a start and gasps for air as he sits up.

Angel Ahh!

He gets up from the bed and hurries off. Cut outside to an alley. Angel has dressed and crashes through the door into the rain. He stumbles over some trashcans and falls to the pavement. He cries out in pain and fear.

Angel Buffy!

Cut to the apartment. Buffy stirs slightly but keeps sleeping.

Angel Buffyyyyyy!

Innocence

Written by Joss Whedon

Directed by Joss Whedon

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Innocence". It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.05

This episode was originally broadcast on January 20, 1998.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Spike's warehouse. The Judge is kneeling in a corner facing a bunch of storage racks. Spike wheels into view and stops about twenty feet from him. He pushes himself a few feet closer and turns around.

Spike I'm not happy, pet. Angel and the Slayer are still alive. They know where we are, they know about the Judge. We should be vacating.

Drusilla *walks up to him* Nonsense. *takes his hand* They'll not disturb us here. My Angel's too smart to face the Judge again.

Spike *glances over his shoulder* What's Big Blue up to anyway? He just sits there. *looks away*

Judge I am preparing.

Spike *rolls his eyes* Yeah. *turns and wheels over to him* It's interesting to me that 'preparing' looks a great bit like sitting on your ass. *facing him* When do we destroy the world already?

Judge My strength grows, and with every life I take it will increase further.

Spike So let's take some. I'm bored.

Drusilla starts moaning.

Spike *looks back at her* Dru?

Drusilla collapses to the floor and begins to cry.

Drusilla Angel...

Spike *concerned* Dru? *rolls to her* What is it? *stops by her* Dru!

The camera pans around to her face.

Spike Darling... Do you see something?

Her crying gives way to an evil smile.

Cut to Angel's apartment. Buffy stirs in his bed and reaches over for him. She opens her eyes, suddenly wide awake when she doesn't find him there and looks around. She sits up in bed. Outside it's still raining hard, and lightning strikes. She looks around the room again, but Angel is nowhere to be seen.

Buffy Angel?

Cut outside to the alley. The rain has let up. Angel falls to the pavement and props himself up on his hands.

Angel Buffy...

He can't hold himself up and collapses to the ground.

Angel *frightened* Oh, no.

A hooker standing in a doorway sees him and slowly walks over to him.

Hooker Hey. You okay? *bends down to look at him* You want me to call 911?

Angel *suddenly stands up* No. The pain is gone.

Hooker You sure?

Angel Yeah.

He spins around, game face on, grabs her and violently bites her on the neck to feed. He drops her dead body, tilts his head up and blows out the smoke he's just inhaled through her neck from her lungs.

Angelus I feel just fine.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part 1

The kitchen at Buffy's house. She quietly opens the kitchen door, looks around, comes in and carefully closes it behind her. She keeps an eye out for her mother as she goes around to the stairs. Once there she starts up, stomping rather loudly, and her mother hears

her.

Joyce *off camera* Morning.

Buffy stops her ascent and comes back down a few steps. Her mother comes over to the base of the staircase.

Buffy Morning.

Joyce So, did you have fun last night?

Buffy Fun?

Joyce At Willow's.

Buffy Yeah. *smiles* Yeah, fun at Willow's. You know, she's a fun machine.

Joyce You hungry?

Buffy No. Uh, no, I-I'm, uh, just gonna go take a shower.

Joyce Well, i-if you hurry, I'll run you to school.

Buffy Thanks.

Joyce folds her arms and looks up at Buffy curiously.

Joyce Is something wrong?

Buffy's eyes go wide, but she quickly regains her composure.

Buffy No. *shakes her head* What would be wrong?

Joyce *staring* I don't know. You just look...

She shakes her head, smiles and goes into the dining room. Buffy breathes a sigh of relief and heads up the stairs.

Cut to the library. Xander walks in. Giles looks up at him.

Xander Well, the bus depot was a total washout. And may I say what a lovely place to spend the night. What a vibrant cross-section of Americana.

Jenny and Willow look at him concerned. Cordelia sitting on the counter also looks worried.

Giles No vampires transporting boxes?

Xander No, but a four-hundred-pound wino offered to wash my hair. *looks at everyone* What's up? Where's Buffy?

Willow She never checked in.

Giles If the bus depot is as empty as the... docks and the airport...

Xander Do you think this Judge guy's already been assembled?

Giles Yes.

Xander Then Buffy could be... Okay, we gotta find 'em. *thinks* Um, we gotta go to that place, that, uh, that factory. That's where they're holed up, right? *looks back at Willow and Jenny* Let's go.

Cordelia And do what? Besides be afraid and die.

Xander Well, nobody's asking you to go, Cordelia. If the vampires need grooming tips we'll give you a call.

Giles Cordelia has a point. Now, i-i-if Buffy and Angel were, were... harmed, then we don't stand to fare much better.

Xander Yeah? Well, those of us who were born with feelings are gonna do something about this.

Jenny Xander.

Willow No, Xander's right! My God, you people are all... Well, I'm upset, and I can't think of a mean word right

now, but that's what you are, and we're going to the factory! *starts out*

Xander Yeah! *follows*

Just then Buffy comes into the library.

Willow Buffy!

Xander We were just going to rescue you.

Willow *throws Giles a look* Well, some of us were.

Giles Well, I-I would have.

Jenny Where's Angel?

Buffy He didn't check in with you guys?

Giles No.

Cordelia *slides off the counter* What happened?

Giles The Judge, i-is he...

Buffy No assembly required. He's active.

Giles *whispers* Oh, damn it. *removes his glasses*

Buffy He nearly killed us. Angel got us out.

Giles Why didn't you call? We, we, we thought...

Buffy Well, we, we had to hide. Uh, we got stuck in the sewer tunnels, and with the hiding, we just split up... Uh, no one's heard from him?

Willow I'm sure he'll come by.

Buffy Yeah, I'm, I'm sure you're right.

Giles Buffy, the Judge, we, we must stop him.

Buffy I know.

Giles What can you tell us?

Buffy Not much. I, um... I kicked him. It was just like a sudden fever. If he'd got his hands on me...

Giles In time, he won't need to. The stronger he gets, he'll be able to reduce us to charcoal with a look.

Buffy Also, not the prettiest man in town.

Giles I better continue researching, must look for a weak spot. The rest of you should get to your classes.

Jenny Yeah, I better go, too.

They all start out. Buffy is the first one out the door.

Xander Yeah, yeah, yeah. *holds the door open*

Willow Buffy, wait up!

Jenny *stops on the way out to Giles* I'll, uh, go on the 'Net and search for anything on the Judge.

Giles Thank you.

Xander After classes I'll come back and help you research.

Cordelia *pats him as she walks out* Yeah, you might find something useful if it's in an 'I Can Read' book.

Xander looks like he's ready to kill her.

Cut to the halls by the stairs. Buffy is about to go up when Willow catches up and stops her.

Willow You don't think Angel would have gone after the Judge himself, do you?

Buffy No, he'd know better than that. Maybe he just needed... I don't know. I just, I wish he'd contact me. I need to talk to him.

They start up the stairs. Jenny looks around the corner and watches them go up.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. Drusilla is laid out on her back on the big table. Spike wheels himself around to her. She looks up at the ceiling blissfully.

Spike *smiles* Are we feeling better, then? *leans on the table*

Drusilla *sighs* I'm naming all the stars.

Spike You can't see the stars, love. That's the ceiling. Also, it's day.

Drusilla I can see them. But I've named them all the same name. *tilts her head to him* And there's terrible confusion.

Spike Did you see any further? Do you know what happens to Angel?

Angelus *appears at a side door* Well, *clears his throat* he moves to New York and tries to fulfill that Broadway dream. It's tough sledding, but one day he's working in the chorus when the big star twists her ankle.

Spike You don't give up, do you?

Angelus *slowly comes over* As long as there's injustice in

the world, as long as scum like you is walking... *notices the wheelchair well, rolling the streets...* I'll be around. *stops a few feet away* Look over your shoulder. I'll be there.

Spike Uh, yeah. Angel, um... look over **your** shoulder.

Angelus turns around, and the Judge puts his hand on his chest.

Spike Hurts, doesn't it?

Angelus *looks back* Well, you know, it kinda itches a little.

Spike *to the Judge* Don't just stand there. Burn him.

Angelus Gee, maybe he's broken.

Spike *to Drusilla* What the hell is going on?

Drusilla's face takes on a look of realization.

Judge This one... cannot be burnt. He is clean. *removes his hand*

Spike Clean? You mean, he's...

Judge There's no humanity in him. *turns and goes*

Angelus *faces Spike* I couldn't have said it better myself.

Drusilla Angel.

Angelus Yeah, baby. I'm back.

Part 2

Spike's warehouse.

Spike Is it really true?

Angelus It's really true. *laughs and walks around the table*

Drusilla *follows him with her gaze* You've come home.

Spike No more of this 'I've got a soul' crap? *follows him*

Angelus What can I say, hmm? *strikes a match on the table* I was going through a phase. *lights a cigarette*

Spike This is great! This is so great!

Drusilla *walks on the table waving her arms* Everything in my head is singing! *Angelus laughs* We're family again. *Angelus helps her off of the table* We'll feed. Grrr. *turns to Spike* And we'll play. *leans in to him*

Spike I've got to tell you, it made me sick to my stomach seeing you being the Slayer's lap dog.

Angelus growls and grabs Spike by the shirt. Then he kisses him on the forehead and steps back. Spike busts up laughing. Angelus and Drusilla join in.

Drusilla How did this happen?

Angelus You wouldn't believe me if I told you.

Spike Oh, who cares? What matters is now he's back! Now it's four against one, which are the kind of odds I like to play.

Drusilla *leans toward Angelus* Psst. We're going to destroy the world. Want to come?

Angelus *plays with his cigarette* Yeah. Destroying the world. Great. I'm really more interested in the Slayer.

Spike Well, she's **in** the world, so that should work out.

Angelus Give me tonight. Hmm?

Spike What do you mean?

Angelus Lay low for a night. I guarantee you by the time you go public she won't be anything resembling a threat.

Spike You've really got a yen to hurt this girl, haven't you?

Angelus She made me feel like a human being. That's not the kind of thing you just forgive.

Cut to the library. Cordelia walks by the counter looking through a book. Xander is lying on top of the counter, also studying a book. Giles is in his office reading through yet another book. Willow is on the phone with Buffy.

Willow Ok. No, no, he didn't, but I'm sure he'll... Well, Buffy, he probably has some plan, and he's trying to protect you. Well, I-I don't know what. I'm not in on the plan. It's his plan. No. Don't even say that! Angel is not dead.

Xander Say 'hi' for me.

Willow *into the phone* Yeah, of course we'll be here. Okay, bye. *hangs up to Xander* Say 'hi' for me?

Xander What's the word?

Willow She's checked every place she can think of. She even beat up Willy the snitch a couple of times. Angel's vanished.

Giles *standing in his doorway* But he does do that on occasion, no?

Willow Oh, yeah, but she's extra wigged this time. I guess 'cause of her dreams. God, what if something really happened to him?

Giles Is she gonna join us here?

Willow Yeah. She's just stopping at home first.

Xander slams his book shut and jumps off of the counter.

Xander Nada.

He heads for the stacks with it. Cut to the stacks. Xander finds Cordelia on his way to return the book to its place on the shelves.

Xander Did you find anything? *shelves the book*

Cordelia This book mentions the Judge, but nothing useful. Big, scary, no weapon forged can stop him, took an army to take him down. Blah, blah, blah.

Xander We need some insight, a weak spot.

Cordelia Well, we're not gonna find it here.

She shelves the book as Xander comes over to her. She turns to face him.

Xander Sorry I snapped at you before.

Cordelia Well, I'm reeling from that new experience.

Xander I was crazed. I wasn't thinking.

Cordelia I know. You were too busy rushing off to die for your beloved Buffy. You'd never die for me.

Xander No, I might die **from** you. Does that get me any points?

Cordelia No.

Xander Come on, can't we just kiss and make up?

Cordelia I don't wanna make up. *he starts to go, but she stops him* But I'm okay with the other part. *smiles*

Xander smiles back and they start to kiss. After a few moments Cordelia giggles and smiles and they pull apart. Willow is standing behind them, completely confused and upset.

Xander Willow, uh...

She darts off. Xander runs after her.

Xander We were just... Willow! Willow!

Cordelia realizes they've been found out and begins to consider the implications.

Cut to the halls. Willow comes running out of the library. Xander is right behind her.

Xander Willow, come on!

Willow *stops and confronts him, shaking her finger* I knew it! I knew it! Well, not 'knew it' in the sense of having the slightest idea, but I knew there was something I didn't know. You two were fighting way too much. It's not natural!

Xander I know it's weird...

Willow Weird? It's against all laws of God and Man! It's *disgusted* Cordelia! Remember? The, the 'We Hate Cordelia' club, of which you are the treasurer.

Xander Look, I was gonna tell you.

Willow Gee, what stopped you? Could it be shame?

Xander All right, let's overreact, shall we?

Willow But I'm...

Xander Willow, we were just kissing. It doesn't mean that much.

Willow No. It just means that you'd rather be with someone you hate than be with me.

She runs from the hall, leaving Xander just standing there to consider her words. He reluctantly turns to go back into the library.

Cut to the Summers house. Buffy comes up the walkway to the porch. She looks at her door a moment, then turns and goes away. Cut to Angelus' apartment. Buffy opens the door, comes in and closes it behind her. She walks over to the bed and sees it's been made. One of his shirts is laid out on it. She goes over to the bed and reaches for the shirt. Behind her Angelus steps over to a statue, picks up a necklace hanging from it and puts it on. Buffy turns and sees him.

Buffy Angel! *runs to him*

Angelus Hey!

Buffy Oh!

Angelus Hey.

She kisses him and they hug.

Buffy Oh, my God! I was so worried!

Angelus I didn't mean to frighten you.

Buffy Where did you go?

Angelus Been around.

Buffy Ohhh. Oh, my God! *hugs him again* I was freaking out! You just disappeared.

Angelus What? I took off. *goes to his bed for the shirt*

Buffy *confused* But you didn't say anything. You just left.

Angelus *pulls on the shirt* Yeah. Like I really wanted to stick around after that.

Buffy What?

Angelus You got a lot to learn about men, kiddo. Although I guess you proved that last night.

Buffy What are you saying?

Angelus Let's not make an issue out of it, okay? *goes for his coat* In fact, let's not talk about it at all. *pulls it on* It happened.

Buffy I, I don't understand. Was it m-me? *meekly* Was I not good?

Angelus *laughs* You were great. Really. *snidely* I thought you were a pro.

Buffy How can you say this to me?

Angelus Lighten up. It was a good time. It doesn't mean like we have to make a big deal.

Buffy It is a big deal!

Angelus It's what? Bells ringing, fireworks, a dulcet choir of pretty little birdies? *laughs* Come on, Buffy. It's

not like I've never been there before.

He reaches his hand up to her face and she jerks back.

Buffy Don't touch me.

Angelus *shakes his finger at her* I should've known you wouldn't be able to handle it. *starts to go*

Buffy Angel! *he stops and faces her teary-eyed* I love you.

Angelus *points coolly at her* Love you, too. *turns away* I'll call you.

He goes out the door. Buffy can only watch him go, extremely upset and confused.

Cut to Enyos' hotel room. He lectures Jenny.

Enyos You know what it is, this thing vengeance?

Jenny Uncle, I have served you. I have been faithful. I need to know...

Enyos *interrupts* To the modern man vengeance is a verb, an idea. Payback. One thing for another. Like commerce. Not with us. Vengeance is a living thing. It passes through generations. It commands. It kills.

Jenny You told me to watch Angel. You told me to keep him from the Slayer. I tried. But there are other factors. There are terrible things happening here that we cannot control.

Enyos We control nothing. We are not wizards, Janna. We merely play our part.

Jenny Angel could be of help to us. I mean, he may be the only chance we have to stop the Judge.

Enyos It is too late for that.

Jenny Why?

Enyos The curse. Angel is meant to suffer, not to live as human. One moment of true happiness, of contentment, one moment where the soul that we restored no longer plagues his thoughts, and that soul is taken from him.

Jenny Then, if somehow, if... if it's happened... then Angelus is back.

Enyos I hoped to stop it. But I realize now it was arranged to be so.

Jenny Buffy loves him.

Enyos And now she will have to kill him.

Jenny *stands up* Unless he kills her first! Uncle, this is insanity! People are going to die.

Enyos Yes. It is not justice we serve. It is vengeance.

Jenny *exhales and grabs her coat and bag* You are a fool. We're all fools.

Her uncle just watches her go and shakes his head.

Cut to the lounge at school. Willow comes down the hall. Xander comes out of the bathroom, sees her there and jogs over to her.

Xander Will.

She hugs her arms around herself and turns to face him.

Willow Hey.

Xander Where'd you go?

Willow Home.

Xander I'm glad you came back. We can't do this without you.

Willow Let's get this straight. I don't understand it, I don't wanna understand it, you have gross emotional problems, and things are not okay between us. But what's happening right now is more important than that.

Xander Okay.

Willow *drops her arms* What about the Judge? Where do we stand?

Xander On a pile of really boring books that say exactly the same thing.

Willow Lemme guess: 'no weapon forged.'

Xander 'It took an army.'

Willow Yeah, where's an army when you need one? *looks at Xander* What?

Xander *looks thoughtful* Whoa. Whoa! I... I think I'm having a thought. Yeah, yeah, yeah, that's a thought. Now I'm having a plan.

The lights suddenly go out.

Xander Now I'm having a wiggins.

Willow What's going on?

Xander Let's get to the library.

Angelus *appears behind them* Willow. Xander. They turn to look.

Xander Angel.

Willow Thank God you're okay. Did you see Buffy?

Angelus Yeah. What's up with the lights?

Xander I don't know. Listen, I think I have an idea.

Angelus Forget about that now. I... I got something to show you.

Willow Show us?

Angelus Yeah. Xander, go get the others.

Xander Okay. *runs off*

Angelus And Willow. Come here.

Willow *slowly walks toward him* What is it, Angel?

Angelus It's amazing.

Cut to Xander running for the library. Suddenly he stops and turns around, realizing something is wrong. Cut to the lounge area. Jenny appears in the hall opposite Angelus holding up a cross.

Jenny Willow, get away from him.

Willow *stops and looks at her* What?

Jenny Walk to me.

Willow What are you talking about? It's Ang...

Angelus has sneaked up behind her and grabs her by the throat. She lets out a frightened yelp. Xander comes running through the door from the other hall.

Xander Don't do that!

Angelus Oh, I think I do that.

Willow Angel...

Jenny He's not Angel anymore. Are you?

Angelus Wrong. I **am** Angel. *tightens his grip on Willow*
At last!

Xander Oh, my God.

Angelus I got a message for Buffy.

Buffy *appears behind him* Why don't you give it to me yourself?

Angelus spins around with Willow to face her.

Angelus Well, it's not really the kind of message you tell. It sort of involves finding the bodies of all your friends. He tightens his grip on Willow even more and she lets out another pained yelp.

Buffy This can't be you.

Angelus Gee, we already covered that subject.

Buffy Angel, there must be some part of you inside that still remembers who you are.

Angelus Dream on, schoolgirl.

Xander takes the cross from Jenny and starts toward Angelus.

Angelus Your boyfriend is dead. You're all gonna join him.

Buffy Leave Willow alone, and deal with me.

Angelus But she's so cute *pinches her cheek* and helpless. *Xander gets closer* Really a turn-on.

Xander shoves the cross into Angelus' face from behind. He reels back and drops Willow. She cries out as she falls backward into Xander, and they collapse against the wall. Angelus turns to Jenny and wards her off with a hand as he starts to back down the hall. When he reaches Buffy he grabs her by the shoulders. She inhales in fright.

Angelus *whispers* Things are about to get **very** interesting.

He kisses her, shoves her into the wall and backs out the door. Willow and Xander are up again.

Xander Buffy, you okay?

Buffy just stares at the door.

Xander Buffy.

Part 3

The library. Giles paces. Xander stands while Willow and Cordelia sit at the table. Jenny is leaning against the shelves behind them.

Giles And we're absolutely certain that, that Angel has reverted to his former self?

Xander Yeah, uh, we're all certain. Anyone not feeling certain here?

Willow Giles, you wouldn't have believed him. He was so... He came here to kill us.

Cordelia What are we gonna do?

Giles I'm leaning towards blind panic myself.

Jenny Rupert, don't talk like that. The kids.

Giles I'm sorry. It's just that things are bad enough with the Judge here. Angel crossing over to the other side... I-I-I wasn't prepared for that.

Jenny None of us were.

The camera pans over to Buffy sitting at the table opposite Willow. She's looking down sadly. Willow notices and gets up to go to her.

Willow Are you okay?

Buffy shakes her head 'no'.

Willow Is there anything I can do?

Buffy *shakes her head* I should've known. When I saw him at the house, he was different. The things he said...

Giles What things?

Buffy It's private.

Jenny But you didn't know he had turned bad?

Willow *looks at Jenny* How did you?

Jenny *looks at Willow* What?

Willow Well, you knew. You told me to get away from him.

Jenny Well, I saw his face.

Giles If only we knew how it happened. *sits on the table*

Buffy What do you mean?

Giles Well, something set it off. Some, some, uh, event must've triggered his transformation. Well, if anyone would know, Buffy, it-it should be you.

Buffy I don't.

Giles Well, did anything happen last night that, that might...

Buffy Giles, please, I can't. *runs from the library*

Giles Buffy, I'm sorry, but we can't afford to... Buffy!

Willow *watching Buffy run* Giles, shut up.

Cut to the hall. Buffy runs out of the library and down the hall. Cut back into the library.

Cordelia This is great. There's an unkillable demon in town, Angel's joined his team, the Slayer is a basket case... I'd say we've hit bottom.

Xander I have a plan.

Cordelia Oh, no, here's a lower place.

Xander I don't know what's up with Angel, but I think I may have a way to deal with this Judge guy.

Sits on the table by Cordelia.

Willow What do we do?

Xander I think, um... *looks at Cordelia, then back at Willow* I think I may need Cordelia for this one.

Willow lowers her eyes for just an instant.

Xander And we may need wheels.

Cordelia Well, my car is...

Xander It might have to be bigger.

Willow No problem. I'll get Oz. He has a van.

Xander Good. *looks at Cordelia* Okay.

Cordelia Care to let me in on the plan I'm a part of?

Xander No.

Cordelia Why not? *stands up with her hands on her hips*

Xander Because if I tell you, then you won't do it. Just meet me at Willow's house in half an hour. And wear something trashy... *looks at her ...er. walks off*

Cordelia is incensed and follows him.

Giles I'm not sure what we should do about Buffy.

Jenny Assuming they don't attack tonight I think we should just let her be.

Willow I agree.

Giles I-I-I can imagine what she's going through.

Willow No, I don't think you can.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. Drusilla is holding Miss Edith.

Angelus You should've seen her face. It was priceless. *hops up on a conveyor platform and sits* I'll never forget it.

Spike So you didn't kill her then.

Angelus Of course not.

Spike *exhales* Now, I know you haven't been in the game for a while, mate, but we still do kill people. Sort of our raison d'être, you know.

Drusilla You don't want to kill her, do you? *pokes Miss Edith's eyes* You want to hurt her. *smiles up at him* Just like you hurt me.

Angelus Nobody knows me like you do, Dru.

Spike She'd better not get in our way.

Angelus Don't worry about it.

Spike I do.

Angelus Spike, *slams his hand on a crate* my boy, *pushes it along the rollers* you **really** don't get it! *stands up* Do you? *chuckles* You tried to kill her, but you couldn't. *chuckles* Look at you. You're a wreck! *approaches him* She's stronger than any Slayer you've ever faced. *hops off of the platform* Force won't get it done. You gotta work from the inside. *sits on the platform* To kill this girl... you have to love her.

Cut to Buffy's room. She comes in and gently closes the door behind her. She sniffs as she unbuttons her coat. She sees her cross and necklace hanging from its hook and takes it in her hand. It sparkles in the light. She lets go of it, letting it swing. She looks down at the ring on her hand that Angel gave her. She pulls it off of her finger and looks at it, bursting into tears. She goes to her bed and lies on it, clutching the ring and crying uncontrollably. The camera pulls back from her as she curls up on her bed. Eventually she falls asleep and dreams. She and Angel are in bed caressing each other. Buffy runs her hand down his back over his tattoo. They both have on their rings. Angel kisses her gently on the neck. Buffy holds him with her ringed hand. She kisses his

fingers. They move under the sheets. He kisses her lips tenderly.

Angel I love you.

She opens her eyes and for an instant sees him in his game face. Cut to a funeral in bright daylight. Angel walks up to the grave. Buffy looks over at him. He looks up at her, his face bathed in sunlight.

Angel You have to know what to see.

She looks at him, not really understanding, and then back down at the grave. She looks over at the other people attending the funeral and sees Jenny lifting the veil from her face.

Buffy wakes with a start, eyes open wide. She suddenly realizes Jenny has something to do with this.

Cut to the school. Buffy marches straight to Ms. Calendar's classroom. Cut into the classroom. There are students sitting at all the computers, but she doesn't care. Jenny and Giles see her come in and smile in greeting.

Giles Oh, Buffy.

Buffy goes right past Giles straight to Jenny, puts her hand around her throat and shoves her back onto her desk.

Giles Buffy! *tries to pull her off*

Buffy What do you know?!

Student *gets up* Should I get the principal?

Giles *to the class* No, I-I-I'll deal with this. Y-y-you're, you're all dismissed! *they all leave*

Buffy *lets go and steps back* Did you do it? Did you change him?

Giles For God's sake, calm down!

Buffy Did you know this was gonna happen?

Giles You can't go around accusing everybody...

Jenny *interrupts* I didn't know... exactly. I was told... *whispers* Oh, God. *speaks* I was sent here to watch you. They told me to keep you and Angel apart. They never told me what would happen.

Giles *surprised and confused* Jenny!

Jenny I'm sorry, Rupert. Angel was supposed to pay for what he did to my people.

Buffy And me? What was I supposed to be paying for?

Jenny I didn't know what would happen until after. I swear I would've told you.

Buffy So it was me. I did it.

Jenny I think so. I mean, if you...

Giles *demanding* I don't understand.

Jenny The curse. If Angel achieved true happiness, even just a moment of... He would lose his soul.

Giles W-w-w-h-h-how do you know you were responsible f-for...

Buffy gives him a look. He takes off his glasses.

Giles Oh.

They all look down.

Jenny If there is anything that...

Buffy Curse him again.

Jenny No, I-I can't. I mean, those magicks are long lost even to my people.

Buffy You did it once. It might not be too late to save him.

Jenny It can't be done. I can't help you.

Buffy Then take me to someone who can.

Cut to Enyos' hotel room. He's smoking on his pipe. He hears the door open.

Enyos I knew she would bring you. I suppose you want answers.

Angelus Not really.

Enyos' face takes on a look of terror. He gets up and faces him.

Angelus But thanks for the offer.

Cut to an Army base outside Sunnydale. The camera pans from a high vantage point over a group of soldiers standing at attention.

Sergeant Right face, hu! Double-time, hu! *they march off* Left, left, left, left...

The camera comes down behind the barbed wire fence and pans over behind a supply building as Oz's van pulls up.

Xander Wait here. When you guys see that window open get out the ladder, come up, we'll pass you the package, okay?

Oz Okay.

Willow Be careful.

Xander opens the side doors and gets out. Cordelia follows him.

Cut to the fence. Xander cuts a few more links, pushes the fence aside and squeezes through. Cordelia is right behind him.

Xander The security here really is a joke. I should, uh, report it.

Cordelia Who am I supposed to be again?

Xander You're supposed to be a girl. Think you can handle it?

Cordelia slaps him on the arm. They sneak along the side of the building and look out from behind some crates. The coast looks clear, so they continue past a truck. A group of soldiers can be heard quickly marching by. Xander peeks out from behind the truck, and the way still looks clear. He steps over to the door and is about to reach for the knob when they are discovered by a soldier on guard duty.

Soldier Halt! *Xander shoots up his arms* Identify yourself right the hell now.

Xander Uh... Private Harris with the, uh... 33rd.

Soldier 33rd are on maneuvers.

Xander Right! Uh, I'm on leave. *turns around slowly* From them.

Soldier You always spend your leave snooping around the armory, pal? And who is she?

Cordelia Hi. I'm not a soldier. *to Xander* Right?

Xander *approaches the guard, hands still up* Look, I... I just want to give her the tour. Uh, you know what I'm saying.

Soldier The tour.

Xander Well, you know the ladies. They like to see the big guns. Gets them all hot and bothered. Can you cut me some slack, gimme a blind eye?

Soldier And why should I?

Xander Well, if you do, I won't tell Colonel Newsome that your boots ain't regulation, your post wasn't covered, *grabs his M-16 and gives it back to him properly* and you hold your gun like a sissy girl.

Soldier *takes the rifle* You got 20 minutes, nimrod.

Xander *smiles* I just need 5. *starts for the door, but looks back* Uh, forget I said that last part.

The guard checks his watch. Xander opens the door to let Cordelia in, gives the guard a thumb's-up and follows her in. Cut inside.

Cordelia Okay, what was that? And who are you?

Xander Remember Halloween, I got turned into a soldier?

Cordelia Yeah.

Xander Well, I still remember all of it. I know procedure, ordnance, access codes, everything. I know the whole layout for this base, and I'm pretty sure I can put together an M-16 in 57 seconds.

Cordelia Well, I'm sort of impressed. But let's just find the thing and get out of here.

Xander Okay. *starts looking around*

Cordelia *hops onto a crate to sit* So, does looking at guns really make girls wanna have sex? That's scary.

Xander Yeah, I guess.

Cordelia Well, does looking at guns make you wanna have sex?

Xander I'm seventeen. Looking at linoleum makes me wanna have sex.

Cordelia just looks at him. Cut outside to the van.

Willow I wish they'd hurry. *cut inside the van*

Oz So, do you guys steal weapons from the Army a lot?

Willow Well, we don't have cable, so we have to make our own fun.

Oz I get you.

Willow *after a pause* Do you wanna make out with me?

Oz What?

Willow *looks away* Forget it. I'm sorry. *decides she wants to know* Well, do you?

Oz Sometimes when I'm sitting in class... You know, I'm not thinking about class, 'cause that would never happen. I think about kissing you. And it's like everything stops. It's like, it's like freeze frame. Willow kissage.

He nods his head and smiles to himself. Willow smiles over at him. He looks up at her.

Oz Oh, I'm not gonna kiss you.

Willow *confused* What? But freeze frame!

Oz Well, to the casual observer, it would appear that you're trying to make your friend Xander jealous or even the score or something. And that's on the empty side. *looks off into space* See, in my fantasy when I'm kissing **you**, you're kissing **me**. *looks back at her* It's okay. I can wait. *sees the window open* We're up.

He gets out of the van. Willow watches him get out and smiles.

Cut to the hotel room. Jenny, Buffy and Giles come in.

Jenny Oh, my God.

She rushes in to her uncle. He's laid out on the bed, dead and covered with blood. Buffy looks up at the wall behind him. A message is written **there in blood** WAS IT GOOD FOR YOU TOO.

Giles He's doing this deliberately, Buffy. He's trying to make it harder for you.

Buffy He's only making it easier. I know what I have to do.

Giles What?

Buffy Kill him.

Part 4

Spike's warehouse. Angelus comes down the metal spiral staircase. The Judge slowly comes over to Spike.

Judge I am ready.

Spike About time.

Drusilla sits on his lap and kisses him. The Judge walks off in disgust.

Spike Have fun.

Angelus *bending to Spike's ear* Too bad you can't come with, huh? I'll be thinkin' of you.

Spike I won't be in this chair forever.

Angelus takes Drusilla's hand and they start out after the Judge.

Spike What happens if your girlfriend shows up?

Angelus I'm gonna give her a kiss. *to the Judge* Don't you look spiffy!

Judge Spiffy?

Drusilla smiles up at him. Spike is left behind all by himself.

Cut to Giles' office. Xander and Oz lift a long crate onto his desk.

Xander Happy Birthday, Buffy. I hope you like the color. *steps back*

She looks down at the box. Giles positions a crowbar on the lock.

Buffy Giles, we go to the factory first, but they might not be there. They're on the offensive. We need to figure out where they'd go.

Giles lifts on the crowbar and breaks the clasp.

Giles Agreed. *opens the box*

Buffy *looks into the box* This is good.

Jenny *in the doorway* Do you, uh... *Giles looks at her* Is there something I can do?

Buffy Get out.

Jenny I-I just want to help.

Giles *looks away* She just said get out.

Buffy looks up at Giles. He looks sadly into the crate. Jenny turns around and leaves.

Xander *steps up* Do you want me to show you how to use it?

Buffy Yes, I do.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. It's deserted. Buffy walks up to the table.

Buffy I knew it.

Giles *looking up and around* We haven't a bead on where they would go?

Buffy *exhales* I don't know, uh... somewhere crowded, I guess. I mean, the Judge needs bodies, right?

Willow The Bronze?

Xander It's closed tonight.

Cordelia There's not a lot of choices in Sunnydale. It's not like people are gonna line up to get massacred.

Oz Uh, guys? If I were gonna line up, I know where I'd go.

Cut to Sunnydale Mall. The camera pans across a line of people at the refreshment stand in the middle of the mall. It pans over the top to show a double door at the end of the mall on a landing midway between floors. The area between the shops is crowded with people. Cut to the stairs. They lead up from both sides to the landing. Customers are going up and down between the floors. The camera follows a woman up one side and over to the doors. She continues out of view up the next flight. The doors open, and the Judge, Angelus and Drusilla walk in flanked by their troops. They close the doors behind them. A man is coming up the stairs. The Judge reaches out with his hand, and an arc of energy emanates from it to the man. The man freezes, a look of surprise on his face, and he quickly begins to combust. He disappears in a puff of flame and smoke.

Angelus Lock the exits, boys.

The vampires hurry down the stairs to do Angelus' bidding.

Angelus *to the Judge* It's all yours.

The Judge smiles.

Cut to an elevator. The doors open and Buffy strides out. Giles and Xander follow carrying the crate on their shoulders. The others bring up the rear.

Buffy Everybody keep back. Damage control only. Take out any lesser vamps if you can. I'll handle the Smurf.

Cut to the Judge. He takes a couple of steps down. A customer squeezes by Angelus and heads down the stairs branching to the left. A young couple comes up on the right. The Judge extends his arms, and his energy arcs out to and through them. Cut to a shot of the stairs from the refreshment stand. The Judge's energy arcs through everyone in the area. They all freeze where they stand. Cut to the Judge. He smiles widely. Angelus and Drusilla enjoy the show.

Drusilla *bouncing with glee* Oh, goody!

Suddenly a crossbow bolt hits the Judge in the chest and breaks his concentration. The arcs of energy disappear, and the people are all dazed. The Judge grabs at the bolt and pulls it from his chest.

Judge Who dares?

Angelus and Drusilla look over at the refreshment stand. Cut to the stand. The camera pans up from the floor, past Willow, Oz, Giles and Cordelia, past Xander opening the crate and up to Buffy standing on top, holding the crossbow.

Buffy Think I got his attention.

Judge You're a fool. *cut to him* No weapon forged can stop me.

Buffy *cut to her lowers the bow* That was then.

Xander hands her the weapon from the box, and she raises the anti-tank rocket launcher to her shoulder.

Buffy This is now.

She powers it on. Angelus and Drusilla exchange a look. Buffy sets her sights and opens the trigger guard. The rest of the team takes cover behind the snack counter. Angelus and Drusilla begin to run. Buffy takes aim. The Judge just looks at her. Angel and Drusilla leap over the stair railing. Buffy is ready.

Judge What's that do?

Buffy pulls the trigger and the rocket flies straight into the Judge's chest as Angelus and Drusilla fly over the railing. The Judge disappears in an explosion of flame and smoke. The people in the mall scream and start to panic and run. Angelus and Drusilla hit the floor below. Bits of charred Judge fall all around them. Buffy looks up from the rocket launcher's sights and looks over at them in satisfaction. Angelus gets up and runs off. Drusilla freaks out and runs the other way. The

team looks over the counter at what's left of the Judge. The smoke cloud from the explosion billows its way up to the ceiling.

Buffy Best present ever. *hands the weapon down to Xander*

Xander Knew you'd like it.

Willow Do you think he's dead?

Buffy We can't be sure. Pick up the pieces and keep them separate.

They all start over to collect what's left of the Judge.

Cordelia Pieces? We get the pieces. Our job sucks!

Cut to a side area of the mall. Angelus comes in and looks up at Buffy. Frightened customers are running every which way. Buffy sees him, jumps down from the refreshment stand and starts to give chase. Angelus struggles past some people and runs.

Cut to the area below the explosion. Parts of the Judge lie everywhere and are still burning. The smoke reaches the sprinklers and they turn on everywhere.

Cut to the side hall where Buffy last saw Angelus. The sprinklers rain down on her and she's getting soaked. She can't see Angelus anywhere. Suddenly he comes at her and hits her from behind. She falls over backward.

Angelus You know what the worst part was, huh? Pretending that I loved you. If I'd known how easily you'd give it up, I wouldn't have even bothered.

Buffy *gets up* That doesn't work anymore. You're not Angel.

Angelus You'd like to think that, wouldn't you? It doesn't matter. The important thing is you made me the man I am today! *smiles evilly*

Buffy kicks him in the face. He blocks her next swing and punches her in the face and in the gut. He grabs her and swings her around to throw her, but her footing is good and she regains her balance. He kicks her in the face and this time she falls to the floor.

Cut to Willow bending down to pick up a piece of the Judge's armor. She's been soaked to the skin by the sprinklers. The camera pans from her over to Oz who has found an actual body part.

Oz Uh... *points* Arm.

Cut to the side area. Angelus grabs Buffy as she tries to get up and heaves her over onto her back again. She rolls around to her feet and comes at him. She swings, but he blocks and hits her instead. He follows up with a backhand punch and she hits the floor again.

Angelus Not quittin' on me already, are ya? *she looks up at him* Come on, Buffy. You know you want it, huh?

She leaps up and kicks him in the face. He arches backward and then snaps forward. Buffy knees him in the chin and then delivers a series of punches to his gut. She ends with a punch to his face. He isn't fazed, and

lunges at her. She grabs his arm and diverts him into a display case. He crashes through the glass, but immediately straightens back up, breaking the top pane and the frame of the case as well. She kicks him in the face and again in the chest, and he staggers backward into a potted tree. She pulls out a stake and stands ready to finish the job. Angelus straightens up and faces her. Buffy doesn't move, but instead lowers the stake and just stares at him.

Angelus You can't do it. You can't kill me.

Her anger takes over and she kicks him extremely hard in the crotch. Angelus grabs his groin and moans in extreme pain. He collapses to his knees. Buffy turns her back on him and walks away.

Buffy Give me time.

Angelus is on all fours now and can't move to follow her. Cut to the street in front of Buffy's house. Giles pulls up in his ancient car to drop her off. He looks over at her and shuts off the engine. Cut into the car. The only noise is that of the crickets outside. Giles breaks the silence.

Giles It's not over. I-I-I suppose you know that. He'll come after you, particularly. His profile, uh, well, he... he's likely to strike out at the things that made him the most human.

Buffy You must be so disappointed in me.

Giles No. *she looks at him* No, no, I'm not.

Buffy But this is all my fault.

Giles No. I don't believe it is. Do you want me to wag my finger at you and tell you that you acted rashly? You did. A-and I can. I know that you loved him. And... he... has proven more than once that he loved you. You couldn't have known what would happen. The coming months a-are gonna, are gonna be hard... I, I suspect on all of us, but... if it's guilt you're looking for, Buffy, I'm, I'm not your man. All you will get from me is, is my support. And my respect.

Buffy smiles at him through her tears.

Cut to the living room in Buffy's house. "Stowaway", an

old black-and- white movie with Alice Faye and Robert Young, is playing on TV. The actors are dancing slowly, and the woman is singing "Goodnight, My Love" to the man.

Lyrics Goodnight, my love / My moment with you now is ending / It was so heavenly holding you close to me
Joyce comes in holding a plate with two cupcakes, one with a candle, and a large coffee mug.

Joyce Did I miss anything?

Buffy Um... just some singing and some running around.

Joyce sets down the plate and mug and looks around for the matches.

Joyce Mm. I'm sorry I didn't have time to make you a real cake. *finds the matches*

Buffy No. This is good.

Joyce sits back on the couch with her feet up.

Joyce But we're still going shopping on Saturday. *Buffy looks at her* So what'd you do for your birthday? Did you have fun?

Buffy *looks down, then back up* I got older.

Joyce *looks into her face* You look the same to me.

She leans back to the table and strikes a match to light the candle. The wick starts to burn and she blows out the match. She sets the matchbook and spent match on the table and leans back on the couch again facing her daughter.

Joyce Happy Birthday. *smiles* I don't have to sing, do I?

Buffy *looks down at her hands* No.

Joyce *indicates the burning candle* Well, go on, make a wish.

Buffy stares at it for a long moment.

Buffy I'll just let it burn.

Joyce reaches up and strokes her daughter's hair. Buffy leans over and rests her head on her mother. Joyce continues gently stroking Buffy's hair. The song in the movie comes to an end.

Lyrics Sleep tight, my love / Goodnight, my love / Remember that you're mine, sweetheart

Phases

Written by Rob Des Hotel & Dean Batali

Directed by Bruce Seth Green

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Phases". It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.09.15

This episode was originally broadcast on January 27, 1998.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Sunnydale High. Cut to the hall by the trophy case. Oz is hunched over inspecting Catherine Madison's cheerleading trophy. He stares at its eyes as he moves his head from one side to the other. Willow enters the hall from outside and comes up to him.

Willow *smiles* Hi.

Oz *straightens up* Oh, that's what I was gonna say.

Willow What cha looking at? *looks into the case*

Oz *points* This cheerleading trophy. *moves and watches* It's like its eyes follow you wherever you go. I like it.

He stands back up straight again and gives his attention back to Willow. They start down the hall together.

Willow So did you like the movie last night?

Oz I don't know. T-today's movies are kind of like popcorn. You know, you forget about them as soon as they're done. I do remember I liked the popcorn, though. *stops walking*

Willow *smiles* Yeah, it was good. And I had a really fun time with the rest. *gets a confused look from Oz* I mean, the part with you.

Oz Oh, that's great. Uh, my time was also of the good.

Willow Mine, too. *awkwardness sets in* Well, then...

Oz raises his eyebrows expectantly. Willow looks past him and sees Buffy down the hall.

Willow Oh, there. *points* I have my friend. So I will go to her. *goes*

Oz I'll see you then. Uh, later. *smiles*

Larry and some other jocks come walking the other direction and stare at Willow and Buffy walking away. Larry bites his fist and comes over to Oz.

Larry Man! Oz, I would love to get me some of that Buffy and Willow action, if you know what I mean. *laughs*

Oz *nods* That's great, Larry. You've really mastered the single entendre.

Larry notices a pretty girl coming down the hall and ignores the insult to stare at her. As she goes by he taps her books, and they fall out of her hands.

Girl Hey!

Larry Oops!

She bends down to pick up her books, and Larry and the other jocks stare at her legs.

Larry Ohhh! Oh, thank you, thighmaster! *laughs*

The girl gives them a dirty look and leaves.

Larry So, Oz, man, what's up with that? Dating a junior? Uh, let me guess. That little innocent schoolgirl thing is just, uh, just an act, right?

Oz Yeah. Yeah, she's actually an evil mastermind. It's fun.

Larry I mean, she's gotta be putting out, or what's the point? What are you gonna do, talk? *laughs* Come on, fess up. How far have you gotten?

Cut outside to Buffy and Willow walking along the colonnade.

Willow Nowhere. I mean, he said he was gonna wait until I was ready, but I'm ready. Honest. I'm good to go here.

Buffy Well, I think it's nice that he's not just being an animal.

Willow It is nice. He's great. We have a lot of fun. But I want smoochies!

Buffy Have you dropped any hints?

Willow I've dropped anvils.

Buffy Ah, he'll come around. What guy could resist your wily Willow charms?

Willow At last count, all of them. Maybe more.

Buffy Well, none of them know a thing. They all get an 'F' in Willow.

Willow But I want Oz to get an 'A', and, oh, one of those gold stars.

They sit on a bench.

Buffy He will.

Willow Well, he better hurry. I don't want to be the only girl in school without a real boyfriend.

Buffy looks down sadly. Willow realizes her insensitivity.

Willow Oh, I'm such an idiot. I'm sorry. I-I shouldn't even be talking about... Do you want me to go away?

Buffy I wish you wouldn't.

Willow How are you holding up anyway?

Buffy I'm holding. I was going on two minutes there without thinking about Angel.

Willow *trying to be cheerful* Well, there you go.

Buffy But I would do a lot better if you and Xander and I could do that 'sharing our misery' thing tonight.

Willow Great. I'll give Xander a call. What's his number? Oh, yeah, 1- 800-I'm-Dating-A-Skanky-Ho. *rolls her eyes*

Buffy *surprised* Meow!

Willow *smiles* Really? Thanks. I've never gotten a 'meow' before.

Buffy Well-deserved.

Willow Darn tootin'. I'm just saying Xander and Cordelia? I mean, what does he see in her anyway?

Cut inside Cordelia's car in a secluded area of the park that night. She and Xander are making out. Suddenly Xander breaks off.

Xander But what could she possibly see in him?

Cordelia Excuse me? We didn't come here to talk about Willow. We came here to do things I can never tell my father about because he still thinks I'm a... good girl.

Xander I just don't trust Oz with her. I mean, he's a senior, he's attractive – okay, maybe not to me, but – and he's in a band. And we know what kind of element that attracts.

Cordelia I've dated lots of guys in bands.

Xander *nods* Thank you.

Cordelia Do you even wanna be here?

Xander I'm not running away.

Cordelia Because when you're not babbling about poor, defenseless Willow, you are **raving** about the all-powerful Buffy.

Xander I do not babble. I occasionally run-on, every now and then I yammer...

Cordelia Xander?

Xander Yeah?

Cordelia Look around. We're in my daddy's car, it's just the two of us, there is a beautiful, big full moon outside tonight. It doesn't get more romantic than this. *insistent* So shut up!

They start making out again. Cut outside. The camera pulls away from the car into the bushes until a large, hairy beast watching them comes into view. It growls menacingly.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part I

Inside Cordelia's father's car at the park. She and Xander are sucking face. Xander hears some rustling outside and breaks off.

Xander Did you hear that?

Cordelia What is it now?

Xander I thought I heard something.

Cordelia I-is Willow sending out some sorta distress signal that only **you** can hear?

Xander Huh.

He smiles at her sheepishly, and they go back to it. An instant later Xander hears more rustling, louder this time, and pulls back again.

Xander Okay, now I **know** I heard something.

Cordelia All right, that's it. You know, your mind hasn't been here all night. How about I just drop you off...

A hairy arm with a clawed hand punches through the convertible top. Cordelia screams and makes a grab for the keys.

Xander Get us outta here!

The creature on the roof of the car snarls as it reaches around for them inside. The keys aren't in the ignition, and Cordelia frantically searches for them on the floor.

Cordelia *screams* Where are the keys?

Xander We should be moving! Let's go!

Cordelia *finds the keys* Oh, I got 'em! Got 'em!

She fumbles with the keys, but manages to get them into the ignition and starts the car. She puts it into reverse and screams as she guns the car backward a ways and then slams on the brakes. The beast tumbles off of the back and into a tree. Cordelia gets the car in drive and speeds away. The camera shows the car from above with a gaping hole in the ragtop as it maneuvers back to the road and races off.

Xander Told ya I heard something.

Cut to the school parking lot the next day. Buffy inspects the hole in the roof.

Buffy And you're sure it was a werewolf? *gets off of the car*

Xander Well, let's see, um, six feet tall, claws, a big old snout in the middle of his face like a wolf. Um, yeah, I'm sticking with my first guess.

Oz Seems wise.

Xander Oh, oh, and then there was that little thing where it tried to bite us.

Cordelia It was so awful. *puts her head on Xander's shoulder*

Xander *puts his arm around her* I know.

Cordelia *tears herself away* Daddy just had this car detailed.

Giles comes up behind Buffy with a newspaper.

Buffy So what's the word?

Giles Well, it seems there were a, a number of other attacks by a wild dog around town. *hands the paper to Buffy* Several animal carcasses were found mutilated.

Willow You mean, like bunnies and stuff? *upset* No, don't tell me. *looks at Oz*

Oz *reassuringly* Oh, don't worry. I mean, they might not look it, but bunnies can really take care of themselves.

Willow *calmer and smiling* Yeah.

Oz Yeah.

Giles *takes the paper back* Yes, uh, um, fortunately, no people were injured.

Buffy That falls into the 'that's a switch' column.

Giles Well, for now. But my guess is that this werewolf will be back at next month's full moon.

Willow What about tonight's full moon?

Giles *confused* Pardon?

Willow Well, last night was the night before the full moon, traditionally known as... 'the night before the full moon.'

Giles Meaning the accepted legend that werewolves only prowl during a full moon might be erroneous.

Cordelia Or it could be a crock.

Xander Unless the werewolf was using last year's almanac.

Buffy Looks like Giles has some schooling to do.

Giles Yes, I must admit I, I am intrigued. Werewolves, it's... it's one of the classics. *start away* I, I'm sure my books and I are in for a fascinating afternoon. *leaves* Buffy and Cordelia watch him go. Xander smirks at Giles' typical behavior.

Buffy He needs to get a pet.

Cut to the gym. The class is seated on the bleachers listening to the female self-defense coach.

Coach Sunnydale is becoming more dangerous all the time. And a full moon like tonight tends to bring out the crazies, but with some simple basics of self-defense each of you can learn how to protect yourself.

Buffy *quietly to Willow* Here's a suggestion: move away from the Hellmouth.

Coach What you wanna do is gain advantage of the situation as quickly as possible.

Willow smiles at Buffy's suggestion. Behind her Oz reaches up and turns the tag sticking out of her sweat-shirt back inside. She looks back at him curiously.

Oz Tag. *pats her on the back*

Willow smiles at Buffy. Cut to Xander and Cordelia.

Coach Your attacker may have the benefit of surprise.

Xander Would you look at that? He's all over her.

Cordelia looks over at Buffy, Oz and Willow.

Coach But if you plot ahead,...

Xander Psst! Hey, buddy, this is a public forum here.

Cordelia looks back at him, as do Buffy, Oz and Willow.

Coach ...then you can turn that advantage to yourself.

Cordelia I think you splashed on just a little too much 'Obsession For Dorks'.

Coach By being prepared, you have the power. Okay, everyone get into your assigned groups.

The students all get up from the bleachers and go down to the floor. Larry takes off his sweat jacket and goes to the table in front of them to check which group he's in. Xander sees his arm all wrapped up in a bandage just above the elbow.

Xander What happened?

Larry Oh, last week some huge dog jumped out of the bushes and bit me. Thirty-nine stitches. They oughta shoot those strays.

Oz *next to Larry* I've been there, man. *holds up his finger* My cousin Jordy just got his grownup teeth in? Does not like to be tickled.

Xander laughs. Larry just shakes his head and then goes over to Theresa, who is doing stretching exercises.

Larry *into her ear* Theresa! *she straightens up* Be still my shorts. We're in the same group. *chuckles and nods* I may have to attack you.

Theresa No, a-a-actually, I think, uh, in our group there are a few of us.

Buffy *joins Theresa* And I'm one of the few.

Willow comes up behind her quickly, takes her arm and pulls her aside. Buffy keeps her eye on Larry another moment, then looks at Willow as she explains.

Willow Don't forget, you're supposed to be a meek little girlie-girl like the rest of us. *walks off*

Buffy *looks at Larry* Spoil my fun.

Cut to a few minutes later. Everyone is lined up and paired off, girls in front, boys in back.

Coach Okay, everyone, listen up. I wanna show you what to do should you be attacked from behind. *looks at Buffy* In this situation, bend forward, using your back and shoulders *bends her over to demonstrate* to flip the assailant over to the ground.

The other girls all bend over, too. The boys follow Larry's lead and put their arms around the girls' necks. Buffy grabs Larry's arm and pretends at a few attempts to flip him over. Willow gives her a smile and nod.

Buffy Uhh! Uhh!

Larry Oh, Summers, you are turning me on.

He grabs her butt cheek hard with his other hand. Buffy isn't about to take that, and immediately flips him over hard onto the mats in front of them. Larry groans as he lies there. Willow shoots Buffy a look as she and Oz stand back up. The coach looks over at her also.

Oz *points* That works, too.

Cut to the library. Giles is demonstrating the phases of the moon using a large earth globe with a smaller moon globe attached by a bar.

Giles And, uh, while there's absolutely no scientific explanation for lunar effect on the human psyche, uh, the phases of the moon, uh, do seem to exert a great deal of psychological influence. And th-the full moon is, is, seems to bring out our darkest qualities.

Xander And yet, ironically, uh, led to the invention of the moon pie.

Giles *gets the joke* Oh... *chuckles* Yes, the moon pie. *laughs harder* *gets looks from Buffy and Willow* Y-you see, uh, the-the werewolf, uh, is such a, a potent e-e-extreme representation of our inborn animalistic traits that it e-emerges for three full consecutive **nights** the full moon and, uh, the two nights surrounding it.

Xander Quite the party animal.

Giles Quite. And it, uh, acts on-on pure instinct. No conscience, uh, uh, predatory and, and aggressive.

Buffy In other words, your typical male.

Xander On behalf of my gender, hey.

Giles Yes, let's not jump to any conclusions.

Buffy I didn't jump. I took a tiny step, and there conclusions were.

Giles The point is that our wolfman could also be a-a-a

wolfwoman, or- or anyone who was bitten by a werewolf.

Xander So then I'm guessing your standard silver bullets are in order here?

Giles No. No bullets. No matter who this werewolf is, i-it's still a human being, who may be completely unaware of his or her condition.

Buffy So tonight we bring 'em back alive.

Cut to that night in a secluded area of the park. The moon is full, and several cars are parked there with couples making out. Giles walks by some cars holding his flashlight out in front of him. Buffy meets up with him.

Giles *quietly* Anything yet?

Buffy *quietly* Yes. And you won't believe what I saw. Brittany Podell was making out with Owen Stadel, but he goes with Barrett Williams. *gets a look from Giles* If she ever found... No, um, no, no sign of the werewolf. How about you?

Giles Uh, the same. *looks around* I thought we might, uh... I thought we might knock on a few windows, uh, ask if anyone has seen anything yet.

Buffy *gives him a look* Giles, no one's seen anything.

Giles Oh, yes. No, of-of-of course not, no. Yes.

He goes off to continue looking. She stares after him a moment, and then heads off into the bushes herself. Cut into the bushes. Buffy scans around with her flashlight as she walks into a small clearing. Suddenly she hears a noise like a latch releasing and yelps as she finds herself being pulled up in a net trap. Below her a hunter points his scoped, double-barreled flintlock up at her and pulls back the hammer.

Cain Gotcha!

Part 2

The park at night. Cain takes a closer look at what he's caught.

Cain What the hell?

Buffy *yells* Giles! Giles!

Giles *comes running* Hey! *sees Cain with his gun* Whoa! *holds his arms up*

Cain Hands are good right about there.

Giles Who, who are you? What are you doing?

Cain The name's Cain. I'm the one with the gun, which means I'm the one who gets to do the interviewing.

Buffy Ahem. Hey, before we get all chummy here, how about we do something about me being in this net thing?

Cain exhales, lowers the flintlock and leans it against a boulder. He pulls out his buck-knife and cuts the rope holding up the net. It falls, and Buffy hits the ground fairly hard. Giles reaches down to untangle the net.

Giles You alright?

Buffy Yeah. *gets up*

Cain *sees Buffy clearly now* Gotta say, I'm impressed.

Giles Excuse me?

Buffy looks up at Giles, then back at Cain.

Cain Well, it's good to get the fruit while it's fresh.

Giles You'd be wise to take that back.

Cain Hey, what a man and a girl do in lovers' lane at night is nobody's busi...

Giles makes a move toward Cain, but Buffy holds him back.

Buffy Oh, okay, hey, enough, repulsive brain. It's not what you think. *looks at Giles* We're hunting werewolves.

Cain laughs.

Buffy Okay, it's funny if you don't believe in werewolves.

Cain No, it's funny thinking about you two catching

one. I mean, this guy looks like he's auditioning to be a librarian, and, you, well, you're a girl.

Giles I assure you she's quite capable.

Cain Uh-huh. Lemme ask you something, sweetheart. Exactly how many of these animals have you taken out?

Buffy As of today?

Cain I tore a tooth from the mouth of every werewolf that I killed. *holds out his necklace* This next one will bring the total to an even dozen.

Buffy So you're just gonna kill it?

Cain Well, see, that's the thing. Their pelts fetch a pretty penny in Sri Lanka, and it's a little hard to skin 'em when they're alive.

Giles Y-you hunt werewolves f-for sport?

Cain No, no, I'm in it purely for the money.

Buffy And it doesn't bother you that a werewolf is a person twenty-eight days out of the month?

Cain That's why I only hunt 'em the other three. I'd really love to stay and chat, *crouches down to collect the net* but I'm on a tight schedule. Any idea where else the boys and girls like to get together around here?

Buffy You're looking for a party?

Cain No, but the werewolf is. They're suckers for that whole sexual heat thing. Sense it miles away. Since this little doggie ain't here, I guess he found another place. *stands up*

Buffy Sorry. Wish I could help you.

Cain But you don't know squat? *shakes his head* Gee, what a surprise. *leaves*

Buffy turns and heads back to the car.

Giles Where are we going?

Buffy I think I know where to look. We just have to make it there before mein furrier.

Cut to a street. Theresa is walking home. She passes a house with a fenced in front yard overgrown with weeds. She hears some rustling and stops to look around. Seeing nothing, she continues. Cut to a view of her from the other side of the fence. The camera follows behind her. She hears more rustling and stops to look again. Something lets out a low growl, and Theresa decides it's time to run. She looks back again and doesn't see Angelus in front of her. She slams into him and screams.

Angelus Everything okay? *twirls a daisy*

Theresa Yeah, I just, uh, I, I thought I heard something... behind me.

He walks around her to have a look, then turns back to her.

Angelus No one there.

Theresa Oh. I guess I was wrong. I could have sworn that...

Angelus It's okay. It can get pretty scary out here, all alone at night.

Theresa Yeah.

Angelus Hey, don't I know you from somewhere? Don't you go to school with Buffy?

Theresa Oh, you know Buffy? *smiles*

Angelus *chuckles* Yes, I do, very well.

Theresa *keeps smiling* Oh.

Angelus Come on, I'll get you home.

They walk off together, taking another quick look behind them.

Cut to the Bronze. Lotion is the band tonight. They're playing "Blind For Now" as the camera pans from the mirrors on the far wall of the Bronze and over to the band playing on the stage.

Lyrics And then sweep this town into a Monster Truck of shame / Carved out of soap and steel and clay and salty fame / You are the first to look away and against me / You shake the squirrel out your tree

Cut to Cordelia and Willow sitting on opposite sides of a couch by a low table.

Cordelia I mean, with Xander it's always, 'Buffy did this', 'Willow said that'. Buffy, Buffy. Willow, Willow. It's like I don't even exist. *leans back and folds her arm*

Willow I sometimes feel like that. *looks over at Cordelia*

Cordelia And then when I call him on it, he acts all confused, like I'm the one with the problem.

Willow *nods* His 'do I smell something?' look.

Cordelia All a part of his little guy games. It's like he's there, but then he's not there, and he wants it, but then he doesn't want it.

Willow He's so busy looking around at everything he doesn't have, he doesn't even realize what he **does** have.

Cordelia Well, he should at least realize that you have Oz.

Willow *frowns and raises an eyebrow* Mm, I'm not sure I do. *confused* Oz and I are in some sort of holding pattern, except without the holding or... anything else.

Cordelia What's he waiting for? What's his problem? *rolls her eyes* Oh, that's right, he's a guy.

Willow *disgusted* Yeah, him and Xander. Guys.

Cordelia Who do they think they are?

Willow A couple of guys.

Suddenly the werewolf drops down from above onto the table in front of them. They both scream and run from the couch in opposite directions. Panic sets in around them, and the werewolf just stands there at a half crouch, confused by all the noise.

Cut outside to the alley. Giles and Buffy come rolling up in his decrepit car as patrons flee for their lives.

Giles Looks as though your hunch was right.

Buffy Who could resist Sunnydale's own house of hormones?

She opens the door and gets out. Willow sees her and stops.

Willow The werewolf, it's in there.

Buffy makes a dash for the door as it's about to be shut by the bouncer.

Buffy Coming through!

She rushes through the door. Cut inside. The door is closed on her and she looks back at it as it slams shut with a thud. She slowly steps into the main area and looks around. The place has been trashed by the panicked people. Tables and chairs are lying everywhere, spilled drinks are splattered on the floor. Buffy sees a shadow behind a bead curtain and makes for it. As she walks she takes off her backpack and pulls out a chain. Cut to the restroom and backstage area. Buffy sees the bead curtain that leads to the stage office swinging. She climbs the few steps and goes in. She goes through another door to the stage. The chain is wrapped around her forearm, ready to use against the werewolf. Slowly she steps out onto the stage. When she's passed the drums the werewolf comes out from behind the stage curtains, snarling. Buffy spins around to face it and drops her backpack. She quickly unravels a length of chain from her arms and gets ready. She throws the chain out, and it wraps itself perfectly around the werewolf's neck. It begins to struggle and yanks at the chain, pulling Buffy into and over the drums. The chain falls from the werewolf's neck, and it makes a dash for a window. Cut outside the window. The werewolf comes crashing through and out into the alley. It takes a quick look both ways and runs away.

Cut to later. The Bronze employees are back and begin to straighten things up. Buffy puts her chain back into her backpack as Cain watches.

Cain You let it get away.

Buffy I didn't let it do anything. I had the chain around its neck.

Cain Chain? What were you gonna do, take it for a walk?

Buffy I was going to lock it up.

Cain That's beautiful. *approaches her* This is what happens when a woman tries to do a man's job.

Buffy gets up and puts on the backpack as Giles comes up behind Cain.

Giles Now, you look here, Mr. Cain. This girl risked her life trying to capture a beast that you haven't as yet been able to find. *takes his bag off of his shoulder*

Cain Uh-huh. And Daddy's doing a great job carrying her bag of milk bones.

Giles throws down his bag, but restrains himself. Cain steps closer to Buffy.

Cain You know, sis, if that thing out there harms anyone, it's going to be on your pretty little head. I hope you can live with that.

Buffy *stares him down* I live with that every day.

Cain *shakes his head* First they tell me I can't hunt an elephant for its ivory... *turns and leaves* Now I've gotta deal with People for the Ethical Treatment of Werewolves.

Giles *under his breath* Pillock! Right, let's move out.

He grabs his bag and goes. Buffy follows right behind.

Cut to a loading dock area. The werewolf walks into the light next to a trailer and stops to sniff the air. It looks down and sees a large splotch of blood in the gutter. It continues along the side of the trailer. When it reaches the far end Theresa falls to the ground from behind the trailer with a vampire bite clearly visible on her neck. The werewolf looks down at her, but doesn't make a move to eat her. On the other side of her Angelus steps up in his game face and growls at the werewolf. The werewolf bares its fangs at Angelus and growls more loudly. Angelus returns the growl, baring his own fangs and staring the werewolf down, warning him away from Theresa's body. Angelus slowly backs away and leaves. The werewolf looks down at Theresa again and growls, but makes no move to touch her.

Cut to the park. Buffy comes walking up behind Giles' car.

Buffy Giles?

When she doesn't see anyone in it she runs up to it.

Buffy Giles!

She reaches the open window and looks in. Giles wakes and sits up.

Giles Uhh! *takes off his glasses and rubs his eyes*

Buffy I didn't see you there. I thought something had happened.

Giles Oh, no, I'm, uh...

Buffy opens the passenger door and gets into the car. A newscast is playing on the radio.

Giles *yawns* I'm okay. I'm just, um, fine... uh, just, uh, I'm, uh.... Uh, any sign of the, uh, werewolf? *puts his glasses back on*

Buffy No. I'm guessing you didn't see anything either from that vantage point of having your eyes closed.

Giles It's, uh, it's, it's, uh, gonna be light soon, so we'd better...

Buffy Wait.

Radio newscaster Police say that the incident was apparently connected to the animal mutilation which occurred two nights ago. The coroner's office has identified the body as that of Sunnydale High School student Theresa Klusmeyer, age seventeen. The authorities ask that anyone with further information...

Giles Buffy, we're gonna get this thing. We have another whole night. *Buffy looks at him* There's nothing more we can do now. It's nearly sunrise. That werewolf won't be a werewolf much longer.

Buffy looks down sadly.

Cut to a view of Sunnydale from atop a hill. The sun is coming up in the distance. Cut to the werewolf asleep

on the ground in the woods. The camera pans from its hind paws over to its head. When sunlight hits the werewolf it morphs back into its human form. Oz wakes up, opens his eyes and looks around confused. He sits up and stares around at the forest. He looks down at himself and realizes he's naked.

Oz *confused* Huh.

Part 3

The dining room at Oz's house. He's on the phone with his aunt.

Oz Aunt Maureen. Hey, it's me. Um, what? Oh! It's, uh... actually it's healing okay. That's pretty much the reason I called. Um, I wanted to ask you something. Is Jordy a werewolf? Uh-huh. And how long has that been going on? Uh-huh. What? No, no reason. Um... Thanks. Yeah, love to Uncle Ken.

He lowers the phone and turns it off. He stares off into space as the new knowledge that he is the werewolf sinks in.

Cut to the halls at Sunnydale High. Oz walks slowly among the other students as he makes his way to the library. He looks down and around at everyone, still trying to deal with this new revelation about himself. When he reaches the library he stares at the door for a long moment.

Cut inside the library. Buffy paces. Willow is sitting at the table with Giles behind her, and Xander is leaning against the counter.

Buffy I can't believe I let that thing get away. Cain was right. I shoulda killed it when I had the chance.

Oz comes in, and has overheard that last comment.

Oz Killed what?

Buffy Uh, the, uh, *ahem* the werewolf. It-it-it was out last night.

Oz Is everybody okay? Did anyone get bitten or, or scratched?

Willow No, we're fine.

Oz Gladness.

Buffy Yeah, but he got someone. Theresa.

Oz 'Got', as in...

Buffy just looks at him and briefly raises her eyebrows.

Oz Oh, I'm sorry.

Buffy And I coulda stopped it. *sits*

Giles Well, we, we have one more night.

Oz Another night?

Buffy Oh, yeah. Believe me, I'm gonna give that wolfie something to howl about.

Oz Hmm.

Xander *comes over* But while we hang here doing nothing, there's a human werewolf walking around out there, probably making fun of us.

Willow *with a hint of sarcasm* The way werewolves always do.

Oz But there's really no way to tell who it is.

Xander Oh, sure there is. Giles knows stuff, and I'm practically an expert on the subject.

Willow On account of once you were a hyena?

Xander I know what it's like to crave the taste of freshly killed meat, to be taken over by those uncontrollable urges.

Buffy You said you didn't remember anything about that.

Xander *chuckles* I said I didn't remember anything about that. Look, the point is, is I have an affinity with this thing. I can get inside of its head. *closes his eyes and begins to be the werewolf* I'm a big, bad wolf. I'm on the prowl. *sniffs* I'm sniffing, I'm snarling, I'm a slobbering predator, I'm... *opens his eyes* Wait a second! It's right in front of us. *Oz's eye go wide with the fear of being recognized* It's obvious who I am. I'm Larry! *Oz breathes a sigh of relief* The guy's practically got wolf-boy stamped on his forehead. You got the dog bite, you got the aggression, not to mention the excessive back hair.

Buffy And he was awfully gleeful about tormenting Theresa.

Giles Still, that doesn't necessarily mean that...

Xander I'm gonna go talk to him. Gonna force a confession out of him. *leaves*

Giles Good. Go. Uh, in the meantime, we need to cover our bases. Willow, um, check the student files. See if anybody else fits the profile. Uh, Buffy?

Buffy Where are we going?

Giles I-if none of that works, I think I may have an alternative. *goes into his office*

Buffy Yeah, me and the werewolf alone in a cage for three minutes. That's all I ask. *gets up and follows Giles*

Willow *to Oz* Are you okay?

Oz *comes back to earth* What?

Willow You kind of knew Theresa.

Oz Oh, yeah, I, uh, I'm trying not to think about it. It's... it's a lot.

Willow It is. But we can do stuff to help. Sometimes it feels good to help.

Oz Uh-huh.

Buffy comes back to the office door, but holds back, not wanting to interrupt Willow with Oz.

Willow Well, like... looking up stuff. I'm gonna be doing that most of the night. You could help me, help together?

Oz *unsure what to do* I can't. Um, uh, I'm busy.

Willow Oh. So...

Oz I... I gotta go.

He jogs out of the library. Willow watches him go, confused about his behavior. Buffy looks sadly at her friend from the office doorway.

Cut to the boys' locker room. The camera pans over to the sinks where Larry is splashing some water onto his face. He grabs a towel and dries off as he heads for his gym locker. Xander is there waiting for him and kicks his locker closed to get his attention. Larry takes the towel from his face and looks at Xander, startled.

Larry Harris. Sheesh. Next time wear a bell. *opens his locker*

Xander Why so jumpy, Larry?

Larry Geeks make me nervous.

Xander Is that really it or is there something you're hiding?

Larry *leans on his locker door* I could hide my fist in your face.

Xander I know your secret, big guy. I know what you've been doing at night.

Larry You know, Harris, that nosey little nose of yours is going to get you into trouble someday... *grabs Xander by the shirt* Like today.

Xander Hurting me isn't gonna make this go away. People are still gonna find out.

Larry *lets go* Alright. What do you want? Hush money? Is that what you're after?

Xander I don't **want** anything! I just wanna help!

Larry What, you think you have a cure?

Xander No, it's just... I know what you're going through because I've been there. That's why I know you should talk about it.

Larry Yeah, that's easy for **you** to say. I mean, you're nobody. I've got a reputation here.

Xander Larry, please, before someone else gets hurt.

Larry *points at Xander's chest* Look, if this gets out, it's over for me. *turns and takes a few paces away* I mean, forget about playing football. They'll run me outta this town. I mean, come on! How are people going to look at me *faces Xander* after they find out I'm gay.

Xander looks at him in astonishment. Larry looks like a heavy burden has just been lifted and smiles.

Larry Oh, wow. I said it. And it felt... okay. *whispers* I'm gay. *approaches Xander* I am gay.

Xander I heard you the first time.

Larry I can't believe it. It was almost easy. I never felt I could tell anyone. *gestures to Xander* And then you, you of all people, you bring it outta me.

Xander It probably would have slipped out even if I wasn't here.

Larry *leans on his locker door* No, no, because knowing you went through the same thing, made it easier for me to admit it.

Xander *wide-eyed* The same thing...

Larry *puts his arm around Xander* It's ironic. I mean, all those times I beat the crap out of you, it musta been because I recognized something in you that I didn't want to believe about myself.

Xander *laughs nervously* Larry, no, I am not...

Larry Of course, of course not. Don't worry. *pats Xander on the shoulder* I wouldn't do that to you. Your secret's safe with me.

He gives Xander a thumbs-up and smiles.

Larry *to himself* Wow.

He drapes the towel around his neck, closes his gym locker and walks off. Xander stares after him in disbelief.

Cut to the library. Willow is 'Net surfing on her laptop. Buffy comes out of Giles' office and goes over to her.

Buffy So what's the scuttlebutt? Anybody besides Larry fit our werewolf profile? *sits on the table*

Willow There is one name that keeps getting spit out. Aggressive behavior, run-ins with authorities, about a screenful of violent incidents.

Buffy Okay, most of those were not my fault. Somebody else started 'em. I was just standing up for myself.

Willow *looks up at Buffy* They say it's a good idea to count to ten when you're angry.

Buffy One... Two... Three...

Willow *looks back at her laptop* I'll keep looking. *goes back to work*

Buffy I, um... noticed you were looking solo.

Willow Yeah. Oz wanted to be someplace that was *looks up at Buffy* away... from me.

Buffy I'm sorry.

Willow *leans back in her chair* I can't figure him out. I mean, he's so hot and cold. Or luke-warm and cold.

Buffy Welcome to the mystery that is men. I think it goes something like, they grow body hair, they lose all ability to tell you what they really want.

Willow It doesn't seem like a fair trade. *stands up and puts her laptop in its case*

Buffy Well, if you wanna up the speed quotient with Oz, maybe you need to do something daring. Maybe you need to make the first move.

She slides off of the table, and Willow follows her as she gets her stuff for class.

Willow Well, that won't make me a slut?

Buffy I think your reputation will remain intact.

Cut to the hall. Willow and Buffy come out of the library.

Willow It used to be so much easier to tell if a boy liked you. He'd punch you on the arm and then run back to his friends.

Buffy Those were the days.

Xander *comes up to them* Hey.

They stop. He taps Buffy on the arm. She looks up at him.

Willow I'll see you guys later. *Buffy looks at her* Cordelia asked me to look over her history homework before class. I think that means I might have to **do** it. *goes off*

Xander Wow, those two gals are hanging out a lot together. This would be a good time to panic.

Buffy lets out a laugh. They start down the hall.

Buffy So how'd it go with Larry?

Xander What's that supposed to mean?

Buffy I think it's supposed to mean, 'so how'd it go with Larry'?

She stops at her locker and reaches for the combination lock.

Xander He's not the werewolf. Can't we just leave it at that? Must you continue to **push** and **push**?

Buffy *opens her locker* I'm sorry. I was just wondering. *takes off her pack*

Xander Well, he's not.

Buffy Okay.

Xander Okay.

Buffy But there goes our lead suspect. *sticks her pack in her locker* Which then puts us right back at *closes the locker* square boned.

Xander You're not boned, you're Buffy. Eradicator of evil. Defender of, um... things that need defending.

Buffy Tell that to Theresa. She could have used my defending before she was ripped apart by that... *stops and considers*

Xander Werewolf.

Buffy Nowhere in any of the reports did it say anything about her being mauled. *looks up at Xander* I mean, they were linked to the animal attacks from the other night, so we just assumed werewolf.

Xander What else should we have assumed?

Cut to the funeral home. Theresa is laid out in her coffin with a scarf around her neck. Buffy pulls it back and sees the bite.

Buffy Vampire.

Xander So that's good, right? I mean in the sense of the werewolf didn't get her, and... *gets a look from Buffy* No. There is no good here.

Buffy No good. Instead of not protecting Theresa from the werewolf, *goes over to the guest register* I was able to

not protect her from something just as bad. *looks at all the signatures* She had a lot of friends. *takes the pen to add her own*

Xander Buffy, you can't blame yourself for every death that happens in Sunnydale. If it weren't for you people'd be lined up five deep waitin' to get themselves buried. Willow would be Robbie the Robot's love slave, I wouldn't even have a head, *looks at the coffin* and Theresa's a vampire.

Theresa sits up, looks over at them and growls. Buffy turns around and sees her hop out of the coffin. She lunges at Theresa, grabs her and tries to wrestle her to the floor, but Theresa throws her down instead. She dives after Buffy and tries to pin her, but Buffy rolls her over and gets on top. She makes a quick grab for a wooden easel holding a flower wreath and breaks off a leg. She's about to thrust it into Theresa's chest when she speaks.

Theresa Angel sends his love.

Buffy is caught off guard by that and hesitates a moment. Theresa kicks Buffy's arm and sends the stick flying away. She grabs Buffy by the shoulders, wrestles her onto her back and pins her. Buffy struggles to keep her at bay. Behind her Xander has grabbed the easel and jams one of its legs through Theresa's back. She bursts into ashes. Buffy stares up at Xander. He tosses the easel aside and looks down at her. Buffy looks aside sadly and then rolls over.

Buffy *to herself* Angel. *gets to her knees*

Xander *leans down to her* Are you okay?

Buffy *takes his hand* This isn't happening. *pulls herself up and hugs Xander* He's gonna keep coming after me.

Xander *hugs back gently* Don't let him get to you. He's not the same guy you knew.

She pulls back a bit and looks up at him. He looks back kindly. She lets go, picks up her backpack and goes out. Xander stares after her.

Xander Oh, no, my life's not too complicated.

He shakes his head and follows her out.

Cut to the woods. Cain's van is parked with the curtains drawn across the cab. Cut inside the van. It's set up like a small hunter's lodge, with hunting equipment and traps hanging from the walls and a lab bench full of reloading equipment. He reaches down, picks up a small iron pan and sets it on the bench. He has a Bunsen burner going. He takes a small long-handled melting cup and holds it over the flame. When the metal in the cup has become molten he brings it over to a mold that he's holding over the iron pan with his other hand and pours the silver into it. He sets the melting cup aside and breaks open the mold. Inside is a perfectly formed bullet. He holds it up to inspect it in the dim

light.

Cut to a shot of the full moon rising.

Cut to Oz's dining room. He has a box full of shackles and locks and dumps them out. He looks at them and considers a moment, then with a strengthened resolve starts to put one on. He's about to put the lock on when there's a knocking at the door. He ignores it and looks at the lock. As he moves to put it on there's another knock on the door. He looks at it in frustration and sets the lock and shackles down. The knocking continues insistently as he goes over to the door. When he opens it he finds an irate Willow standing there, ready to knock even more.

Oz Willow! What are you doing?

She pushes her way inside.

Willow I had this whole thing worked out. *goes toward the dining room* And I had it written down, uh, but then it didn't make any sense *turns to face him* when I was reading it back.

Oz Willow, this is not a very good time.

Willow I mean, what am I supposed to think? First, you buy me popcorn *paces away* and then you're all glad that I didn't get bit. *paces back softly* And you put the tag back in my shirt. *harshly* But I guess none of that means anything because instead of looking up names with me, here you are all alone in your house doing nothing by yourself.

Oz Willow, we'll talk about this tomorrow. I promise.

He tries to take hold of her to lead her out, but she shakes him off.

Willow No, damn it! We'll talk about this now! Buffy told me that sometimes what a girl makes has to be the first move and now that I'm saying this, I'm starting to think that the written version sounded pretty good, but you know what I mean.

Oz I know, I know, it's me. I'm, I'm goin' through some... changes.

Willow Well, welcome to the world! Things happen. Don't you think I'm going through a lot?

Oz Not like me.

Willow Oh, what, so now you're special? *paces away into the dining room* You're special boy... *sees the shackles* With chains and stuff. Why do you have chains and stuff?

Oz doubles over in pain and hugs his chest.

Oz Willow, please! *heads for the door* Get outta here!

She stares at him confused. He falls behind the couch out of her view. There he begins to rapidly grow hair and mutate into a werewolf.

Willow Oz? Oz, what is it?

She slowly approaches the couch. Oz's fingers grow longer and hairier.

Willow What's wrong?

She hears Oz moaning in pain. She looks carefully over the couch, and Oz the werewolf leaps to his feet and growls at her. She screams and jumps backward away from him.

Part 4

Oz's living room. Willow screams and starts to run through the dining room. Oz the werewolf gives chase. She runs down the hall and out a back door.

Cut to the streets. Willow runs. The werewolf comes around the corner chasing after her. She goes up to a wooden fence, hops up and tries to pull herself over. She's not quite fast enough and only has one leg over when the werewolf catches up. It makes a grab for her leg, but misses as she drops over the other side and manages to land in a crouch on her feet. She sees a couple of metal trashcans there, grabs one and smashes it into the werewolf's face as it tries to climb over after her.

Cut to the street. Cain's van rolls slowly along. He looks up and sees the werewolf trying to get over the fence.

Cain There you are.

He pulls the van over to the side.

Cut to the library. Giles opens a guncase, undoes the straps and pulls out the stock. He grabs the barrel and scope assembly and clicks them into place. Buffy comes walking up behind him.

Buffy Sorry I'm late. I had to do some unscheduled slayage in the form of Theresa.

He stops his assembling to look at her.

Giles She's a vampire?

Buffy Was. Angel sent her to me. A little token of his affection.

Giles Buffy, I'm so sorry.

Buffy *holds up her hand* Not now, Giles. We can all have ourselves a good cry after we bag us a werewolf.

He plugs in the laser sight and holds the tranquilizer gun up to check the scope.

Cut to the woods. Willow runs quickly through the trees with the werewolf not far behind. She hops over a log, but then trips and falls to the ground. She rolls to face the werewolf and looks at it in terror. It doesn't attack, but instead sniffs the air. It looks around for the direction of the scent and rushes off. Willow quickly gets to her feet and runs the other way.

Cut to the library. Giles checks the trigger mechanism of the gun.

Giles All set. *grabs a dart* Let's go find this thing. *starts out*

Buffy One question: how exactly do we find this thing? Willow comes barging into the library.

Willow It's Oz! It's Oz!

Buffy Wh-what's Oz?

Willow The werewolf.

Giles Are you certain?

Willow *frantic* Can't you just trust me on this? He-he said he was going through all these changes. Then he went through all these... changes.

Buffy Where is he now?

Willow In the woods.

Giles Let's go. *starts out again*

Willow *grabs and stops him* Go where? You're not gonna kill Oz! Yeah, he's a werewolf, but he doesn't mean to be.

Buffy Don't worry, Willow. We're not going to hurt him. They all start out of the library.

Giles I put enough Phenobarbital in this thing to sink a small elephant. It should be enough for a large werewolf.

He grabs his coat from the counter and holds the door open for the girls.

Cut to the woods. The werewolf has found what it's looking for. So has Cain, and he cocks his flintlock's hammer back and lifts it to his shoulder. The werewolf gets closer to the pile of meat Cain has left out for him.

Cain That's it. Let me see you. Come on, supptime.

The werewolf is on top of the bait now, and Cain takes aim.

Cain Good, doggy. Now play dead.

He is about to pull the trigger when he gets kicked from the side. He falls to the ground, and his gun fires wild. The werewolf looks up from its meal at the commotion. Buffy grabs Cain's gun and wrestles him for it. She flips the rifle over and he follows, landing on his back and letting go of the gun in the process. As he tries to get up Buffy swings the butt of the rifle around and knocks him down and out. The werewolf comes at her, and she ducks his lunge. Giles and Willow arrive to see the werewolf grab Buffy and lift her off of her feet. She pushes him back using Cain's gun to keep from being bitten. Giles tries to get a clear shot, but the werewolf turns and holds Buffy up between them.

Willow Careful!

Giles *can't get a shot* Damn it!

He keeps looking for an opening, but is quickly getting frustrated. Buffy raises the rifle high and smashes it down on the werewolf's head. It drops her and falls back stunned. It quickly gets up and swipes at her, knocking the gun from her hands. Then the werewolf shoves Buffy away and right into Giles and Willow,

bowling them over. It starts to come at them. Willow scrambles for the tranquilizer gun and brings it up to bear. The werewolf charges, and Willow pulls the trigger. The dart hits it in the chest, and it staggers backward a bit before falling over unconscious.

Willow *looks up at Giles* I shot Oz.

Giles You saved us.

He takes the gun from Willow. Buffy walks over to get Cain's gun. He gets to his feet and straightens his coat.

Cain No wonder this town's overrun with monsters. No one here's man enough to kill 'em.

Buffy Oh, I wouldn't be too sure of that.

Cain turns to see her with his flintlock. She grabs the end of the barrel and bends it into a nice arc right in front of him and then thrusts it at him. He looks at her in astonishment.

Buffy How about you let the door hit you in the ass on the way out of town?

Cain makes a move to go but stops to give her another look. She stares back at him, and then he leaves. She looks down at Willow crouched next to Oz the werewolf and gets down with her.

Willow You think it'll be okay?

They both look up at Giles.

Giles He'll be a little sore in the morning, but... he'll be Oz.

Cut to Sunnydale High the next day. Cut to the halls. Xander and Buffy walk past the trophy case and into the lounge.

Xander This is all so weird. I mean, how are we supposed to act when we see him?

Buffy Well, it's gotta be weird for him, too. Now that we know so much.

Xander All I know is I'll never be able to look at him the same again.

Buffy He's still a human being. Most of the time.

They stop at the vending machine.

Xander Who are we talking about?

Buffy Oz. Who are you talking about?

Xander No one.

He sees Larry's jock friends by the stairs knocking a girl's books out of her hands and laughing. Larry comes down the stairs behind her and quickly reaches down to help her pick up her books.

Larry Hey, let me get those.

Girl Thanks.

His friends give him a surprised look. So does Buffy. Larry comes over to them.

Larry Hey! Xander. Look, about what you did. I, I owe you.

Buffy What'd you do?

Xander It's really nothing we should be talking about. *to Larry* Ever.

Larry I know, I know. It's just, well, *pats him on the arm* thanks. *walks off*

Buffy That was weird.

They go to a table and sit.

Xander What, it's not okay for one guy to like another guy just because he happened to be in the locker room with him when absolutely nothing happened and I thought I told you not to push.

Buffy All I meant is that he didn't try to look up my skirt.

Xander *fidgets with is hands* Oh, oh, yeah, that's, that's the weirdness. *smiles nervously*

Buffy Weirdness abounds lately. Maybe it's the moon. That does stuff to people.

Xander I've heard that.

Buffy *sees Willow walk by* Certainly gonna put a strain on Willow and Oz's relationship.

Xander What relationship? I mean, what life could they possibly have together? *counts off on his fingers* We're talking obedience school, paper training, Oz is always in back burying their things, and that kind of breed can turn on its owner.

Buffy I don't know. I kinda see Oz as the loyal type.

Xander All I'm saying is she's not safe with him. If it were up to me...

Buffy *interrupts* Xander...

Cut outside to Willow walking over to Oz sitting on a table.

Buffy It's not up to you.

Willow Hey.

Oz Hey.

Willow Did you want to go first?

Oz I spoke to Giles. He said I'll be okay. I just have to lock myself up around the full moon. Only he used

more words than that. And a globe.

Willow I'm sorry about how all this ended up. With me shooting you and all.

Oz It's okay. I'm, I'm sorry I almost ate you.

Willow It's okay. I kind of thought you would have told me.

Oz I didn't know what to say. I mean, it's not everyday you find out you're a werewolf. That's fairly freaksome. It may take a couple days getting used to.

Willow Yeah. It's a complication.

Oz So... *hops off of the table and they walk* Maybe it'd be best if I just... sorta...

Willow What?

Oz Well, you know, like, stayed out of your way for awhile.

Willow I don't know. I'm kind of okay with you being in my way.

Oz *stops and faces her* You mean, you'd still...

Willow Well, I like you. You're nice and you're funny. And you don't smoke. Yeah, okay, werewolf, but that's not all the time. I mean, three days out of the month I'm not much fun to be around either.

Oz You are quite the human.

Willow *smiles* So, I'd still if you'd still.

Oz I'd still. I'd **very** still.

Willow *smiles widely* Okay. *more seriously* No biting, though.

Oz Agreed.

Willow walks off with a smile on her face. Oz turns around and watches her go. He smiles. Then he looks surprised to see her rushing back. She looks at him for an instant and then plants a kiss right on his lips. He watches her with a smile as she goes off again.

Oz A werewolf in love.

Bewitched, Bothered and Bewildered

Written by Marti Noxon

Directed by James A. Contner

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Bewitched, Bothered and Bewildered". It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.05

This episode was originally broadcast on February 10, 1998.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

The cemetery at night. The camera is focused on a heart-shaped locket that Xander is dangling in the extreme foreground so that everything in the distance is out of focus and unrecognizable.

Xander So, what do you think?

The camera shifts its focus onto Buffy sitting on a gravestone.

Buffy It's nice.

Cut to a full-view shot of them. They are waiting near a fresh grave. Xander approaches Buffy, still dangling the locket.

Xander But do you think Cordelia will like it?

Buffy I don't know.

She pulls it toward herself with her hand to take a closer look.

Buffy Does she know what one of these is?

He yanks it out of her hand and puts it and his hands into his jacket pockets.

Xander *chuckles* Okay, big yuks. When are you guys gonna stop making fun of me for dating Cordelia?

Buffy I'm sorry. But never. *Xander nods, smiles and looks down* I just think you could find somebody more... better.

Xander Uh, parallel universe, maybe. *looks up* Here the only other person I'm interested in is, um... unavailable. Besides, Cordy and I are really getting along. We're not fighting as much, and yesterday we just sat together, not even speakin'. You know, just, uh, enjoying comfortable silence. *grins and laughs, then loses the grin and exhales* Man, that was dull.

Buffy *smiles* I'm glad that you guys are getting along. *facetiously* Almost really. *reassuringly* And don't stress over the gift.

Xander Well, this is new territory for me. I mean, my valentines are usually met with heartfelt restraining orders.

Buffy She'll love it.

Xander I wish dating was like slaying: *steps away* you know, simple, direct, stake to the heart, no muss, no fuss.

He turns to face her again just as a vampire rises from the fresh grave. Xander reacts quickly and jerks back as the newly risen demon comes for him, but he trips and falls backward onto his butt. Buffy hops off of the gravestone and grabs the vampire from behind as he is about to grab Xander and throws him high and away. He hits the ground hard. His momentum carries him into a reverse somersault, and he rolls to his feet. He starts to come at Buffy. She leaps at him, does a double kick to his chest with both feet in rapid succession and lands upright as the vampire staggers back into the corner column of a small mausoleum. Buffy comes at him, but he blocks her first two punches and ducks a third swing. Her fourth and fifth punches, however, land on his face, but he isn't fazed. He pushes her aside into the wall of the mausoleum, and after regaining his balance comes at her again. She slides down the wall and kicks out with her leg, making him trip and spin down to the ground. As he gets up she leaps at him with a high kick and knocks him back down again. She reaches into her jacket for a stake, and when the vampire stands back up again and tries to make a grab for her she deftly plunges it into his chest. He immediately bursts into a cloud of ashes. Buffy yanks the stake back and watches with satisfaction as the ash rains to the ground. Then she heads over to Xander and gives him a hand back up to his feet.

Buffy Sorry to say, Xand, slaying is a tad more perilous than dating.

They start out of the cemetery.

Xander Well, you're obviously not dating Cordelia.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part 1

Sunnydale High School the next morning. Cordelia walks up the steps from the street. She sees her friends sitting on a wall and heads over to them. When they see her coming they all stand up and make their way toward the main entrance, ignoring her.

Cordelia Wait up. Hey, wait up! *jogs to catch up* Excuse me! Where's the fire sale?

They all stop and turn around to face her.

Harmony Oh, sorry. Didn't see you.

Cordelia Well, why didn't you call me back last night? We need to talk about our outfits for the dance. I'm gonna wear red and black, *points at Kate* so you need to switch.

Kate Red and black? Is that what Xander likes?

Cordelia *confused* Xander? What does he have to do with this?

Harmony Well, a girl wants to look good for her geek.

Cordelia Xander's just...

Harmony *interrupts* When are you two gonna start wearing cute little matching outfits? 'Cause I'm planning to vomit. *to the others* Let's go.

They all turn away and head into the building, leaving Cordelia behind.

Cut to American Literature class. The bell rings.

Ms. Beakman Papers on my desk. Anybody tries to leave without giving me a paper is looking at a failing grade.

The camera closes in on Xander sitting at the back of his row two seats behind Willow. Buffy is to Willow's right, and they both get ready to go.

Xander *holding his paper* Ha, ha, ha. This time I'm ready for you. No 'F' for Xander today. No, this baby's my ticket to a sweet D-minus.

He stands up with his paper in his hands. The two girls do the same. Willow steps down the aisle and stops next to Amy.

Willow Hey, Amy.

Amy Hey. *pulls on her backpack* Are you guys going to the Valentine's Day dance at the Bronze? I think it's gonna be a lot of fun.

Willow turns to look at Buffy with a huge smile on her face.

Buffy Go ahead. You know you wanna say it.

Willow faces Amy again, grinning broadly.

Willow My boyfriend's in the band!

Amy *smiles and laughs* Cool.

Willow looks back at Buffy.

Buffy I think you've now told everybody.

Willow Only in this hemisphere. *pulls on her pack*

Amy to Buffy What about you?

Buffy *waves her off* Oh, Valentine's Day is just a cheap gimmick to sell cards and chocolate.

Amy Bad breakup, huh?

Buffy Believe me when I say, 'uh-huh'.

They all walk up to the teacher's desk, and Buffy hands in her paper.

Mrs. Beakman Thank you.

Buffy heads out of the room as Willow holds up her paper as well. Xander is just making his way down the aisle behind Amy.

Mrs. Beakman to Willow Thank you.

Willow follows Buffy out. Amy stands in front of Mrs. Beakman and stares her down. There is a long silence as Amy concentrates on staring into the teacher's eyes. Xander, standing behind Amy, slowly loses his smile as he sees what's going on. A moment later Mrs. Beakman smiles at Amy and gestures as though she's accepting a paper from her.

Mrs. Beakman Thank you, Amy.

Amy smiles and starts out of the classroom. Xander comes up to the desk staring open-mouthed after Amy and hands his paper in also.

Cut to the stairs. Buffy and Willow come walking down. Amy hops down past them with a big smile on her face and heads into the lounge.

Willow I just hate to think of you solo on Valentine's Day.

The two of them head down the hall. Xander reaches the bottom of the stairs behind them and follows as he watches Amy go off in the other direction.

Buffy I'll be fine. Mom and I are gonna have a pig-out and vid fest. It's a time-honored tradition among the loveless.

Xander *catches up* Did you guys see that? *points at Amy*
Buffy See what?

Xander In class. I think Amy just worked some magic on Ms. Beakman.

Buffy You mean like witchcraft?

Willow You know, her mom's a witch.

Buffy And an amateur psycho. Amy's the last person that should be messing with that stuff.

Xander Maybe I should go talk to her.

Giles sees them coming his way and calls out.

Giles Buffy! *approaches them* Buffy... Might I have a word?

Buffy Have a sentence, even.

Giles *gets the joke* Oh. Good. Well, uh...

He happens to glance off into Jenny's classroom as she's talking to a student by the door.

Jenny *to the student* Back it up before you leave.

She steps into the hall and stops. She and Giles exchange looks with each other. Buffy notices the exchange and looks down sadly. Jenny shrugs and smiles thinly at Giles.

Jenny Rupert.

Giles Ms. Calendar. *looks down*

She glances down briefly and back up, then steps toward him.

Jenny I'm glad we ran into each other, actually. I was hoping that we could, uh... *gestures toward her room*
Do you have a minute? *fidgets with her hands*

Giles Um... *making excuses* Actually, not, not just now. Um, *ahem* I, uh, have a matter to discuss with, with Buffy.

Buffy *calmly* Right. Let's go.

She gives Jenny a quick glance and squeezes between her and Giles, heading for the library. Xander and Willow watch in silence. Giles looks up at Jenny for a moment, then slowly turns to follow Buffy. Jenny drops her arms in despair, looks at Xander and Willow, and then starts down the hall the other way.

Cut to the library. Buffy is sitting at the table hugging her knee while Giles comes toward her slowly with his hands in his pockets.

Buffy Are you okay?

Giles *looks at her* Me? I-I-I'll be fine. *scratches his nose, then pockets his hand again* Um, I was more concerned about you, actually. Uh, since Angel, um... uh... turned... *sits on the table and folds his hands* I've, um, been reading up on, on his earlier activities. Y'know, uh, feeding patterns a-and the like.

Buffy And?

Giles Around Valentine's Day, he, he, he's rather prone to, uh... well, um, brutal displays of, uh... He would think of it as affection, I suppose.

Buffy Like what?

Giles No, no, uh, *gets up* no need to go into details. *steps away*

Buffy That bad?

Giles *faces her* Suffice it to say I, I think it would be best if you stayed off the streets for a few nights. I-I-I'll, um... *sits across from her* I'll patrol and keep an eye on things. *Buffy stares off into space* Better safe than sorry.

Buffy *looks over at him* It's a little late for both.

Dissolve to Spike's warehouse. Drusilla opens a jewelry case, and inside is a gold necklace with rubies set into an integrated pendant. The camera pans up from it over to Spike in his wheelchair.

Spike Fancy it, pet?

Drusilla Ahhh. It's beautiful. Mm.

Spike Nothing but the best for my gir...

Angelus walks up to the table and sets down a human heart, fresh and bloody. He smiles over at Spike, then down at Drusilla.

Angelus Happy Valentine's Day, Dru.

Drusilla Oh... *holds her hands over it* Angel!

Angelus raises his eyebrows at Spike.

Drusilla It's still warm.

Spike closes his eyes and lets out a deep breath, then looks back up at Angelus.

Angelus I knew you'd like it. *inhales the aroma* I found it in a quaint little shopgirl.

He sees the necklace, picks it up and holds it out to have a look at it.

Angelus Cute. *reaches around Drusilla's neck with it* Here.

She pulls her hair back and away so he can close the clasp behind her neck. Spike wheels toward them, upset with Angelus' forwardness.

Spike I'll get it.

Angelus *looks up at Spike* Done. I know Dru gives you pity access, but you have to admit it's so much easier when I do things for her. *smiles*

Spike *controlling his anger* You would do well to worry less about Dru *Angelus rolls his eyes* and more about that Slayer you've been tramping around with.

Angelus *paces behind the table* Dear Buffy. I'm still trying to decide the best way to send my regards. *sits on the table*

Spike Why don't you rip her lungs out? It might make an impression.

Angelus Lacks... poetry.

Spike It doesn't have to. *inhales and thinks* What rhymes with lungs?

Drusilla Don't worry, Spike. *looks back at Angelus* Angel always knows... *looks at the heart* what speaks to a girl's heart.

The camera pans down from her to the heart.

Cut to the Bronze for the Valentine's Day dance. Oz and Devon's band Dingoes Ate My Baby *Four Star Mary* are playing "Pain". Xander is at a table with Willow, turning a jewelry box around in his hands. The camera pans up to Willow watching the band play and bobbing her head to the beat. It pulls back to show Xander staring off in another direction, oblivious to the music. The camera focuses on the band as Devon sings.

Lyrics Feeling I've been lost for years

Oz smiles over at Willow and then looks down at his guitar.

Lyrics You can never understand me / Unless you've seen those tears / But you never get to sleep

Willow looks up at Oz and smiles. Oz smiles back as he plays.

Lyrics When I'm away / I don't mind / The deeper...

Willow *to Xander, smiling* Oz has his cool hair today.

Lyrics ...that you lay

Willow *excited* I think I'm a groupie! *looks back at the band*

Lyrics Out of time

Cut to Cordelia coming out of the restrooms.

Lyrics Pain, I can't sleep

She looks around and sees her friends.

Cordelia *smiles* Oh, hey!

They all give her looks of disgust.

Lyrics Pain, I can't sleep

Harmony Let's get outta here.

Cordelia just stands there and watches them go.

Lyrics Running...

Cut to Buffy's house. She and her mother are lounging back on the couch watching TV. The coffee table in front of them is full of plates of cookies, cheese puffs and other snacks. Buffy has a bowl of popcorn in her lap. They hear a knock at the door and look over in that direction. Buffy looks back at her mom, exhales and hands her the popcorn.

Buffy Here.

Joyce starts to munch on it. Buffy gets up to answer the door. Cut to outside. The camera pans over to the door as Buffy opens it and looks out. She is puzzled when there's no one there. She looks further out and in both directions. She shrugs with her eyes, goes back inside and closes the door. When she steps back into the living room her mother is gone. She looks back behind her, through the foyer and into the dining room beyond. Joyce is nowhere to be seen.

Buffy *concerned* Mom?

She walks through the dining room and into the kitchen.

Buffy Mom?

She walks around the island, looking around all the while, then quickly out the window when she hears a noise, but sees nothing and continues toward the kitchen door. She looks back into the dining room. When she reaches the kitchen door she is startled by her mother coming back in from outside and gasps.

Joyce Buffy, it's me.

Buffy Yeah. You just startled me a little.

Joyce I was just checking the back door. *closes the door* Somebody, um, left these for you.

She sets a long black box with a black bow on the island for Buffy to see. She looks up at her mother and raises her eyebrows for an instant before lifting the lid off the box. Joyce looks down, curious to see what's in it. Buffy

stares down at it and sees a dozen red roses along **with a card bearing a single word** Soon. Her mother looks up at her with a little smile, but it fades when she sees how Buffy is just staring down at the card without saying a word or reacting in any way.

Cut to the Bronze. The band continues playing.

Lyrics Pain, I can't sleep / Pain, I can't sleep

Xander looks around and spots Cordelia sitting alone at a table.

Lyrics Pain, I can't sleep

He slowly gets to his feet and walks over to her. She notices him coming, looks at him and stands up to meet him. The song is over now.

Xander Hey.

Cordelia *looks him up and down* Your clothes... You look so good.

Xander *looks down at himself* Oh. I let Buffy dress me. *gets a confused look from Cordelia* Well, not physically.

Cordelia *upset* Perfect. You had to make this harder, didn't you?

Xander Okay, clearly the fact that I please you visually has got us off on the wrong foot here.

Cordelia Xander...

Xander *stops her with a gesture* Let me finish. I've been thinking a lot about us lately... the why and the wherefore. You know, once, twice, a kissy here, a kissy there. And you can chalk it all up to hormones. **Cordelia** *looks puzzled* A-and maybe that's all we have here. Tawdry teen lust. But maybe not. Maybe something in you sees something special inside me. **Cordelia** *looks down, then back up* And vice versa. I mean, I think I do. See something. So...

He pulls out the jewelry box and hands it to her. She takes it and looks up at him.

Cordelia Xander... *opens the box* Thank you. *holds up the necklace and pendant* It's beautiful. *exhales and looks at him* I wanna break up.

Xander *looks at her in disbelief* Okay, not quite the reaction I was looking for.

Cordelia *shaking her head* I know. I'm sorry. It's just... Who are we kidding? **Xander** *looks down at the necklace* Even if parts of us do see specialness, we don't fit.

Xander *looks up suddenly* Yeah! Okay... *very upset* Do you know what's a good day to break up with somebody? Any day besides Valentine's Day! I mean, what, were you running low on dramatic irony?

Cordelia *apologetically* I know. I didn't mean to do it this way. I...

Xander *interrupts* Well, you did.

Cordelia gives him a sorry look. Xander stares back for a moment, then turns and goes away. Cordelia looks down at the pendant.

Cut to the halls at school the next day. Xander comes moping around the corner. A boy passes him in the halls.

Jack Dude. *pats Xander's shoulder* Way to get dumped. He continues down the hall, and Xander does the same. He looks up and sees Buffy coming the other way.

Xander Ooo, Buffy, my bud, *takes her hand and stops her* you will not believe...

Buffy *looks at him* Can't talk right now. Angel.

Xander *lets go of her hand* Do you need help?

Buffy It's alright.

She quickly resumes her rapid trek to the library. Xander watches her go, then continues down the hall. A group of girls passes around him, staring and giggling at him. He exhales and watches them go. A few steps further along he hears Harmony address him, and looks over at her.

Harmony Gee, Xander, maybe you should learn a second language so that even more girls can reject you.

She and the other girls around her laugh to his face. Xander just keeps moping along. A moment later he notices Amy heading toward the stairs in front of him. He looks back for an instant and then rushes over to her,

takes her by the arm and pulls her aside.

Amy What are you doing?

Xander Amy. Good to see you. *takes a quick look around* You're a witch.

Amy *glances around* No, I'm not. That, that was my mom, remember? *smiles*

Xander Yeah, I'm thinking it runs in the family. I saw you working that mojo on Ms. Beakman. *gestures behind himself* Maybe I should go tell somebody about...

Amy That's not even... *angrily* That is so mean!

Xander *glares back* Blackmail is such an ugly word.

Amy I didn't say blackmail.

Xander Yeah, but I'm about to blackmail you, so I thought I'd bring it up.

Amy *folds her arms* What do you want?

Xander *chuckles* What do I want? I want some respect around here. I want, for **once**, to come out ahead. I want the Hellmouth to be working for me. You and me, Amy... *looks back at Cordelia sitting with Harmony now* we're gonna cast a little spell.

Amy looks past him at Cordelia as well, then turns her eyes up at him.

Part 2

An empty classroom. Xander closes the door behind himself as he follows Amy in.

Amy A love spell?

Xander Yeah. You know, just the basic can't eat, can't sleep, can't breathe anything but little old moi.

Amy Well, that kind of thing is the hardest! I mean, to make someone love you for all eternity?

Xander *waves his hand and shakes his head* Whoa! Whoa, back up. Who said anything about eternity? A man can only talk self-tanning lotion for so long before his head explodes.

Amy Well, then I don't get it. If you don't wanna be with her forever, then what's the point?

Xander The point is I want her to want me. Desperately. So I can break up with **her** and subject her to the same hell she's been puttin' **me** through.

Amy *turns and steps away* Oh, I don't know, Xander. *turns back* Intent has to be pure with love spells.

Xander Right. I intend revenge. Pure as the driven snow. Now, are you gonna play, or do we need to have another chat about invisible homework?

Amy *considers* I'll need something of hers. *steps closer* A personal object.

Xander Alright. *smiles and leaves the room*

Cut to the library. Giles is at the table studying a book. Buffy comes striding in and up to the table. She slaps the card that came with the roses into the book in front

of him. Giles startles a bit and looks up.

Buffy 'Soon' what, Giles? You never held out on me until the big, bad thing in the dark became my ex-honey.

Giles *looks at the card* Where did this come from?

Buffy He said it with flowers. Look, this isn't the time to start becoming Mr. Protective Guy. I can't just hang around, and I can't prepare when I don't know what's coming.

Giles *sits up in his chair* N-no, of-of course, you're right. *gestures to another chair* Uh, s-s-sit, sit down. *stands up*

Cut to the hall. Xander sees Cordelia coming and waits for her. She spots him, pivots around and hurries the other way. Xander does a fast walk to catch up and passes her, then spins around to stop her in her tracks.

Xander Oh, come on, don't flatter yourself. I'm not gonna make a big scene. I just want the necklace back.

Cordelia *in disbelief* What? I thought it was a gift.

Xander No. Last night it was a gift. Today it's scrap metal. Figure I can melt it down and sell it for fillings or something.

Cordelia You're pathetic!

Xander Come on, I'm not gonna add to the Cordelia Chase castoff collection.

Cordelia *glares at him* It's in my locker.

Xander *points to her locker with his eyes* I can wait. She gives him another look, then goes over to her locker. Xander steps to the side of the hall and leans against the

lockers about ten feet from her. He watches the people passing by as she works her combination. She opens the locker and sets down a book. She glances over at him to see if he's looking. Satisfied that he's not paying close attention she leans in behind the door, exhales, reaches under the collar of her blouse and pulls the necklace and pendant out. Xander just keeps looking around the hall. She undoes the clasp, takes it off and lets out a deep breath. She closes her locker, steps over to him and hands him the necklace.

Cordelia Here. It's a good thing we broke up. Now I don't have to pretend I like it.

Xander just gives her a look and leaves.

Cut to the school that night. Cut to the science lab. Xander is holding a candle and sitting bare-chested and cross-legged on the floor inside a large red symbol for woman painted on the floor. Three red vertical stripes are painted on his chest. Amy is at a lab table where she's waving the locket over her witch's brew, which is boiling in a beaker over a Bunsen burner.

Amy Diana... goddess of love and the hunt... I pray to thee. Let my cries bind the heart of Xander's beloved. *lowers the necklace into the brew* May she neither rest nor sleep *the brew sparks* until she submits to his will only.

The flame of the burner becomes huge as the power of the spell emanates from the beaker and swirls above it and between her hands.

Amy Diana, bring about this love and bless it.

The swirls of energy begin to return to the beaker and disappear.

Amy to Xander Blow out the candle now!

The spell's power has dissipated. Xander blows out the candle and the screen goes black.

Cut to the school the next morning. Cut to the hall outside the lounge. Xander sees Cordelia and her friends sitting at a table and goes over to them with confidence. He rests one hand on the table and leans over it next to Cordelia, looking around at all the girls and giving them a smile. Cordelia looks up at him.

Cordelia What?

Xander *confidently* Morning, ladies. *to Cordelia* Some kind of weather we've been having, huh?

Cordelia What do you want? You can't be sniffing around for more jewelry to melt, because all you ever gave me was that Smallmart-looking thing. *looks back down at her notebook*

Xander *chuckles and leans in to Cordelia* Is this love? 'Cause maybe on you it doesn't look that different.

Cordelia *pushes him away* What are you doing? Are you going, like, stalker-boy on me now?

Xander *confused* Sorry. My mistake.

Cordelia Yeah, I should say so.

He walks away. She looks at the other girls at the table.

Cordelia What is his deal?

Cut to the library. Giles is sitting on the table looking through a book. Buffy is sitting in a chair across from him.

Giles Look, here's another. Here. Um, 'Valentine's Day.' Yes, uh... 'Angel nails a puppy to the...'

Buffy *interrupts* Skip it.

Giles Uh, but it...

Buffy I don't wanna know. I don't have a puppy. Skip it.

Giles *closes the book* Right you are. I'll get another batch.

He gets off of the table and heads into his office. Xander walks in and up to the table.

Xander I have a plan: we use me as bait.

Buffy You mean make Angel come after you?

Xander No, I mean chop me into little pieces and stick me on hooks for fish to nibble at 'cause it would be more fun than **my** life.

Buffy Yeah. *gets up* I heard about you and Cordy. That's her loss. *leans on the table*

Xander Yeah. Not really the popular theory.

Buffy *looks up at him* You know what I'd like? Why don't you and I do something together tonight? Just the two of us.

Xander *does a double take* Really?

Buffy Yeah. We can comfort each other.

Xander Well, would lap dancing enter into that scenario at all? 'Cause I find that very comforting. *grins* She stands up, stares into his eyes and takes a step closer to him.

Buffy *smiles* Play your cards right...

Xander *stops her with his hand* Okay, uh... You do know that I'm Xander, right?

Buffy *looks down* I don't know, I just... *looks up* heard that you and Cordy broke up, and I guess I was just surprised how glad I was. *plays with his shirt* It's funny... *leans into him* how you can see someone every day but not really see them. You know?

Xander *smiles and chuckles nervously* Yeah, it's funny. And it's just gettin' funnier.

She puts her finger to his lips to quiet him and slowly leans toward him for a kiss. Behind them Amy walks into the library.

Amy Xander, can I talk to you for a minute?

Buffy pulls back slightly. Xander looks at Amy, back at Buffy, then at Amy again.

Xander Yeah, okay.

Cut to the hall outside the library. Amy comes out with Xander right behind her. He makes sure the door is

closed, looks in through the window at Buffy for a second, and then gives his attention to Amy.

Amy Xander.

Xander Yeah.

Amy I don't think the spell worked out right.

Xander Oh, yeah, it bombed. No biggie. *grins*

Amy Well, we can always try again.

He looks back through the window and sees Buffy looking out at him.

Amy I am still pretty new at this.

Xander Oh, no, no, no. It's okay. You know what? It was wrong to meddle with the forces of darkness. I see that now. *Amy smiles at him* I think we've all grown. I gotta go. *moves to go back in*

Amy stops him with her hand Oh, we don't have to cast any spells.

He sees Buffy staring out at him with her finger between her lips.

Amy We can just... hang out.

Xander Sure. *looks at Amy* What?

Amy *smiles* Well, I liked spending time with you. You're so sweet. You know, it's funny how you can... you can see a person every day and...

He starts to realize what's going on.

Xander Not really see them.

He looks in at Buffy again. She's still staring out at him, playing with her hair between her lips.

Amy Exactly. So, anyway, I thought it might...

Another girl approaches them in the hall.

Cordette Hi, Xander.

Xander What?

Cordette You're in Mr. Baird's history class, right?

Xander Yeah.

Cordette I thought maybe we could study together tonight.

Amy interrupts Do you mind? We were talking.

The two girls look at stare each other. Xander begins to worry.

Xander Uh, I really gotta go. Right now.

He heads down the hall away from them. They both just watch him go.

Cut to Xander's room at home. He barges in and slams the door behind him. He calms down a bit, takes the few steps over to his bed and sits on it. Behind him Willow sits up from under the covers wearing one of his shirts and touches him on the back. Xander jumps up in surprise and stares at her in shock.

Willow Sorry. I wanted to surprise you.

Xander *grins nervously* Good job! High marks.

Willow Don't be so jumpy. I've been in your bed before.

Xander Yeah, but Will, we were both in footy pajamas.

Willow Xand, I've been thinking.

Xander Will, I, I think I know what you've been thinking. But this is all my fault. I cast a spell, and it sort of backfired.

Willow *rubs the sheets* How long have we been friends?

Xander *very nervous* A long, long time. Too long to do anything that might change that now.

Willow *moves to the edge of the bed* Well, friendships change all the time. People grow apart. They grow closer. *smiles up at him*

Xander Uh, this is good! How close we are now. I feel very comfortable with this amount of closeness. In fact, *points behind himself* I can even back up a few paces and still be happy. *steps back* See? *smiles, still nervous* She gets up from the bed and approaches him. His shirt is the only thing she's wearing.

Willow I want you, Xander... *smiles* to be my first!

Xander *extremely nervous* Baseman. Please tell me we're talking baseball.

He starts to back up when she reaches him. She puts her hands up against his chest.

Willow Shhh.

He backs into the door. She rubs her hands up and down his chest.

Willow We both know it's right. *leans into him for a kiss*

Xander *backs his head away* It's not that I don't find you sexy.

Willow *leans away to look at him* Is it Oz? *shakes her head* Don't worry about him. He's sweet, but... he's not you. *rubs his chest more*

Xander Yes, he is. And you should go to him. 'Cause he's me. *grins*

She leans up to the side of his face and starts to suck on his earlobe. Xander is sweating bullets now, having no idea how to handle this.

Xander I-I don't wanna use force.

She lets go of his ear and leans back to face him again with a wide smile on her face.

Willow Mm. Force is okay!

She tries for his ear again, but he takes her by the arms and pushes her away. She stares at him in confusion.

Xander Th-that's it! This has gotta stop. It's time for me to act like a man. *opens the door behind him* And hide. *rushes out*

Cut to the hall at school. Cordelia comes in at the far end and walks up to her friends standing there in a huddle. They all cross their arms and face her when she arrives.

Cordelia Ha. Very funny. What did I do now, wear red and purple together?

Harmony You know what you did. Xander is wounded because of you.

They all walk past her in disgust. She turns around, and they face her when she speaks.

Cordelia Are you tripping? I thought you wanted me to break up with him!

Harmony Only a sick pup would let Xander get away, no matter what her friends said.

They all give her a huff and leave.

Cordelia What does it take to make you people happy? Cut to a pair of doors in the halls. The camera is at a low angle for a shot of Xander's shoes as he pushes open the doors and walks into the hall in slow motion to the tune of "Got the Love" by The Average White Band.

Lyrics Hey, yeah / Got the love, got the love

Cut to Xander staring at all the girls looking at him with love in their eyes, some giggling, some giving him sexy looks, some just watching him walk.

Lyrics Mm, yeah / Got the love, got the love

He looks over at the other side of the hall, and it's more of the same.

Lyrics Got the love, got the love / Sugar baby / Got the love, got the love

Xander keeps walking up the hall. The guys are clearly not happy that he has the attention of all the girls.

Lyrics Oh, now, babe, you've been gone such a long time

Behind him the girls start to gather and follow.

Lyrics Been thinkin' 'bout what it is we got

Several girls cross in front of him and check him out.

Lyrics Not all the time in the world / Whoo! / But got a lot

Xander looks around in disbelief.

Lyrics Now, there's much more than a ghost of a chance
More girls stare at him walking by, and he gets looks and shakes of heads from the guys.

Lyrics We can make it right this time

A group of four girls starts to tail him down the hall.

Lyrics 'Cause you've got to stay mine

Cut to the library. Xander comes in, closes the door behind him and checks to see if any of the girls are following him in.

Lyrics Yeah, I got the love / Got the love, got the love
Satisfied he has no stalkers, he heads into the library to find Giles as the music fades out.

Lyrics We got to make it work / Got the love, got the love
Giles comes down the stairs Xander. looks at him What is it? sets his books down

Xander It, it's me... throwing myself at your mercy.

Giles What? Why? takes off his glasses to clean them

Xander I made a mess, Giles. See, I found out that Amy's into witchcraft, and I was hurt, I guess, so I... made her put the love whammy on Cordy, but it backfired, and

now every woman in Sunnydale wants to make me her cuddle monkey, which may sound swell on paper, but...

Jenny comes into the library behind them and strides up to Giles.

Jenny Rupert, we need to talk. Hey, Xander. Nice shirt. rubs his shirt Look, Rupert, I know that you're angry at me, and I don't blame you, but I am not just gonna go away. keeps rubbing Xander's arm I mean, I care far too much about you to... looks at Xander's arm Have you been working out?

Xander gives Giles a 'see what I mean?' look. Giles grabs Jenny by the arms and pulls her away and behind him.

Jenny Oh!

She stares at Xander with a look of desire in her eyes. Giles looks at her, at Xander, back at her, and finally back at Xander.

Giles I cannot believe that you are fool enough to do something like this!

Xander Oh, no, I'm twice the fool it takes to do something like this.

Jenny keeps staring at him while she plays with her necklace.

Giles Has, uh... Has Amy tried to reverse the spell?

Xander I get around Amy and all she wants to do is talk honeymoon plans.

Jenny steps toward Xander Rupert, maybe I need to talk to Xander alone.

Giles pushes her back Do you have any idea how serious this is? People under a-a love spell, Xander, are-are deadly. They lose all capacity for reason.

He looks at Jenny who has begun rubbing her hands over her face and neck, then down her body.

Giles to Xander And if what you say is true and the entire female population is affected, I... sternly Don't leave the library. Jenny keeps staring I'll find Amy and see if we can put a stop to this thing.

He starts to leave the library. Jenny rubs her fingers together, alone at last with Xander, and sashays up to him. He steps back away from her. Giles walks back up to them, takes Jenny by the hand and pulls her out of the library behind him. Jenny moans and reaches her arm out to Xander as Giles drags her off.

Jenny No!

Xander realizes he's finally alone without any girls around, and quickly moves to push the mobile card catalog in front of the doors in an attempt to keep it that way. As he heads back toward the table Buffy pulls the door out and open and steps in wearing only a short black raincoat that reaches barely down to mid-thigh and black high heels. When Xander hears the door swing shut and smack the card catalog behind him he spins around and stares at Buffy in shock. She is stand-

ing there with one hand on the catalog and the other propped up on top of the theft detector and smiles at him as she raises her right ankle and rubs it against her left calf.

Buffy Alone at last.

Xander *stares open-mouthed* Buff, give me a heart attack!

Buffy Oh, *starts a sexy walk toward him* I'm gonna give you more than that. *grabs her raincoat belt to untie it*

Xander *backs away, gesturing with his hands* Buff, for the love of God, don't open that raincoat.

Buffy Come on! It's a party! Aren't you gonna open your present? *undoes a button*

Xander *keeps backing toward the stairs nervously* It's not that I don't want to. Sometimes the remote impossible possibility that you might like me was all that sustained me. But not now. *trips and falls backward onto the stairs* Not like this. This isn't real to you. *Buffy steps up and puts her leg over him* You're only here because of a spell. *gets a confused stare from her* I mean, if I thought you had one clue what it would mean to me... *shakes his head* But you don't. So I can't.

Buffy *starts to get upset* So you're saying this is all a game?

Xander A game? I... No!

Buffy *angry* You make me feel this way, and then you reject me? What am I, a toy?

Xander Buffy, please calm down.

Buffy I'll calm down when you explain yourself!

Amy *appears behind them* Get away from him. *Buffy turns to her* He's mine.

Buffy *steps toward Amy* Oh, I don't think so. *looks back at him* Xander, tell her.

Xander What? I, uh...

Amy He doesn't have to say. *Buffy looks back at her* I know what his heart wants.

Buffy Funny, I know what your face wants.

She swings and punches Amy in the face. She falls to the floor. Buffy confronts Xander.

Buffy What is this, you're two-timing me?

Xander doesn't know what to say. Amy gets up. Her nose is bloody and her eyes have become pitch-black. She begins to weave a spell with her hands.

Amy Goddess Hecate, work thy will.

Xander Uh-oh.

The spell's energy swirls around her.

Amy Before thee let the unclean thing crawl!

She thrusts her arms out at Buffy, and the power of the spell leaps from her hands and envelops the Slayer. The energy soon dissipates.

Xander Buffy! *stares in utter disbelief* Oh, my God!

Part 3

The library. Xander looks down at Buffy's empty raincoat lying on the floor, then back up at Amy. Giles comes back into the library with Jenny.

Giles What, what just happened?

Xander *indicates the raincoat* Buffy.

Jenny smiles broadly when she sees Xander and tries to go to him, but Giles holds her back.

Giles Where is she?

They both look down at the raincoat. Cut to a shot of a sleeve. Buffy has been turned into a rat, and she comes crawling out.

Giles Oh, my God!

Amy *steps over to Xander* Why is she here? *gestures at Jenny*

Xander Can you focus for a minute? You just turned Buffy into a rat.

Buffy starts to scamper across the floor. Giles follows her with his gaze.

Amy *to Xander* Buffy can take care of herself. *takes his arm* Why don't we go someplace private?

Jenny puts her hands on her hips and gives Amy a haughty look. Giles looks around for where Buffy went.

Xander *jerks his arm away* Can you... I'm not going anywhere until you change her back.

Jenny *steps over to Amy* You heard him. So why don't you undo your little magic trick and get lost?

Amy Who made you Queen of the World? Well, you're old enough to be.

Jenny Well, what can I say? *grabs Xander by the shirt* I guess Xander's just too much man *pulls him closer* for the pimple squad.

Amy puts her arm between them and pushes Xander away from Jenny. She waves her hands before her and begins to cast another spell. Her eyes turn pitch-black, and energy begins to swirl around her as she speaks.

Amy Goddess Hecate, to you I pray, with this...

Xander *puts his hand over Amy's mouth* Would you quit with the Hecate?! *pulls her back and away*

Cut to the halls. Cordelia is at her locker and closes it. She starts down the hall, but runs into Harmony and friends waiting to confront her.

Cordelia Okay, what now? You don't like my locker combination?

Harmony *hands on her hips* It's just not right. You never loved him. You just used him. You make me sick.

Cordelia *sarcastically* Okay, Harmony, if you need to borrow my Midol, just ask.

Harmony slaps Cordelia across the face. She holds her hand to her face and looks at Harmony in surprise. She turns to go the other way, but Cordette blocks her way and pushes her up against the lockers. Then she and another girl pull her away from the wall and shove her down to the floor.

Cut to the library. Giles has had enough and talks sternly to Amy and Jenny.

Giles You two, sit. *Amy goes to the table* And be quiet. *Jenny joins her* We have to catch the Buffy rat. *takes off his coat*

Xander *spots Buffy* Ooo, there!

Buffy squeezes behind a bookcase as he rushes to try to catch her. Amy and Jenny sit down at the table across from one another, each staring at the other. Xander is too late to get Buffy, but he sees her crawl along the space behind the case toward the other end. He quickly crawls along the front of the case to head her off. Giles watches at the end that Xander just left. Xander peeks around the other end of the bookcase to wait for Buffy to come out.

Xander Good Buffy. Just...

He sees someone come up next to him and looks up. There he sees Oz standing over him, and the next thing he knows Oz has punched him in the face. He stumbles backward into the shelves. Giles is startled and looks up as well. Oz shakes out his hand. Buffy makes her escape from behind the bookcase and goes out of the library doors into the hall.

Oz *still shaking his hand* That kinda hurt.

Xander *rubbing his cheek* Kinda?! What was that for?

Oz I was on the phone all night, listening to Willow cry about **you**. Now, I don't know exactly what happened, but I was left with a very strong urge to... hit you. *offers his hand to help Xander up*

Xander *takes Oz's hand and gets up* I didn't touch her. I swear.

Giles *upset* Xander! Where's Buffy? *starts looking again*

Xander *to Oz* Amy turned her into a rat.

Oz *looks around* Oh.

Giles and Xander get on their knees and look around while making squeaking noises. Oz crouches down to look as well.

Giles I don't see her. If anything happens to her, I'll... *looks at Xander in disgust* Oh, just go home. *stands up* Lock yourself away. You're only going to cause more problems here. Now, Amy, Jenny and I will, uh... try and break the spell. *the women stand up* Oz, if, if you could aid us in, in finding, um... Buffy.

Oz Sure. Absolutely.

Xander starts to say something, but Giles cuts him off before he can even get out a word, doing his best to con-

trol his anger.

Giles Just go. Get out of my sight.

Xander doesn't take it very well and stares at Giles for a moment with his mouth agape, but then goes with his head hung low. Oz crouches back down to look for Buffy.

Oz Buffy...

Cut to the hall. Xander comes out of the library, still looking down, when he hears Cordelia cry out and looks down the hall toward her voice.

Cordelia What are you doing?! You guys are crazy!

He sees a group of girls apparently involved in a cat-fight.

Harmony You thought you could do better, is that it?

Cordelia No, I...

Cordette We'll knock that snotty attitude right out of you!

The crowd of girls opens a bit, and Xander sees that it is indeed Cordelia that they are attacking. He starts running toward them, and when they see him coming several of them break off and come at him, screaming and shouting. In their lust they try to grab him as the others push Cordelia to the floor. He fights his way through them and over to Cordelia, where one girl has begun pulling at her hair.

Cordelia Ow! Stop!

When he reaches her, he pushes the hair-pulling girl aside, picks up Cordelia from the floor into his arms and shakes the girls off as he runs from the hall. They all chase after him.

Cut to the library. Jenny paces while Giles sits at the table and goes through some books. Amy, seated opposite him, wipes the blood from her nose.

Giles You must have botched the ritual so that Cordelia's necklace actually protected her from the spell. Th-th-that one should be easily reversible. W-w-where did you learn animal transformation?

Amy *looks up at Giles* Why did you send Xander away?

Giles *puts his hands to his eyes in despair* He needs me.

Jenny *chortles* That's a laugh.

Amy *to Jenny* He loves me. We look into each other's souls.

Jenny No one can love two people at once. What **we** have is real.

Giles Instead of making me ill, why doesn't one of you try to help me?

Amy *looks back into her pocket mirror* You have no idea what I'm going through.

Giles *gets up to Amy, sternly* I know it's not love. It's obsession. Selfish, banal obsession. *Jenny starts out of the library* Now, Xander has put himself in very great danger. If you cared at all about him, you'd help me save

him, rather than wittering on about your feelings. Amy looks away from him. Jenny goes out the door. Giles pokes his fingers into the book in front of Amy.

Giles Now, let's get on with some work. *turns to Jenny* Now, Jenny... *sees she's gone* Great!

Cut to an exit from the halls to outside. Xander and Cordelia come running out.

Xander I think we... *sees a crowd of girls waiting for them* lost 'em.

Willow is at the front of the crowd holding a large fire ax.

Willow I should've known I'd find you with her.

Xander Will... Come on, you don't wanna hurt me.

Willow Oh, no? You don't know how hard this is for me. I love you so much! I'd rather see you dead than with that bitch.

She raises the ax and advances toward him. The others start toward him as well. Harmony and her friends come running out of the hall now, too, and confront the crowd. The girls all scream and yell as they fight. Harmony grabs Willow's ax and wrestles her for it.

Harmony Get away from him! He's mine!

As the girls all fight Xander and Cordelia make their escape. When the girls realize they've gone they start to give chase.

Cut to the school basement door standing ajar. Buffy scampers in and hops down each step. She makes her way over to the boiler room. Oz has managed to track her and comes down the steps behind her with a flashlight. When he reaches the bottom of the steps he scans around, looking for where she went. Buffy goes into the boiler room, and Oz soon follows. A cat sees Buffy and meows meanly at her. Buffy squeaks and runs off. The cat chases after her.

Cut to Buffy's street. Xander and Cordelia come running down it and slow to a walk.

Xander Okay, now I really think we've lost them.

Cordelia Damn it, Xander, what's going on? Who died and made **you** Elvis?

Xander *sees the house* Buffy's house. Let's get inside. I'll explain later.

They run up to the door and Xander knocks fast and loud, looking back to see if the crowd of girls has found them yet. Cordelia joins in the knocking.

Cordelia *frantic* Come on!

Joyce *opens the door* Xander, Cordelia, what...

They push their way in past her.

Cordelia Yeah, hi.

She slams the door shut behind her, and she and Xander look out the small windows in the door to make sure there's still no one following them.

Cut inside the kitchen. Xander walks in with Joyce and Cordelia close behind.

Joyce What happened? Why are you all scratched up? Where's Buffy?

Xander She's, um... around.

Joyce *gestures to a stool* Well, sit down and tell me about it. *Xander sits to Cordelia* Why don't you run upstairs and grab some bandages out of the bathroom?

Cordelia goes down the hall toward the stairs. Joyce looks at Xander again.

Joyce Let me, uh, get you something to drink. You in the mood for cold or hot?

Xander I, uh... *shrugs with his hands*

Joyce *walks around behind him* I think it's *starts rubbing his shoulders* more of a **hot** night, don't you? *leans in and giggles*

Xander *drops his head to the table* Whatever.

Joyce *massages his shoulders* Ooo, you are so tense. *kisses his neck* Mm.

Cordelia *comes back* What are you doing? Make me yak!

Joyce *defensive* Cordelia, go back upstairs. This is between us.

Cordelia Gross! I think not.

She grabs Joyce by the arm and pushes her back toward the door and opens it.

Joyce What are you doing? Hey! Get your hands off me! Cordelia pushes her out of the door, slams it shut and locks it.

Cordelia And keep your mom-aged mitts off my boyfriend. Former! *to Xander* Why has everyone gone insane?

Xander Insane? Is it so impossible for you to believe that other women find me attractive?

Cordelia The only way you could get girls to want you would be witchcraft.

Xander That is such a... *concedes* Well, yeah, okay, good point.

Joyce breaks one of the kitchen door windowpanes.

Cordelia Oh, my God!

Joyce reaches in and feels around for the lock.

Joyce Xander, honey, let Joycie in. Hon, let Joycie in!

Xander gets up, takes hold of Cordelia and leads her out of the kitchen at a run.

Xander Upstairs! Buffy's room!

Joyce *finds and works the lock* Sweetheart...

Cut to Buffy's room. They run in, and Cordelia slams the door shut. Xander goes to the window and checks outside.

Xander Good. The mob still hasn't found us. We should be safer up here.

Just as he looks back from the window Angelus grabs him from outside.

Angelus Works in theory.

He pulls Xander out onto the roof.

Cordelia *terrified* Xander!

Part 4

The boiler room at school. The cat has apparently gone or been chased away. Buffy crawls around, trying to find the source of a scent. The camera pans behind some crates over to a trap baited with cheese.

Cut to the roof outside of Buffy's window. Angelus grabs Xander by the shirt.

Angelus Where's Buffy?!

Cordelia comes up to the window and looks out at them.

Xander Cordy, get outta here!

Angelus throws him off of the roof to the lawn below. He leaps down after him and stands over him.

Angelus Perfect. *grabs Xander and pulls him up* I wanted to do something special for Buffy, actually to Buffy, but this is **so** much better!

Xander knees him in the crotch, but Angelus isn't fazed. He flips Xander over backward onto the grass again. He bends down, grabs Xander's hair and lifts his head up.

Angelus If it's any consolation, I feel very close to you right now.

A hand grabs Angelus by the shoulder, pulls him up and throws him aside into a tree. He hits it hard and slides down to the ground. Xander jumps to a conclusion and looks up at his savior.

Xander Buffy, how...

Drusilla Don't fret, kitten. *helps him up* Mummy's here.

Angelus I don't know what you're up to, Dru, but it **doesn't** amuse!

She growls at Angelus and he growls back.

Drusilla If you harm one hair on this boy's head... *strokes his hair*

Angelus You've gotta be kidding. Him?

Drusilla Just because I finally found a **real** man... *turns Xander to face her*

Angelus I guess I really **did** drive you crazy. *backs away*

Drusilla *runs her fingers over Xander's lips* Your face is a poem. *moans* I can read it.

Xander *terrified* Really? It doesn't say 'spare me' by any chance?

Drusilla Shhh. *kisses him* How do you feel about eternal life?

Xander *trembles with fear* We couldn't just start with a coffee? A movie, maybe?

She grabs his hair and jerks his head to the side, exposing his neck. She moves in to bite him, but gets distracted by the screams of the mob of women running at them. Willow leads them with her ax. Jenny and the

rest are right behind. Some of the others have weapons as well.

Girl There he is! Get them!

Jenny He's mine! Get off!

Drusilla lets go of Xander. Willow shoves her aside. Jenny jumps onto Xander and knocks him to the ground. All the girls are screaming. Several of them including Harmony begin to paw at him. Willow stands over him with her ax. Cordelia comes out of the house and rushes toward the mob. Xander gets pinned down, and Willow raises her ax to strike.

Willow All you had to do was love me!

Cordelia No!

She grabs the ax and shoves Willow over and onto the ground, then tries to free Xander.

Cordelia Get out of the way! Move it! Get off him!

She pushes the one that has him pinned down off of him, grabs his hand and pulls him up.

Cordelia Back off!

She pushes him ahead of her, and they start to run back to the house. They just manage to slam the door in the faces of their pursuers. Cut to outside the door to the kitchen. Drusilla hits it with both hands, and it goes crashing to the floor. Two girls rush in beside her.

Girl I love you!

When Drusilla tries to follow an unseen force prevents from entering the house. Angelus watches from behind her.

Angelus Ahh! Sorry, Dru. *she turns to face him* I guess you're not invited.

Cut to Xander and Cordy inside the front door. Joyce comes up behind them holding a large knife.

Joyce It's never gonna work for us, Xander. We have to end it.

The other two girls come up behind her. Cordelia yells out in fright as Xander pulls her away from the door. Cut inside the basement. Xander and Cordelia rush in. He pulls the door closed behind him and hooks it shut. Cut to the boiler room. Oz continues scanning with his flashlight.

Oz Here, Buffy.

Cut to the trap. The camera pans up from it over to a pile of rags. Buffy climbs over the pile and heads for the trap.

Cut to the science lab. Giles and Amy have a beaker of brew going over a Bunsen burner. Giles checks everything and is satisfied.

Giles Right. *to Amy* Go on. You first.

Cut to the basement at Buffy's house. The door is being yanked at violently. Xander has hammered a couple of boards across the doorframe and looks back at Cordelia.

Xander Gimme a nail!

She hands him a nail and he goes back to hammering.

Cordelia If we die in here I'm gonna kick your ass! I mean it!

Xander *looks back at her* None of this would've happened if you hadn't broken up with me. But no, you're so desperate to be popular! *hammers*

Cordelia Me? I'm not the one who embraced the black arts just to get the girls to like me. Well, congratulations, it worked!

Xander *looks at her* Would've worked fine, except your hide's so thick, not even magic can penetrate it! *hammers*

She is surprised by that, and reaches out to him. He turns to face her again.

Cordelia You mean the spell was for me?

They look at each other for a moment, then a knife blade stabs through the door. Cordelia screams, and they both run down the steps. Once at the bottom they hear glass breaking and see a hand reach in through the basement window.

Girl reaching in Oh, please let me touch you!

Cut to the boiler room. Buffy crawls onto the trap.

Cut to the science lab. Amy begins her chant.

Amy Goddess of creatures great and small, I conjure thee to withdraw.

Cut to the boiler room. Oz continues looking for Buffy.

Cut to the lab.

Amy Hecate, I hereby license thee to depart.

Giles sprinkles a powder into the beaker and it sparks.

Cut to the boiler room. A bright light begins to flash from behind the crate where Buffy is. Oz holds up his flashlight and squints against the light. In a few seconds it's over.

Oz Buffy?

She raises her head and looks around from behind the crate.

Cut to the basement at the Summers house. Cordelia screams as she and Xander run into the area where the washer and dryer are. Willow finally gets the door open.

Cordelia Oh, my God!

Xander spots a large pipe wrench and grabs it to use as a weapon.

Xander Stay behind me.

Willow ducks under the boards Xander nailed across the doorframe and starts down the stairs. Joyce is right behind her with her knife. A crowd of girls follows them.

Cordelia and Xander retreat into the corner by the water heater.

Cut to the lab at school. Giles takes a pinch of an herb from a jar.

Giles Um... Diana, goddess of love, be gone.

He puts the herb into the brew and it sparks.

Giles Hear no more thy siren's song.

Cut to Buffy's basement. Willow leads the way in. When they find Xander and Cordelia they all charge them, screaming and shouting. They knock Xander and Cordelia to the floor. The two of them have to fight off the girls' grabbing hands.

Cordelia Get off!

Willow has dropped her ax and paws at them like the others. Xander struggles to keep from being torn apart.

Cut to the lab. Giles waves Cordelia's pendant over the brew and drops it in. Suddenly a cloud of energy appears above them, and they have to hold on to the lab table to keep from being knocked down. The energy draws in from the windows and spirals down into the beaker. As quickly as it was there it's gone.

Cut to the basement. The gang of girls stops struggling. Cordelia pushes one of them away.

Cordelia Get off me!

They all stand up and look around at each other.

Girl What's going on? Where am I? What's going on?

Cut to the boiler room. Buffy stands up and Oz raises his flashlight and shines it on her. She looks down at herself. He immediately raises the light away from her and turns it off. She hugs her arms around herself to cover up.

Buffy *smiles* Hi, Oz!

Oz Hi.

Buffy I seem to be having a slight case of nudity here.

Oz But you're not a rat. So call it an upside.

Buffy You think maybe you could get me some clothing?

Oz Yes, I can. Just, uh... don't go anywhere. *leaves*

Buffy *looks around* Really not an issue.

Cut to Joyce's basement. Everyone is still confused. Joyce looks around at all the people in her basement.

Joyce What... What did we...

Cordelia *thinking quick* Boy, that was the best scavenger hunt ever.

She and Xander smile at everyone lamely.

Cut to the halls at school the next day. Xander and Buffy come walking around the corner and continue toward the library.

Buffy Scavenger hunt.

Xander Your mom seemed to buy it.

Buffy So she says. I think she's just so wigged at hitting on one of my friends that she's repressing. She's getting

pretty good at that. I should probably start worrying.

Xander Well, I'm back to being incredibly unpopular.

Buffy It's better than everyone trying to ax-murder you, right?

Xander Mostly, but, uh... Willow won't even talk to me.

Buffy Any particular reason she should?

Xander How much groveling are we talking here?

Buffy Oh, a month, at least. *they stop and face each other* Xander, come on, I mean... this is worse for her than anyone. She loved you before you invoked the great Roofie spirit. The rest of us...

Xander You remember, huh?

Buffy Oh, yeah. I remember coming on to you, I remember begging you to undress me... And then a sudden need for cheese. I also remember that you didn't.

Xander Need cheese?

Buffy Undress me. It meant a lot to me what you said.

Xander C'mon, Buffy, I couldn't take advantage of you like that. Okay, for a minute, it was touch and go there...

Buffy You came through. There might just be hope for you yet.

Xander Well, tell that to Cordelia.

Buffy You're on your own there.

She goes off down the hall leaving Xander alone.

Cut to the colonnade. Cordelia, Harmony and friends come walking around under the balcony and head toward the foot of the stairs.

Harmony Cody Weinberg called me at home last night.

Cordelia Cody Weinberg? The one with the 350sl?

Harmony The very one. Said he's thinking of asking me to the pledge dance on Thursday.

Cordelia That's so huge!

Harmony Yeah, there's just two other girls he's gonna ask first, and if they refuse, then I'll...

Xander bumps into Harmony as they round the corner to the stairs.

Harmony Watch it!

Xander Sorry.

Harmony God! *looks him up and down* Y'know, I'm glad your mom stopped working at the drive-through long enough to dress you. *to Cordelia* Oh, that reminds me. *Xander starts away* Did you see Jennifer's backpack? It is **so** a crying...

Cordelia *interrupts* Harmony, shut up. *Xander looks back* Do you know what you are, Harmony? You're a sheep.

Harmony I'm not a sheep.

Cordelia You're a sheep. All you ever do is what everyone else does just so you can say you did it first. And here I am, scrambling for your approval, when I'm **way** cooler than you are 'cause I'm **not** a sheep. I do what I wanna do, and I wear what I wanna wear. And you know what? *Xander smiles* I'll date whoever the hell I wanna date. No matter how lame he is.

Xander's smiles fades at that. Cordelia leaves the group and goes over to him. He smiles again. When she reaches him she takes his arm and they start walking together along the colonnade.

Cordelia *breathing hard with anxiety* Oh, God! Oh, God!

Xander *pats her hand* You're gonna be okay. Just keep walkin'.

Cordelia Oh, God, what have I done? They're never gonna speak to me again!

Xander Oh, sure, they are. If it helps, whenever we're around them you and I can fight a lot.

Cordelia You promise?

Xander *takes her hand in his* You can pretty much count on it.

They both smile as they continue walking.

Passion

Written by Ty King

Directed by Michael E. Gershman

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Passion". It also includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.06

This episode was originally broadcast on February 24, 1998.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against

the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

The Bronze. The camera extends out from the catwalk, looking straight down onto the people below. They are dancing to the slow, sensual rhythm of "Never an Easy Way" performed by Morcheeba.

Lyrics Think I slip the net / But I cut myself free

Cut to the crowd below. Buffy and Xander are dancing together, but not close, and exchange a few words as they move around. Behind them Cordelia and Willow are sitting at a table and chatting.

Lyrics I'm not losing yet / So don't forget me / I'll say it, replay it...

A man crosses in front of the camera, temporarily blocking the view, and when he's gone by Angelus is standing beyond the table near the base of the stairs. He watches them dance. His voice narrates throughout the scene.

Angelus Passion.

Lyrics ...and try tomorrow

Angelus It lies in all of us.

Lyrics I'll say it, replay it...

Angelus Sleeping...

Lyrics ...and live with sorrow

Angelus ...waiting... And though unwanted...

Lyrics You'd think I'd learn by now

Angelus ...unbidden... it will stir...

Lyrics There's never an easy way

He begins to move around the room, all the while keeping his stare on Buffy.

Angelus ...open its jaws, and howl.

Lyrics I'll get through somehow / I'm on my knees to pray

Cut outside to the alley. Willow and Buffy come walking out of the Bronze. Buffy has her arm hooked into Wil-

low's. Cordelia and Xander are behind them with their arms around each other.

Lyrics You'd think I'd learn by now / There's never an easy way

They walk past a couple, apparently engaged in a kiss. The camera stops on the couple.

Lyrics I'll get through somehow...

The man lifts his head from the woman, and it's Angelus, just finishing a bite. He lets the woman's dead body fall to the pavement. He steps out into the alley, leaving the woman's body lying there, and watches the group as they walk away, completely unaware of his presence and his deed. He morphs into his human guise and begins to follow.

Cut to a shot into Buffy's room from outside of her window. Buffy walks around her bed past the window. On her way back she pauses by the window and looks out. She lifts the blinds a little and scans around. Seemingly satisfied that no one's there she walks back over to her closet, unzipping the back of her dress along the way.

Cut to later inside her room. She's in her pajamas now. She sets her alarm and gets into bed. She reaches over to turn off her light and settles in to sleep. The camera closes in on her a little and turns to include the window in the shot. Angelus is outside looking in.

Cut to even later in her room. The camera closes in on a sleeping Buffy. A shadow comes across her bed, and a hand reaches over to stroke her hair with its fingers. The camera pans over to the person, and it's Angelus, sitting on the edge of her bed and looking down at her. He continues his narration as the camera pulls out for a shot of him sitting next to her while she sleeps.

Angelus It speaks to us... guides us... Passion rules us all. And we obey. What other choice do we have?

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part 1

Morning in Buffy's room. The camera pans from the foot of her bed up to her face. She stirs and wakes. She opens her eyes to look over at her clock, but they fix on an envelope left next to her on her pillow. She lets out an inquiring moan, pushes her hair back and picks up the envelope as she sits up. She looks down at it and sees that it's blank. She opens it, takes out the paper inside, unfolds it and can only stare at it in disbelief. Cut to a view of the sheet. On it is a pencil sketch of her sleeping.

Buffy He was in my room.

Cut to the library. Giles is behind the counter checking in various books. Buffy walks past him toward the table as he looks up.

Giles Who?

Buffy Angel. He was in my room last night.

He comes out from behind the counter and follows her over to the table. Xander and Cordelia are there also.

Giles Are you sure?

Buffy Positive. When I woke up, I found a picture he'd left me on my pillow. *crosses her arms*

Xander A visit from the pointed-tooth fairy.

Cordelia Wait, I thought vampires couldn't come in unless you invited them in.

Giles Yes, but, uh, once you've invited them in, thereafter they're, they're always welcome.

Buffy looks down, then over at Xander as he speaks.

Xander Y'know, I think there may be a valuable lesson for you gals here about inviting strange men into your bedrooms.

Cordelia *realizes* Oh, God! *looks at Xander* I invited him in my car once. *looks at Giles* That means he can come into my car whenever he wants.

Xander Yep, you're doomed to havin' *Cordelia looks at him* to give him and his vamp pals a lift whenever they feel like it. And those guys never chip in for gas.

Cordelia looks away, disgusted.

Buffy Giles, there has to be some sort of spell to reverse the invitation, right? Like a barrier, a no shoes, no pulse, no service kind of thing?

Cordelia Yeah, that works for a car, too?

Giles Yes, well, I-I-I could check on my...

Xander *hops up from his chair* Hello!

They all look behind them and see Jonathan and a girl come into the library.

Xander Excuse me, but have you ever heard of knocking?

Jonathan *gestures to the library before him* We're supposed to get some books. On Stalin. *nods*

Xander *points at Jonathan* Does this look like a Barnes & Noble?

Giles This is a school library, Xander.

Xander Since when?

Giles *to Jonathan* Uh, y-yes, yes, uh, third row. *gestures to the stacks* Historical biographies.

Jonathan Thanks.

He and the girl walk past them, up the stairs and into the stacks. The others watch them go until they disappear. Xander points out of the library. He and Cordelia pick up their things and start out. Giles looks at Buffy, confused, but follows.

Giles What... *gets a look from Buffy* Oh!

Jonathan comes back out of the stacks.

Jonathan Hey, did you say that was the... *sees they're gone* Hello?

Cut to the hall. Xander and Cordelia lead Giles and Buffy as they walk along.

Giles So Angel has decided to step up his harassment of you?

Cordelia By sneaking in her room and leaving stuff at night? Why doesn't he just slit her throat or strangle her while she's sleeping or cut her heart out? *gets looks from everyone* What? I'm trying to help.

They've left the hall and walk along the colonnade.

Giles Yes. *to Buffy* Uh, uh, look, it's-it's classic battle strategy to throw one's opponent off his game. He-he-he's just trying to provoke you. Uh, to taunt you, to, to goad you into, uh, some mishap of some sort.

Xander *looks back at Giles* The *sing-song* nah-nah-nah-nah-nah approach to battle?

Giles Yes, Xander, once more you've managed to boil a complex thought down to its simplest possible form. *Xander smiles*

Buffy Giles, Angel once told me that when he was obsessed with Drusilla, the first thing h-he did was to kill her family.

Xander *stops and looks at her* Your mom.

Buffy I know. I'm gonna have to tell her something. *sits on a wall and looks at Giles* The truth?

Giles *approaches her, waving his finger* No. You-you-you can't do that.

Xander Yeah. The more people who know the secret, the more it cheapens it for the rest of us.

Buffy But I've gotta tell her something. I've gotta do something. Giles, Angel has an all-access pass to my house, and I'm not always there when my mother is. I can't protect her.

Giles *flustered* I told you I will find a-a spell.

Buffy What about **until** you find a spell?

Cordelia Until then, you and your mother are welcome to ride around with me in my car.

Giles Buffy, I-I understand your concern, but it's imperative that you keep a level head through all this.

Buffy That's easy for you to say. You don't have Angel lurking in your bedroom at night.

Giles I know how hard this is for you. *gets a look from Buffy* All right, I don't. But as the Slayer, you don't have the luxury of being a slave to your, your passions. You mustn't let Angel get to you. No matter how provocative his behavior may become.

Buffy So what you're basically saying is, 'just ignore him, and maybe he'll go away'?

Giles *exhales* Yes. Precisely.

Xander Hey, how come Buffy doesn't get a snotty 'once again you boil it down to the simplest form' thing?

Giles and Buffy both look over at him. He looks her up and down.

Xander Watcher's pet.

Cut to Jenny's computer science class.

Jenny Don't forget, I need your sample spreadsheets by the end of the week.

The bell rings, and she walks around behind her desk.

Jenny Oh, and I want both a paper printout and a copy on disk. Thank you.

She looks down at her desk for a second, then back up and reaches her arm out to get Willow's attention before she goes.

Jenny Willow.

Willow *approaches the desk* Yes?

Jenny Um, I might be a little late tomorrow. Do you think you could cover my class till I show?

Willow *smiling brightly* Really? Me? Teach the class? Sure!

Jenny Cool.

Willow *suddenly worried* Oh, wait. W-what if they don't recognize my authority? What if they try to convince me that you always let them leave class early? What if there's a fire drill? What if there's a fire?

Jenny *reassuringly* Willow, you're gonna be fine. And I'll try not to be too late, okay?

Willow *calmer* Okay. Good. Earlier is good. *smiles* Will I have the power to assign detention? Or make 'em run laps?

Buffy and Giles appear at the door.

Buffy Hey, Will.

Jenny and Willow look over at her.

Jenny Hi, Buffy. Rupert.

Giles looks down.

Buffy *ignoring Jenny* Willow, I thought I might take in a class. Figured I could use someone who knows where they are.

Willow glances over at Jenny with her eyes and then starts to walk out of the classroom.

Willow to Buffy Sorry. I have to talk to her. She's a teacher, and teachers are to be respected, *they exit the room* even if they're only filling in until the real teacher shows up, because otherwise chaos could ensue...

Giles has let the girls go, and now steps into the classroom. His hands are in his pockets.

Jenny How have you been?

Giles Uh, not so good, actually. Uh, since Angel lost his soul, he's regained his sense of whimsy.

Jenny Well, that sounds bad. *crosses her arms*

Giles He's been in Buffy's bedroom. I-I-I need to drum up a spell to, uh, keep him out of the house.

She reaches down to her desk and picks up an old book.

Jenny This might help. *hands it to Giles* I've been doing a little reading since Angel changed. *crosses her arms again* I don't think you have that one.

Giles Thank you. *leafs through it*

Jenny So, how's Buffy doing?

Giles *closes and lowers the book* How do you think?

Jenny *faces away* I know you feel betrayed.

Giles Yes. Well, that's one of the unpleasant side effects of betrayal.

Jenny *looks down at her desk* Rupert... I was raised by the people that Angel hurt the most. *looks up at Giles* My duty to them was the first thing I was ever taught. I didn't come here to hurt anyone, *looks away* a-and I lied to you because I thought it was the right thing to do. I... I didn't know what would happen. I didn't know I was gonna fall in love with you.

She pauses for a moment before looking back up at Giles. They exchange a meaningful look, but then she looks away again.

Jenny Oh, God. Is it too late to take that back?

Giles Do you want to?

Jenny *looks at him* I just wanna be right with you. I don't expect more. I just want so badly to make all this up to you.

Giles I understand. But I'm not the one you need to make it up to.

She looks at him, understanding. He gives her a little smile and raises the book.

Giles Thank you for the book.

He turns and walks out of the room. She just watches him go.

Cut to the dining room at Buffy's house. She and Joyce are having dinner. Buffy is just picking at her food. Joyce puts down her fork, folds her hands and leans forward on the table toward her daughter.

Joyce Okay. What's wrong?

Buffy *looks at her mom* It's nothing. *looks at her plate*

Joyce Come on. You can tell me anything. *Buffy eyes her* I've read all the parenting books. You cannot surprise

me.

Buffy puts down her fork, puts her hands in her lap and looks over at her mother.

Buffy Do you remember that guy Angel?

Joyce Angel, the, um... *thinks* the college boy who was tutoring you in history?

Buffy Right. Uh, he... I-I... *looks down and whispers* Oh, God. Um... *looks back up* We're sort of dating, **were** dating, um, going through a serious off-again phase right now.

Joyce *smiles* Don't tell me. He's changed. He's not the same guy you fell for?

Buffy *smiles nervously* In a nutshell. *loses the smile* Anyway, um... since he changed, he's been kinda following me around. He's having trouble letting go.

Joyce *concerned* Buffy, has he done anything...

Buffy No! No, it's not like that. He's just been hanging around... a lot. Just sending me notes, that kind of thing. *gets a concerned look from Joyce* I just don't wanna see him right now. I mean, if he shows up, I'll talk to him. Just... don't invite him in.

Cut to Willow's room. She's in her pajamas, walking around with her cordless phone to her ear.

Willow I agree with Giles. You need to just try and not let him get to you. *heads for her desk* Angel's only doing this to try to get you to do something stupid. *closes her laptop* I swear, men can be such jerks sometimes. Dead or alive. *goes to her new aquarium*

Buffy I just hope Giles can find a keep-out spell soon. Cut to Buffy sitting on her bed, also in pajamas, talking into her phone.

Buffy I know I'll sleep easier when I can... sleep easier.

Cut to Willow sprinkling fish food into her tank.

Willow I'm sure he will. He's like book-man. *puts away the food* Until then, try and keep happy thoughts and... She sees something on her bed. Cut to Buffy.

Buffy And what?

Cut to Willow.

Buffy Willow?

Willow holds the phone between her cheek and shoulder and reaches down for a blank envelope on her bed.

Buffy Willow?

Willow turns back toward her aquarium. The camera follows her and pans around the tank for a shot of her through the fishless water. She opens the envelope and finds a string. She pulls on it, and out come her fish, strung together one after the other. Willow loses her grip on her phone and it falls to the floor.

Cut to later in Buffy's room. She and Willow are sitting on her bed. Behind them is a string of garlic cloves hanging on the wall. Willow has a stake in her hand that she's fidgeting with nervously while she looks around.

Willow Thanks for having me over, Buffy. Especially on a school night and all.

Buffy No problem. Hey, sorry about your fish.

Willow Oh, it's okay. We hadn't really had time to bond yet. Although for the first time I'm glad my parents didn't let me have a puppy.

Buffy *stares into space* It's so weird... Every time something like this happens, my first instinct is still to run to Angel. I can't believe it's the same person. He's completely different from the guy that I knew. *looks at Willow*

Willow Well, sort of, except...

Buffy Except what?

Willow *looks at Buffy* You're still the only thing he thinks about.

Buffy looks down at her hands.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. He's in his wheelchair in the foreground at the head of the table. Drusilla comes in behind him, holding a puppy behind her back.

Drusilla I brought something for you. *brings out the whining puppy* Poor thing. She's an orphan. *reaches Spike* Her owner died... *smiles at him* without a fight. Do you like her? *he looks at her* Hmm? *reaches her hand into his jacket and rubs his chest* I brought her especially for you... *pulls at his jacket* to cheer you up. *raises the puppy* And I've named her... *sweetly* Sunshine! *offers the puppy to Spike* Open wide. *he looks away* Come on, love. You need to eat something to keep your strength up. Now, *waves the puppy around* rrrrr, open up for mummy.

Spike I won't have you feeding me like a child, Dru. *wheels around the table*

Angelus *comes in* Why not? She already bathes you, carries you around and changes you like a child.

Drusilla Why, Angel. *he smiles at her* Where have you been? The sun is almost up, and it can be so hurtful. *looks at Spike* We were worried.

Spike No, we weren't.

Drusilla You must forgive Spike. He's just a bit testy tonight. Doesn't get out much anymore.

Angelus Well, maybe next time I'll bring you with me, Spike. Might be handy to have you around if I ever need a really good parking space.

Spike Have you forgotten that you're a bloody guest in my bloody home?

Angelus *steps closer* And as a guest, *leans in* if there's anything I can do for you... Any... responsibility I can assume while you're spinning your wheels... *looks over at Drusilla* Anything I'm not already doing, that is.

Spike *shoves Angelus away angrily* That's enough!

Angelus smiles widely and giggles.

Drusilla Aww...

She leans down to Spike, gives him a peck on the cheek and puts the puppy in his lap. He holds the puppy as she steps away and goes around the table.

Drusilla You two boys... fightin' over me and all. *stops between two chairs* Makes a girl feel...

Suddenly she looks up and moans loudly in apparent pain. Angelus steps over opposite her across the table, looking concerned.

Spike Dru, what is it, pet?

Drusilla *bent over in pain, breathing hard* The air. It worries. Someone... an old enemy is seeking help... *Angelus throws Spike a look* help to destroy our happy home. *leans against a chair* Ohhhh...

Cut to a tarot shop. The camera pans across a display table with a skull in a covered glass bowl, a small gong hung between two horns, a pig fetus in formaldehyde, what looks like a large crab also in formaldehyde and another jar. A pricing gun waves into view and puts prices on the last two jars. The shopkeeper continues on to price other things.

Cut outside. Jenny walks around the railing in front of the shop and takes the steps down to the entrance. Cut inside the shop. She comes in the door and looks around. The shopkeeper looks up from his work.

Shopkeeper *with a Rumanian accent* Welcome. How may I serve you today?

Jenny *faces him* Uh...

Shopkeeper Love potion? Perhaps a voodoo doll for that unfaithful...

Jenny *interrupts* I need an Orb of Thesulah.

Shopkeeper *drops the accent* Oh, you're in the trade. Sorry about the spiel, but around Valentine's Day, I get a lot of tourists shopping for love potions and mystical revenge of past lovers. *goes behind the sales counter* Sad fact is, Ouija boards and rabbits' feet, that's what pay the rent around here. *goes into the back* So how did you hear about us?

Jenny *checks out a few things* My Uncle Enyos told me about you.

Shopkeeper *looks out at her* So you're Janna, then. *she looks at him* Sorry to hear about your uncle.

Jenny Thank you.

Shopkeeper *comes back with a round wooden box* He was a good customer. Well, no, there you go. *sets it down and opens it* One Thesulan Orb. Spirit vault for the rituals of the undead. *Jenny reaches into her purse* I don't get many calls for those lately. *she pulls out her wallet* Sold a couple as new age paperweights last year. *she hands him a credit card* Yeah, I just love those new-agers, boy. They helped to *imprints the card* send my youngest to college. *fills in the form* By the way, you do know that the transliteration annals for the ritual of the undead were lost. *hands her the form and a pen* Without the annals, the surviving text is gibberish.

Jenny And without a translated text, the Orbs of Thesulah are pretty much useless. *signs* Yeah, I know. *hands him his copy*

Shopkeeper Well, I only mention it because I have a strict policy of no refunds. *puts the lid on the box*

Jenny It's okay. I'm working on a computer program to translate the Rumanian liturgy to English based on a random sampling of the text.

Shopkeeper Yecchh. I don't like computers. They give me the willies.

Jenny Well, *takes the box* thank you.

Shopkeeper You're welcome.

She takes the lid off of the box as she slowly walks toward the door.

Shopkeeper By the way... *she looks back* Not that it's any of my business, really, but, uh, what are you planning on conjuring up? If you can decipher the text?

Jenny A present for a friend of mine. *lifts the Orb*

Shopkeeper Really? What are you gonna give him? She looks into the Orb and it begins to glow.

Jenny His soul.

Part 2

Sunnydale High School. Willow and Buffy are chatting as they walk along the sidewalk and then up the steps.

Buffy We'll be in hiding, probably... *inaudible*

Willow *inaudible*

Buffy Siberia.

Xander *jumps up behind them* Well, good morning, ladies. And what did you two do last night?

Willow We had kind of a 'pajama party sleepover with weapons' thing.

Xander Oh. And I don't suppose either of you had the presence of mind to locate a camera to capture the moment.

Willow I have to go. I have a class to teach in about five minutes, and I have to arrive early to glare disapprovingly at the stragglers. *sees Jenny arriving* Oh, darn. She's here. *walks off* Five hours of lesson planning yesterday down the drain...

Buffy *sees Jenny, too* You know what? I'll see you in class. She leaves Xander, jogs up to Jenny and gets in front of her.

Buffy Hey.

Jenny Hi.

Buffy looks at Jenny a moment, then averts her eyes.

Jenny Uh, is there something that... Did you want something?

Buffy Look... I know you feel badly about what happened, and I just wanted to say...

Jenny looks at her expectantly.

Buffy Good. Keep it up.

Jenny *not surprised* Don't worry, I will.

Buffy *holds up her hand* Oh, wait. Um... *looks at her* He misses you. He doesn't say anything, I mean, but I know he does. And I don't want him to be lonely. I don't want anyone to.

Jenny Buffy, you know that if I have a chance to make this up...

Buffy *interrupts* We're... good here. Let's just leave it.

She walks away. Jenny watches her go.

Cut to the lounge. Giles is talking with a couple of students while searching through his briefcase for some flyers.

Giles I put it here somewhere. *finds the flyers* Oh, yes, yes. That's it. *hands the flyers to the students* Could you, um, hang those up? *the students nod* Thank you. *sees Buffy arrive* Buffy. So, uh, so how was your night?

Buffy Sleepless, but no human fatalities.

Cordelia comes up to them.

Giles I-I found a ritual to revoke the invitation to vampires.

Cordelia Oh, thank goodness. I actually had to talk my grandmother into switching cars with me last night.

Giles Um, the-the-the, uh, the ritual's fairly basic, actually. It's just the recitation of a few rhyming couplets, burning of, uh, moss herbs, sprinkling of holy water... *turns down the hall*

Buffy *starts to follow* All stuff I have in my house.

Giles Hanging of crosses...

Cut to Willow's room. She nails a cross next to her French doors and pulls the curtain over to hide it.

Willow I'm gonna have a hard time explaining this to my dad.

Buffy You really think it'll bother him?

Willow Ira Rosenberg's only daughter nailing crucifixes to her bedroom wall? I have to go over to Xander's house just to watch 'A Charlie Brown Christmas' every year.

Buffy I see your point.

They go to her bed. Cordelia is looking at Willow's aquarium.

Willow Although it is worthwhile to see him do the Snoopy Dance. *puts down the hammer*

Cordelia Willow, *faces them, arms crossed* are you aware that there are no fish in your aquarium?

Willow frowns and whines.

Buffy You know, Cordelia, we've already done your car. Call it a night if you want.

Cordelia Right. Thanks. And you know I'd do the same for you if you had a social life.

She picks her coat up from Willow's bed and sees a blank envelope there.

Cordelia Oh. *picks it up* This must be for you.

She hands the envelope to Willow. Willow gives Buffy a worried glance and opens it. When she sees what's in it she hands it to Buffy.

Willow It's for you.

Buffy unfolds the paper and sees a pencil sketch of her mother sleeping.

Buffy Mom.

Cut to Joyce driving home in her Jeep. Cut to a view of her from the lawn nearing the house. As she turns into the driveway the camera pulls back, and Angelus' legs come into view. Joyce sees him as she pulls to a stop and turns off the engine. He approaches her open car window.

Angelus Mrs. Summers, I need to talk to you.

Joyce *gets out with a bag of groceries* You're Angel.

Angelus *pushes the door closed* Did Buffy tell you about us?

Joyce She told me she wants you to leave her alone.

Angelus I-I can't. I can't do that.

Joyce You're scaring her.

Angelus You have to help me. *she starts toward the house* Joyce... *follows her* I need, I need to be with her. Y-you can convince her. You have to convince her.

Joyce Look, *Angelus gets in front of her* I'm telling you to leave her alone.

Angelus You have to talk to her for me, Joyce. Tell her I need her.

Joyce *goes around him* Please, look, I-I just wanna get inside, okay?

She lets go of her bag with one hand and rummages in her purse for her keys, but she can't keep her grip on the bag, and it falls. Several oranges roll out and around. Angelus rights the bag and scrambles to pick a few of the oranges up.

Angelus You don't understand, Joyce. *she finds her keys* I'll die without Buffy. She'll die without me.

Joyce Are you threatening her?

Angelus Please... Why is she doing this to me?

Joyce I'm calling the police now.

She forgets the grocery bag and goes to the door. There she fumbles with her keys, trying to find the right one. Angelus comes up next to her. She finally gets the key in the door.

Angelus I haven't been able to sleep since the night we made love.

Joyce looks up at him in surprise.

Angelus I need her. I know you understand.

Joyce *opens the door* Just leave us alone. *rushes in*
Cut inside. He tries to follow, but comes up against
an invisible barrier. Buffy and Willow come down the
stairs. Willow reads a Latin verse from a book.

Willow 'Hicce verbis consensus rescissus est.'

Translation By these strong unanimous words [An-
gelus' permission to enter] is rescinded.

Buffy *comes up to him* Sorry, Angel. Changed the locks.
slams the door in his face

Cut to Jenny's classroom. She's at her desk working
on the translation program. She takes a sip of coffee
from her mug and sets it back down. She types a few
keystrokes, then stares at the screen. Behind her Giles
appears and stands in the doorway.

Giles Hello.

She startles and looks at him. Quickly she types a few
keystrokes, and the screen changes. She turns back to
him.

Jenny Oh! Hi.

Giles *steps into the room* You're working late.

Jenny Special project.

Giles Oh.

Jenny I spoke to Buffy today.

Giles Oh! Yes? *sits on her desk*

Jenny Mm. *looks away* She said you missed me. *plays*
with a pencil

Giles Well, uh, she's... a meddlesome girl.

Jenny *looks at him* Rupert... Okay, I don't wanna say
anything if I'm wrong, but I may have some news. Now,
I need to finish up here. Could I see you later?

Giles Y-yes, yes. You could stop by my house.

Jenny Okay. *smiles*

Giles *smiles and gets up* Good. *smiles wider, then goes*

Jenny turns her attention back to her computer.

Cut to the tarot shop. The Shopkeeper turns out the
light by the front entrance and heads toward the back.
A woman holding a puppy opens the door and steps in.

Shopkeeper Sorry, honey. *blows out some candles* We're
closed.

He looks up and sees Drusilla standing there.

Shopkeeper *nervous* W... What do you want?

Drusilla *looks at the puppy* Miss Sunshine here tells me
you had a visit today. *stares up* But she worries. *looks*
at the shopkeeper She wants to know what you and the
mean teacher talked about.

Cut to later in Jenny's classroom. She's still working at
her computer. She taps a few keys, then looks up at the
screen. A percent complete window appears over the
Rumanian text, and the bar zips across it.

Jenny Come on, come on...

The bar disappears, and a translation scrolls up next to
the original text.

Jenny That's it! *exhales and smiles* It's gonna work! *saves*
the result This... will work.

She pops out an unlabeled yellow floppy disk and sets
it aside by some books near the edge of her desk. In
the mean time a hardcopy has started to print out. She
wheels her chair over to the printer and looks it over.
She looks up and sees Angelus sitting in a desk at the
back of the class. She gasps and jumps out of her seat.

Jenny Angel... *slowly moves toward the door* How did
you get in here?

Angelus I was invited. The sign in front of the school...
'Formatia trans sincere educatorum.'

Jenny 'Enter all ye who seek knowledge.'

Angelus *giggles and gets up* What can I say? I'm a knowl-
edge seeker. *comes toward her*

Jenny *frightened* Angel, I-I-I've got good news.

Angelus I heard. You went shopping at the local
boogedy-boogedy store. *sees the Orb on her desk and*
picks it up The Orb of Thesulah. If memory serves,
this is supposed to summon a person's soul... from the
ether... store it until it can be transferred.

The Orb begins to glow as he looks into it. He glances
up at Jenny for an instant. She edges away from him.

Angelus You know what I hate most about these things?
Jenny screams as he heaves it into the chalkboard be-
hind her. It shatters into hundreds of pieces and a lot of
dust.

Angelus *smiles* They're so damn fragile. *loses the smile*
Must be that shoddy gypsy craftsmanship, huh?

Jenny has backed into the wall and trembles with fear.
She starts to inch her way toward the door. Angelus
reaches over to the PC and turns the monitor so he can
see it.

Angelus I never cease to be amazed how much the
world has changed in just two and a half centuries.

Jenny has reached the door and tries to open it. It's
locked. He turns the monitor back around.

Angelus It's a miracle to me. You, you put the secrets to
restoring my soul in here...

He shoves the computer off her of desk and onto the
floor. It breaks, and the monitor shatters and sparks
and starts to burn. Angelus tears the printout from the
printer.

Angelus It comes out here. *looks at the paper* 'The Rit-
ual of Restoration.' Wow. This, this brings back memo-
ries.

He starts to tear the printout in half.

Jenny Wait. That's your...

Angelus Oh, my cure? *finishes tearing* No, thanks. Been
there, done that, and deja vu just isn't what it used to

be. *sees the fire* My... Isn't this my lucky day. The computer... *holds the paper over the flames* and the pages. *warms his hands* Looks like I get to kill two birds with one stone.

He crouches over the fire to warm himself more. Jenny starts toward the back door. Angelus looks back up at her sporting his game face.

Angelus And teacher makes three.

She starts to run for it, but Angelus roars and quickly jumps and grabs hold of her.

Jenny No!

He throws her back into the locked door, and it breaks open. She looks back at him, scrambles to her feet and begins to run.

Angelus Oh, good. I need to work up an appetite first.

Cut to the halls. Jenny comes running, opens the door to the lounge area and runs to another set of door to outside, but they are locked. She runs back into the lounge, sees Angelus coming and runs further down the hall. Angelus pulls open the doors and follows her at a fast walk.

Cut outside to another hall exit. Jenny bursts through the door and runs along the colonnade. Angelus is not far behind, and continues after her at a quick pace. Soon he starts to run as well. Jenny keeps running, checking behind her every so often. She reaches the next building and struggles with the door. She looks back and sees Angelus running toward her with an evil

grin on his face. She yanks hard at the door several more times before it opens, and she runs in.

Cut inside the hall. Jenny pulls the door closed behind her and Angelus slams into it. She starts to run down the hall. Angelus has to yank at the door a couple of times before it opens for him, too, and he runs in after her. A cleaning cart is in the hall by the stairs, and Jenny grabs it and pushes it into Angelus. He slams into it and flies over it and onto the floor while she rushes up the steps.

Cut to a view down the stairs from above. Jenny runs up and out of view. Angelus isn't on the floor below anymore. He's nowhere to be seen.

Cut to a landing by a large arched window. Jenny runs up onto it and right into a waiting Angelus. She screams when he grabs hold of her. He chuckles and looks into her face. He puts one hand around behind her head and touches her lips with the fingers of his other. The view out of the window is of the park beyond with the palm trees lit up. A car drives by.

Angelus Sorry, Jenny, this is where you get off.

He takes his fingers from her lips and puts his hand under her chin. In one swift movement he twists her head and snaps her neck. Her body collapses to the floor. He looks up and around, breathing heavily from the running and the excitement.

Angelus Ah... I never get tired of doing that.

Part 3

Buffy's house. Giles steps up to the door and knocks. Willow comes to the door and opens it.

Giles Willow, good evening. *steps in*

Willow Hi. Come on in. *closes the door, hands him the book* Here's the book.

Giles Right. *looks the book over* I guess I should do my apartment tonight. *looks up* The ritual go all right?

Willow Oh, yeah. It went fine. Well, it went fine until Angel showed up and told Buffy's mom that he and Buffy had... *nervously* Well, you know, that they had... you know. You do know, right?

Giles Oh, yes. Yes. Sorry.

Willow *relieved* Oh, good, 'cause I just realized that being a librarian and all, you maybe didn't know.

Giles Oh, thank you. I got it.

Willow You would have been proud of her, though. She totally kept her cool. *smiles*

There is an awkward moment of silence.

Willow Okay, well, I'll tell Buffy you stopped by. *smiles*

Giles *looks up the stairs* Would you, um... Perhaps I should intervene on, on Buffy's behalf w-w-with her mother. Um, maybe... say something?

Willow Sure! Like, what would you say?

Giles *looks up the stairs again* W... Uh...

She reaches for the doorknob and opens it.

Giles You will tell Buffy I dropped by? *goes out*

Willow You bet. *closes the door*

Cut to Buffy's room. She's sitting on her bed. Joyce is pacing, trying to take in what she's hearing.

Buffy That stuff with the Latins and the herbs, uh, he's just real superstitious.

Joyce *sits with her eyes closed* Oh.

Buffy We just thought if...

Joyce Was he the first? *opens her eyes* No, wait. *stands up* I don't wanna know. *paces* I don't think I want to.

Buffy Yeah. He was the first. I mean, the only.

Joyce *stops and looks at her daughter* He's older than you.

Buffy I know.

Joyce Too old, Buffy. And he's obviously not very stable. I really wish... *sits again* I just thought you would show more judgment.

Buffy *looks at her mother* He wasn't like this before.

Joyce Are you in love with him?

Buffy I was.

Joyce Were you careful?

Buffy *looks away* Mom, this is no time...

Joyce *gets up again* Don't 'Mom' me, Buffy. You don't get to get out of this. You had sex with a boy you **didn't** even see fit to tell me you were dating.

Buffy *nods* I made a mistake.

Joyce Yeah, well, don't just say that to shut me up, because I think you really did.

Buffy I know that! *looks up at her* I-I can't tell you everything.

Joyce How about anything? Buffy, you can shut me out of your life, I am pretty much used to that. But don't expect me to ever stop caring about you, because it's never gonna happen. I love you more than anything in the world. *sits next to Buffy on the bed* That would be your cue to, uh, roll your eyes and tell me I'm grossing you out.

Buffy You're not.

Joyce *inhales* Oh, well... *exhales* I guess that was the talk.

Buffy So how'd it go?

They look at each other.

Joyce I don't know. It was my first.

Cut to Giles' apartment. He arrives at his door looking at his keys. He looks up and sees a red rose on the door and can hear the music of the opera "La Boheme", by Puccini, coming from inside. He takes the rose, inhales its aroma and smiles. He opens his door and goes in. Cut inside. Giles pokes his head in.

Giles Hello?

He sees no one there, so he steps in and closes the door behind him.

Giles Jenny?

He puts his briefcase aside and steps over to his coat rack.

Giles It's me!

He takes off his coat and hangs it up. He looks around again and sees a chilled bottle of champagne and two long-stemmed glasses on his desk. On top of the crystal ice bucket is a folded piece of paper leaning against the bottle. He sets down his keys and the rose and takes the note. He **unfolds it and on it is one word** Upstairs. He smiles and looks up toward the loft. He takes off his glasses and sets them and the paper down. He runs his fingers through his hair, takes the bottle, looks at it, takes the two glasses and starts up the stairs. The opera music gets louder as he nears the loft. The camera follows his footsteps as he climbs the stairs. There is a rose on each step. When he reaches the top he is smiling. He sees Jenny on the bed, but she isn't moving, and his smile quickly fades. The opera reaches a crescendo as

he drops the bottle and glasses, and they shatter on the floor. He continues to look at Jenny's body. Her dead eyes stare back at him.

Cut to later. Giles is leaning on the wall by his front door staring blankly into space. The coroners take Jenny's body away. A police officer approaches him.

Officer Mr. Giles, I need to ask you to come with us. Just to answer a few questions.

Giles *still staring blankly* Of course. Yes. Procedure. *looks at the officer* I need to make a phone call... if that's all right.

The officer looks over at the phone and back at him, giving him tacit permission.

Giles *whispers* Yes. *goes to the phone*

Cut to Buffy's house. Angelus is looking into the dining room through the window from the porch. Buffy and Willow walk through it and into the living room.

Angelus *narrates* Passion is the source of our finest moments. The joy of love... the clarity of hatred... and the ecstasy of grief.

The telephone rings, and Buffy runs back into the dining room to get it. She picks it up from the phone stand and turns so Angelus can see her face.

Buffy Hello. Giles, hey! We did the, the thing. It worked. What?

As she listens to Giles her expression becomes increasingly blank. She lowers the phone from her ear. Willow is there now, too, and takes the phone from Buffy.

Willow Giles?

Buffy leans against the wall and slides down against it into a crouch.

Willow What? No! *puts the phone down* No! *begins to cry uncontrollably* Noooo!

Angelus gloats as he looks into the window. Joyce comes into the dining room when she hears the crying and holds Willow. Buffy looks off into space, then finally lowers her head onto her knees. Angelus smiles and leaves.

Cut to later. Cordelia and Xander drive up to Buffy and Willow, who are waiting for them. Xander opens the passenger door and gets out.

Buffy Where's Giles?

Xander No luck. By the time we got to the station, *closes the door* the cops said he'd already left. *Cordelia closes her door* I guess they just wanted to ask him some questions.

Buffy Cordelia, will you drive us to Giles' house?

Cordelia Of course.

Willow But don't you think he wants to be left alone?

Buffy I'm not worrying about what he wants. I'm worried about what he's gonna do.

They all get into the car.

Cut to Giles' apartment. The camera sweeps down the stairs. The roses have all been trampled and broken. The camera turns the corner of the staircase and sweeps across the area below. Giles' weapons chest is open and almost empty. He walks across the camera's path, drawing a sword. The camera continues around the room, over to his old Victrola, where the opera

record has played out but is still spinning. The camera pulls back past the desk where Giles has a large bag sitting open with various weapons stashed inside. He adds a small can of gasoline, grabs the bag and heads out of the apartment. The camera closes in on the desk and pans down to a pencil sketch of Jenny lying dead on the bed.

Part 4

Giles' apartment. Xander pushes the door open. A piece of yellow crime scene tape is stretched across the doorway.

Xander Hello? Giles?

He ducks under the tape and comes in. Willow and the others follow. Xander goes over to the desk and looks around.

Xander I guess Giles had a big night planned tonight.

Buffy *picks up the sketch of Jenny* Giles didn't set this up. Angel did. *hands Xander the sketch* This is the wrapping for the gift. *heads upstairs*

Xander Oh, man. *exhales* Poor Giles.

Willow finds the nearly empty weapons chest.

Willow Look, all his weapons are gone.

Cordelia But I thought he kept his weapons at the library.

Xander No, those are his, uh, everyday weapons. These were his good weapons. The ones he, uh, breaks out when company comes to visit.

Buffy comes back downstairs and stops on the corner landing.

Willow So he's not here.

Cordelia Well, then where is he?

Buffy He'll go to wherever Angel is.

Xander turns to face the girls.

Willow That means the factory, right?

Cordelia So Giles is gonna try to kill Angel then?

Xander Well, it's about time somebody did.

Willow Xander!

Xander I'm sorry, but let's not forget that I hated Angel long before you guys jumped on the bandwagon. So I think I deserve a little something for not saying 'I told you so' long before now. And if Giles wants to go after the, uh, *looks up at Buffy* fiend that murdered his girlfriend, I say, 'Faster, Pussycat! Kill! Kill!' *looks back at Willow and Cordelia*

Buffy You're right.

Willow and Cordelia look up at Buffy.

Xander Thank you.

Buffy *takes the rest of the steps down* There's only one thing wrong with Giles' little revenge scenario.

Xander And what's that?

Buffy It's gonna get him killed.

Cut to Spike's warehouse. Angelus is being lectured.

Spike Are you insane?! We're supposed to kill the bitch, not leave gag gifts in the friends' beds.

Drusilla *cuddles her puppy* But, Spike, the bad teacher was going to restore Angel's soul.

Spike What if she did? If you ask me, I find myself preferring the old Buffy-whipped Angelus. This new, improved one is not playing with a full sack. *gets a look from Angelus* I love a good slaughter as much as the next bloke, but his little pranks will only leave us with one incredibly brassed-off Slayer!

Angelus Don't worry, roller boy. I've got everything under control.

A Molotov cocktail swooshes in and bursts on the table, setting it ablaze. Drusilla runs away with Spike wheeling right behind her. They stop out of reach of the flames. Angelus cuts across at the end of the table and gets hit in the shoulder with a crossbow bolt. He grabs it to pull it out while looking to see who his attacker is. Giles walks toward him with a baseball bat. Angelus pulls the bolt out and throws it aside. Giles puts the end of the bat into the flames, and it catches fire. He swings it and hits Angelus in the face, then again on the return swing. Angelus staggers and bends down.

Angelus Jeez, whatever happened to wooden stakes?

Giles whales on Angelus' back several times. Drusilla makes a move to intervene, but is held back by Spike.

Spike Uh-uh. No fair going into the ring unless he tags you first.

Angelus stands back up, but Giles swings the bat into his face twice again, making him fall once more. He continues beating on him, making Angelus collapse all the way to the floor. Angelus tries to get up, but Giles swings into his jaw from underneath. He wields the still burning bat over his head, but as he brings it down Angelus catches it, and they begin to struggle. Angelus quickly gains the upper hand, and takes Giles by the throat, lifting him off of his feet. He drops the bat.

Angelus All right. You've had your fun. But you know what it's time for now?

He gets kicked in the back by Buffy and lets Giles fall to the floor. She pulls him back and slams him into the spiral staircase.

Buffy My fun.

She kicks him in the face and then shoves him onto the floor. Drusilla quickly wheels Spike away. Buffy kicks Angelus in the face again as he tries to get up, and then lunges at him. He grabs her, flips her over and tries to get away up the stairs. Buffy gets back to her feet fast with Giles' dropped baseball bat in hand and pushes it between the stair railings to trip Angelus up. He falls and she grabs one of his legs. He kicks out at her with it and knocks her off of him and onto the floor. He scrambles up the stairs. Buffy gets up quickly. She sees a stack of crates, runs up it to the catwalk above, and meets Angelus there. He swings at her, but she ducks and kicks him in the back of the knee, making him collapse onto the railing. She grabs a loop of rope, throws it around his neck and yanks him back and forth between the railings several times, then kicks him in the chest, making him stagger back and fall onto his butt. He gets up fast, but she grabs onto a pipe above her head and swings with both feet into his chest again, making him fly back into a barrel and some ducting. She waits on the catwalk for him to come at her again, ready to fight. He charges, and she takes him and diverts him past her and onto the catwalk grating, where he lands with his head against one of the vertical railing bars. She kicks his face, and follows up with several punches and another kick. He starts to laugh as she grabs him by the coat and bangs his head into the railing a couple of times.

Angelus Are you gonna let your old man just burn?

She looks down and sees the flames getting higher and nearer to Giles. Angelus takes advantage of the distraction and grabs her legs, lifts her and throws her over the railing. She manages to control her fall and land on her feet near Giles. Angelus takes off down the catwalk and out of the building. Buffy wakes Giles and gets him to his feet, and she supports him as they make their way from the building also. Cut outside. They both come out coughing from the smoke. He pushes her away from him.

Giles Why did you come here?! This wasn't your fight! She punches him in the jaw, and he spins and falls to the pavement.

Buffy Are you trying to get yourself killed?!

She begins to cry and crouches down to hug him. He

cries and hugs her back.

Buffy You can't leave me. I can't do this alone.

Cut to Giles' apartment building. Cut to his door, still with the crime scene tape across it.

Angelus narrates It hurts sometimes more than we can bear.

Giles tears the tape from his doorway and just stares at it for several seconds.

Angelus narrates If we could live without passion, maybe we'd know some kind of peace. But we would be hollow.

Giles enters his apartment.

Angelus narrates Empty rooms, shuttered and dank...

Cut to the cemetery. The camera pans across a small pond.

Angelus narrates Without passion, we'd be truly dead.

The camera pans past Jenny's gravestone. Giles kneels down and lays some flowers on her grave. He looks at her name on the headstone for a moment before standing back up. Buffy is there next to him.

Giles In my years as... Watcher... I've buried... too many people. But Jenny was the first I've loved.

Buffy looks up at him I'm sorry. I'm sorry I couldn't kill him for you... *looks down at the grave* for her... when I had the chance.

Cut to a shot of the gravestone. It reads just 'Jennifer Calendar'.

Buffy I wasn't ready.

Cut to Jenny's classroom. The students all wait at their desks for the teacher to arrive. Willow walks in and stands at the front of the room.

Buffy voiceover But I think I finally am.

Willow Hi. Principal Snyder asked me to fill in for Ms. Calendar... u- until the new computer science teacher arrives. So I'm just gonna stick to the lesson plan she left.

She walks around to the front of the desk and looks over the books and things that are there.

Buffy narrates I can't hold on to the past anymore. Angel has gone. Nothing's ever gonna bring him back.

Willow puts down her own books, and in the process nudges a few books aside a little. As a result the yellow disk that Jenny had set next to the books gets pushed off of the edge. It falls between the desk and the small filing cabinet next to it. It hits the floor and spins around a few times before coming to rest leaning against the side of the cabinet.

Killed by Death

Written by Rob Des Hotel & Dean Batali **Directed by** Deran Sarafian **Transcribed by** AleXander Thompson
Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Killed by Death". It also includes descriptions of the settings, ac-

tion scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.07

This episode was originally broadcast on March 3, 1998.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

The cemetery. The camera closes in on the top of the perimeter wall. A pair of hands hook over the top, and Buffy pulls herself up. She coughs while she pulls her legs over. She jumps down the other side. When she hits the ground she can't keep her balance, and has to use her hands to keep from toppling over. She breathes heavily through her mouth because her nose is stuffed up. Every now and then she sniffles. She pulls a stake out of her jacket. She puts her hand on her forehead and moans as she stands up. Slowly she starts to make her way across the graveyard.

Cut to in front of her. The camera follows her as she walks, still sniffing and rubbing her nose. She senses something and tries to concentrate while she slowly approaches a small mausoleum. She raises her stake and jumps around the corner, swinging it to strike at whatever's there. Xander screams and reflexively jumps back, holding on tightly to his own stake. Cordelia lets out a high-pitched scream behind him. Willow is there, too, and the girls both reflexively hold up crosses at Buffy.

Buffy Non-vampire. Plus two.

Willow *sternly as she puts her cross away* Hi.

They all step out into the open.

Xander Man, Buffy! My whole life just flashed before my eyes! *glances over at Willow* I gotta get me a life!

Buffy What are you doing here?

Willow What are **you** doing here?

Buffy Well, I'm patrolling!

Willow *concerned* Buffy, you're sick.

Buffy No, I feel fine. I mean, I'm... the world's spinning a little bit, but I like it, it's kinda like a ride.

Cordelia Half the school's out with this flu. It's a serious

deal, Buffy. We're all concerned about how gross you look.

Buffy *with a hint of sarcasm* I'm touched. Really. But I have work to do.

Willow Buffy, come on, one night of rest is not gonna kill you.

Buffy No, but it might kill somebody else.

Xander *points at her with his stake* You mean Angel might. *Buffy turns away* Buffy, this is not the time to challenge Angel for the ultimate fighting championship. *gestures with his stake* He's at full strength, you're only half a Slayer.

Buffy Yeah, but I'm still the Slayer. And as long as I am, Angel's not gonna kill anybody else.

Angelus *behind her* Aw, c'mon. *she turns to face him* Just one more.

He attacks, and the girls scream. He runs right past Buffy straight for Cordelia and tackles her to the ground. Buffy grabs him by the back of his coat and pulls him off of her. She turns him around, takes him by the coat collar and swings at him with her stake. He blocks her with his arm, grabs hers and makes her drop the stake.

Angelus Not feeling well, lover?

Buffy looks up at him and punches him in the jaw. He glares back at her and tries to kick her, but she grabs his foot and shoves his leg up, making him fall hard onto his back.

Buffy That helps.

Angelus scrambles to all fours. She comes at him from behind and tries to kick him, but he kicks out with his leg into her chest, and she staggers back a ways until she regains her balance. He gets up and comes toward her. She takes a couple of swings at him, but he evades them easily. He blocks a third, grabs her arm and takes her by the throat.

Angelus You know, you being off your game's kinda takin' the fun out of all this.

He punches her in the face, and she stumbles backward again.

Angelus Nope, still fun!

He punches her in the gut, then grabs her by the neck and shoves her around and into a corner column of the small mausoleum. She is dazed and tries to regain her balance, but doesn't get a chance because Angelus wastes no time punching her in the face and knocking her flat on her back. He gets on top of her and pins her arms down.

Angelus Uh-oh. This does **not** look good for our heroine.

He starts to bend down to bite her, but just then Willow throws Xander's jacket over Angelus' head. As she backs away, Xander grabs his head under the jacket,

punches him and knees him twice in the face. Angelus falls over onto his back. Willow and Cordelia pull out their crosses and hold them out at him as he gets up, and he has to back off.

Xander Take a walk, overbite.

Buffy gets to her feet. Angelus slowly backs away.

Angelus We'll have to do this again sometime.

He turns and walks off. Buffy just watches him go.

Xander Buffy, are you okay?

Buffy *puts her hand to her forehead* I told you guys to leave, I... *getting dizzy* I... Oh...

She falls to the ground unconscious.

Xander Buffy!

Willow and Cordelia turn to look.

Willow Buffy?

Xander kneels next to her and looks at the fallen Slayer.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part 1

The Sunnydale Hospital Emergency Room. The camera pans from an empty gurney past the admissions desk and over to the entrance. Xander rushes in with Buffy in his arms. Willow and Cordelia are right behind him.

Xander We need help!

Willow Somebody, please, now!

Intern *approaches them* What happened?

They all speak at once.

Xander She fell.

Willow The flu.

Cordelia She fainted.

A nurse brings over the gurney.

Xander The flu, fainted and fell. She's sick, make it better!

Intern *pulls the gurney up* It's gonna be okay. Let's get her up.

Xander lays Buffy out on the gurney. The intern takes out his pocket light and checks Buffy's eyes for a response. The nurse takes notes while he speaks as they start to wheel her into the emergency room. They all follow.

Intern Patient's unconscious... Pupils are unequal and unresponsive.

Cordelia What does that mean?

Willow Is she gonna be okay?

Intern Please, you gotta give us some room.

Dr. Wilkinson *arrives* What do we have?

Intern High-grade fever, possible fractures.

Dr. Wilkinson Get her into Trauma 1, give her a CBC, Chem 7, type and screen.

Intern Right.

The Intern and nurse take her through the doors to the emergency room beyond. They all try to follow, but Dr.

Wilkinson blocks their way.

Dr. Wilkinson I'm sorry, you can't go any further.

Xander Someone should be with her!

Dr. Wilkinson I'm sorry! You can't go any further.

She backs in and closes the door in their faces. They look through windows for a couple of seconds. Willow reacts first.

Willow I'll call Giles, tell him what happened. *to Cordelia* You call Buffy's mom, tell her, n-not what happened, just get her here.

The two of them go to find the phones. Xander keeps looking in through the emergency room door, where he can see the doctor and intern still working on Buffy. He looks away as they wheel Buffy into Trauma 1.

Cut to later. Cordelia, Xander and Willow are sitting on a row of chairs in the waiting room with worried looks on their faces. The camera pans over to the door where Giles is also waiting and nervously cleaning his glasses. The camera continues to pan over to the elevator. The door opens and Joyce comes out. She sees them sitting there.

Joyce Where is she?

They all get up. Giles comes over also.

Giles She's still in the emergency room.

Joyce I wanna see her. *starts out of the waiting room*

Cordelia They won't let us in there.

Joyce stops and looks back at her. Just then Dr. Wilkinson comes to the door.

Dr. Wilkinson Mrs. Summers?

Joyce *faces her* Yes?

Dr. Wilkinson I'm Dr. Wilkinson.

Joyce Is Buffy okay?

Dr. Wilkinson We were able to stabilize and...

Joyce *interrupts insistently* Is she okay?

Dr. Wilkinson *reassuringly* She's going to be fine.

Joyce *with relief* Thank you. *puts her hand to her face*

Xander Good. Good. *rubs his hands* That's good.

Dr. Wilkinson I wanna keep her here a few days, though. She still has some healing to do.

Giles and Joyce look at her anxiously.

Cut to a hall upstairs near Buffy's assigned hospital room. They are all waiting for her to be brought up. When they see her coming they all approach the bed. She has an IV in her right hand. Her left forearm is wrapped in an elastic bandage.

Joyce Buffy? *reaches the bed* Hi, sweetheart.

They all accompany her toward her room.

Xander Hey, Buffy, we're all here.

Buffy *groggy* Hey. Here we are. It's all of we. Are we taking me home? *tries to get up*

Dr. Wilkinson *pushes her back* No. Buffy, you need to lie down, honey.

Buffy *groggy* Yeah? Lie at home. My bed is better than any bed that's... not my bed.

Dr. Wilkinson *looks at Joyce* She's still a little out of it.

Joyce nods back.

Buffy *to Xander* Shhh! *points at him* Hospital zone. No singing.

Dr. Wilkinson She'll feel better after *Buffy looks at her* she's been here a while.

Buffy No! *tries to get up again* Lemme go. Look, I wanna go.

The orderly pushing the bed, two nurses and Dr. Wilkinson struggle to get her to lie back down. Buffy puts up a fight.

Willow Buffy, what's wrong?

Buffy No! No! Let me go!

Cordelia I think she wants to go.

They manage to get her pushed back down on the bed.

Buffy No, don't do that! Stop it!

Dr. Wilkinson Hold her steady!

Buffy *delirious* Giles, tell them!

Orderly I got her.

Buffy The vampires! I need to kill the vampires!

Dr. Wilkinson This'll help you relax.

She puts a needle against Buffy's inside elbow and injects her with a sedative. Xander throws Giles a concerned look. Cordelia cringes and looks away.

Buffy Ow! *winces in pain* No!

When the doctor pulls the needle back out she lies back and breathes heavily.

Xander It's gotta be the fever.

Willow Yeah, it made her delusional.

Buffy *to Giles insistently* They're out there!

Giles *smiling reassuringly* Yes, uh, well, we'll, uh, we'll get those, uh, vampires later. *laughs lightly, looks at Joyce* I hear it's best t-to play along. *keeps smiling* The sedative takes effect and Buffy begins to relax. One of the nurses checks her IV. Her mother leans in and strokes her hair.

Joyce Honey, listen...

Buffy I wanna go home.

Joyce It's gonna be okay. I promise.

They start to wheel her away again.

Buffy Please don't make me stay here...

Joyce I promise.

They all follow as Buffy is taken to her room. They wait outside. The door closes and Xander looks in through the narrow window. After a moment he looks over at Giles.

Xander That was a new experience. I'm not used to seeing Buffy scared like that.

Joyce Yeah, she just **hates** hospitals. Ever since she was a little girl.

Willow What happened?

Joyce When she was eight her cousin Celia died in a hospital. Buffy was alone with her at the time.

Cordelia Yuk!

Joyce Yeah, they were very close.

Willow Wow, and she was eight?

Joyce *looking in at Buffy* Well, it looks like she's asleep. I should go call her father. *heads toward the nurse's station*

Giles *accompanies her* Um, I-I think there's a, a phone... The camera follows them.

Joyce Thank you for coming. I-I **really** appreciate the way you look out for her.

Giles Oh...

Joyce All of you.

Giles Well, we're, uh, we're very fond of her. *they stop at the nurse's station* The, uh, the telephone. *starts away*

Joyce I, I... *stops him* I hope I'm not out of line, but... I-I-I wanted to say how sorry I am about, uh, that teacher, Ms. Calendar. Buffy said you were close.

Giles *nods slightly* Oh, uh... *looks down* Thank you. *looks up*

Joyce *exhales* Buffy's been so down since it happened. I mean, she never gets sick.

Giles *looks down* Well, I'm sure she'll be, uh... *looks up, smiles reassuringly* She'll be fine.

Joyce I'm sorry, I, I babble when I'm nervous, I just wanted to... Well, if, if you need anything...

Giles *nods* Thank you. *quietly* Thank you. *walks off*

Joyce turns to the nurse to ask to use the phone.

Cut to outside Buffy's door.

Xander Do you think she's gonna be okay in here?

Cordelia *pacing* I don't know, Lysette got her nose done here, and she came in looking for the Gwyneth Paltrow, and it looked more like the Mr. Potatohead.

She steps over to the door and looks into Buffy's room.

Xander Cordy...

Willow Buffy's not here for cosmetic surgery.

Cordelia No, but while she's in here, she might as well get that thing done.

Willow gives Xander a look.

Cordelia You know, that thing on her face? *faces them* You know that thing.

Willow *to Xander* Do you think Angel will attack Buffy in here?

Xander He can come in, it's a public building.

Willow *worried* That's true.

Cordelia Am I the only one that's noticed that thing?

Cut to the hospital at night. Cut to Buffy's room. She stirs in her bed. The clock on the nightstand changes to read 2:27am. Cut to her IV slowly dripping in. The LED on the heart monitor next to the IV blinks steadily. The camera pans down from it to Buffy's face. She takes a deep breath as she wakes up. She blinks her eyes several times before looking over at the door. It's standing open, and a young boy is there just silently staring in at her. A few moments later he starts away down the hall. She continues to look out the door, and a man in a black suit and hat walks by.

Cut to a closeup of the man. He glances into Buffy's room as he walks by. She sees his face. It's all disfigured, his nose is long and bent down to a point, his teeth are all long fangs, and his fingers are grossly elongated. He looks back after the boy and continues to follow him out of view. Buffy raises her head in disbelief. She pushes her hair back with her bandaged hand and slowly sits up. She gets out of bed and steadies herself to a stand. She ties her robe closed as she walks out of the room.

Cut to the hall. It's deserted except for the janitor mopping the floor behind her. As she walks she has a flashback to her youth, and the corridor is suddenly brightly lit. Little Buffy comes walking down the bright but deserted hall. The camera closes in on her face. Cut to her view of a cart of surgical instruments. Cut to her again, looking around nervously as she walks. Cut to a shot from behind her as she approaches Celia's room. Sunlight is pouring brightly from the door. She edges up to it and goes in.

Cut to inside the room. Little Buffy comes in and slowly goes over to the curtain pulled around Celia's bed.

Cut to Buffy in her hospital bed. The clock on the nightstand changes to read 2:27am. She stirs and wakes from her dream. Her door is open, but there's no one there. She pushes her hair back with her bandaged hand and slowly sits up. She feels the IV in the back of her right

hand and looks at it. She pulls the tape off and the needle out. She covers her face with both hands, draws them back through her hair and starts to get out of bed. Cut to her walking down the hall, holding her robe closed with her hands. It's deserted except for the janitor mopping the floor behind her. She hears coughing coming from a room and looks in. A woman is tucking in an old man and comforting him.

Woman You'll be fine. Is that better?

She continues down the hall and looks into the next room. An old woman is sitting on the edge of the bed with her face in her hands. She continues, hears the old woman cough and lets out a little cough of her own. She passes another doorway and walks past the camera. A security guard looks out from the doorway and watches her go.

Cut to another part of the hall near the children's ward. Buffy comes walking toward the door as two orderlies wheel a child covered with a sheet out of the ward.

Orderly Man, I hate it when you lose the young ones.

They go down the hall past Buffy. She looks at the gurney as they go by. She turns back to the children's ward door and slowly approaches it. She can hear Dr. Wilkinson and Dr. Backer arguing inside in hushed tones, so she doesn't go in.

Dr. Wilkinson I'm just saying, step back on the dosage until we can analyze the results.

Dr. Backer There isn't time. I should think that would be clear to you by now.

Buffy peeks into the room and sees them arguing.

Dr. Wilkinson The normal course of treatment...

Dr. Backer *interrupts* They **aren't** responding to the normal course of treatment. *gestures to the kids* Look, they're getting worse.

Dr. Wilkinson Raising their temperatures is poten...

Dr. Backer *interrupts* Dr. Wilkinson! I have the consent of the parents.

Dr. Wilkinson They're desperate! They don't understand what you're...

Dr. Backer *interrupts* You know what, if-if you have a problem with my methods, just take it up with the board.

Dr. Wilkinson I have!

Buffy has heard enough, and turns away to go. There in front of her is the little boy she saw in her dream and a little girl. She stops and they look at each other.

Ryan He comes at night. The grownups don't see him. He was with Tina. He'll come back for us.

Buffy Who?

Ryan Death.

Buffy looks back and forth between the two kids in disbelief.

Part 2

Sunnydale General. Xander is sitting on a chair outside the waiting room across from the nurses' station that is down the hall from Buffy's room. There are two police officers talking to a security guard. Nurses and orderlies are going about their tasks. Angelus comes walking out of the waiting room from the elevator bearing some white flowers and whistling a few bars of "Ode to Joy" from Beethoven's 9th symphony. Xander hears him and looks to see who's coming. When he sees Angelus he quickly gets up and faces him down in the hall.

Xander Visiting hours are over.

Angelus Well, I'm pretty much family.

Xander *trying hard to stay cool* Yeah. Why don't you come back during the day? Oh, gee, no, I guess you can't.

Angelus *threateningly* If I decide to walk into Buffy's room, do you think for one microsecond that you could stop me?

Xander Maybe not. Maybe that security guard couldn't either. Or those cops... or the orderlies... But I'm kinda curious to find out. You game?

Angelus *pauses* Buffy's White Knight. You still love her. *leans in close* It must just eat you up that I got there first.

Xander *fighting his nervousness* You're gonna die. And I'm gonna be there.

Angelus slaps the flowers against Xander's chest.

Angelus Tell her I stopped by.

He gives Xander one final look and then goes back through the waiting room to the elevator. Xander shudders, covers his mouth and lets out a breath of relief.

Cut to a flashback of Little Buffy and Celia. Celia is on the bedroom floor covered with pillows and writhing around, pretending to be trapped under a pile of snow and ice.

Celia Help me, help! Avalanche! Help! Help! I'm trapped! Avalanche! Help! Help!

Little Buffy comes in through the door and stops in a heroic stance with her hands on her hips.

Little Buffy Power Girl to the rescue!

She kneels down and starts to heave off the pillows as though they're huge, heavy blocks of ice and snow and thuds them aside.

Celia Help me! Help! Help! Please, help!

Buffy gets the last pillows off of Celia's face, and she sits up.

Celia You saved me! Thank you, Power Girl!

The two girls embrace.

Little Buffy You're safe now.

Cut to a flashback of Little Buffy coming into Celia's hospital room. She slowly approaches the curtain around the bed and opens it enough to look in at her

cousin. She steps through. Celia is lying there peacefully asleep.

Cut to Buffy in her hospital bed. She wakes with a start.

Dr. Wilkinson *coming in* Good morning.

Buffy moans, rubs her eyes and sits up.

Buffy Could've fooled me.

Dr. Wilkinson How are you feeling? Looks like your fever's gone down.

Buffy Well, good! Thanks for having me. Let's try and keep in touch. *tries to get out of bed*

Dr. Wilkinson *pushes her back* Not so fast. *inspects Buffy's bandaged arm* Hmm.

Buffy Good 'hmm' or bad 'hmm'?

Dr. Wilkinson Swelling's... gone! *looks up* Does this hurt?

Buffy Nope.

Dr. Wilkinson Amazing. *gets the chart*

Buffy Well, then I should probably go, right? *tries to go again*

Dr. Wilkinson *stops her again* No. Soon. We have to make sure that fever is gone. That's a strong virus you have. Maybe not as strong as you, but...

Buffy I-is that the same virus the kids have?

Before Dr. Wilkinson can answer there's a knock on the door.

Giles May we come in?

Dr. Wilkinson Please! *they all come in* Maybe you can keep our patient from bolting. *to Buffy, sternly* Rest! Hmm? *leaves*

Xander *presenting five balloons* Flowers for milady.

Buffy *looks up at them* I think they call those balloons.

Xander *looks up* Yeah, stick 'em in water, maybe they'll grow.

Willow Not to be outdone... *sets school books on the bed*

Buffy Homework!

Willow It's my way of saying, 'get well soon'.

Buffy You know, chocolate says that even better.

Willow I did all your assignments. All you have to do is sign your name.

Giles munches on a grape.

Buffy Chocolate means **nothing** to me.

Willow steps back and looks up at Cordelia.

Cordelia Nobody told me I was supposed to bring a gift. *looks at Giles* I was out of the loop on gifts.

Giles It's, it's tradition among, um... people. Um... *walks up to the bed* Grapes. *sets down the bag* Well, did you, uh, pass the night well enough?

A nurse comes into the room and walks around the bed.

Buffy Not really. Something happened I thought you...

The nurse checks Buffy's IV.

Buffy You know what? Let's take a walk.

Cut to outside the hospital main entrance. The camera pans over to Willow pushing Buffy along in a wheelchair while the others walk alongside.

Buffy Now, this part I could get used to.

Willow Do you want me to go real fast? *gets a look from Giles* Not that I would.

Giles We were discussing, um, stuff.

Buffy Yes, stuff. Um, you know, a girl died here last night.

Willow How?

Buffy Well, the flu.

Xander Flu doesn't exactly sound monsterrific.

Buffy I know. But there's this Dr. Backer, and he's been giving them these experimental treatments. They stop by a bench and Giles sits.

Buffy I-I'm not sure what he's up to, but he's a little creepy. A-and then there was this kid, Ryan. He said he saw something.

Giles Saw what?

Buffy Death.

Cordelia Death?

Willow **The** Death? As in, 'it is your time'?

Giles Buffy, a-a-a frightened child...

Buffy Yeah, but I thought I saw something. I'm not sure, I was really out of it, but...

Cordelia But you do know that you saw death.

Willow Did it have an hourglass?

Xander Ooo, if he asks you to play chess, don't even do it. The guy's, like, a whiz.

Buffy Maybe it wasn't death. Maybe it was something else.

Cordelia So this isn't about you being afraid of hospitals 'cause your friend died and you wanna conjure up a monster that you can fight so you can save everybody and not feel so helpless?

Giles Cordelia, have you actually ever heard of tact?

Cordelia Tact is just not saying true stuff. I'll pass.

Willow Your mom did tell us about your cousin.

Cordelia sits also.

Buffy This has nothing to do with that. This little boy Ryan is afraid of something, something real. As long as I'm forced to stay here, I'm gonna find out what.

Xander So, is this the part where we say, what can we do to help?

Cut to the hospital records room after hours that evening. The place is deserted. Cordelia and Xander quietly come in.

Cordelia *whispers* You had to ask that, didn't you?

They walk over to a records cabinet.

Xander *quietly* Pft! It'll be cake. Just gotta figure out what killed this little girl Tina, we'll be out. Five minutes tops. *opens a cabinet door*

Cordelia *leans against the wall* This is what happens when you're compassionate towards sick people. They take advantage of you.

Xander *gives Cordelia a look* Uh-huh. Buffy almost died just to put you out.

Cordelia I didn't wanna be the first one to say it.

He finds nothing and points over to the cabinet to his right.

Xander You there. *points to his left* Me here.

Cordelia Right.

He goes on the next one around the corner. She reluctantly goes back to the one on the other side of the door where they came in. She opens the cabinet and looks in. Suddenly a security guard appears next to her, and she jumps and gasps.

Guard What are you doing here?

She gives him a worried smile and lets out a breath.

Cut to the library. Willow and Giles come walking in.

Willow So, where do we start?

Giles Hmm? Oh, I don't know. Maybe look into the history of the hospital, bizarre incidents, that sort of thing.

Willow I'm sensing a little less than full committal here. They stop by the counter.

Giles Oh, I-I suppose so. Cordelia may be *inhales* homerically insensitive, but she may also be right. Death and disease are, are things, possibly the **only** things that, that Buffy cannot fight. It's only natural for her to try to create a-a defeatable opponent. Especially now, after... after Jenny.

Willow *gives Giles a sad look* That's true. But on the 'we live on the Hellmouth' side, these kids may have seen a monster.

Giles *starts toward the stacks* What, a monster that grown-ups can't see? Doesn't ring a bell. *pauses* Unless...

Willow *sits on the table* Unless?

Giles Well, sometimes small children **do** see something we adults **don't** us. Our true selves, our, our... our hidden faces.

Willow So the kids might be afraid of a regular person? *realizes* Like the weird doctor!

Giles Stanley Backer was his name, no?

Willow Let's look him up. *goes to get her laptop*

Cut back to the hospital records room. Cordelia has the guard wrapped around her finger. She smiles sweetly at him and pretends to be interested as he leans against the wall and talks.

Guard You know, most people think that security guards are just guys that failed the police exam. But that's not me. This is my career.

Cordelia Stereotypes are so unfair.

Guard I did take the fireman's exam, though. I didn't do so good.

Cordelia Oh, well, you know, I think that security guards *plays with his badge* are **way** sexier than firemen. They're all sooty.

Guard Well, this is where all the action is anyhow. I'm all the time restraining people.

Cut to Xander behind the other storage cabinets. He's found the file he wants and is waiting and listening for an opportunity to get out.

Cordelia Mm, how thrilling. *cut to her* Do you ever get scared?

Guard 'Fear is for the weak.' That's my motto. Either that, or 'Live in the now.' I haven't decided yet.

Cordelia I bet you see a lot of tragedy. You know, like that little girl?

Guard Oh, one of Dr. Backer's patients. Dr. Backer's a great man. He understands...

Cut to Xander. He cringes at what he's hearing and thuds lightly back into the cabinet.

Guard ...the real truth about children.

Cordelia *cut to her* What's that?

Guard Sometimes they die.

Cordelia closes her eyes. Xander makes another bumping noise, this time loud enough that the security guard hears it.

Guard What was that? *draws his baton*

Cordelia Uh, you know, I didn't hear anything. *tries to get his attention* You know, you have the most... perfect nose I've ever seen.

He turns to face her. She giggles and reaches up her finger to run it over his forehead and down the length of his nose. Behind the guard Xander steps over to the door, quietly opens it and goes out.

Cordelia You must work out.

Guard *gives her a little growl* Yeah.

Cordelia *smiles and nods her head* Mm-hm.

Cut to the hall outside the records room. Xander waits around the corner for Cordelia. She walks around it and lets out a surprised gasp when she runs into him there.

Xander Could you make just a little more with the touchy-gropey?

Cordelia Jealous?

Xander Of Rogaine boy? *chuckles* I don't think so. *hands her the file* Here, take this to Giles, okay?

Cordelia What about you?

Xander I'm gonna stay here.

Cordelia Oh, right. Your obsession with protecting Buffy. Have I told you how attractive that's not?

Xander Cordelia, someone's gotta watch her back.

Cordelia Yeah, well, I've seen you watch her back.

Xander What is that supposed to mean?

Cordelia Well, I was using the phrase 'watch her back' as a euphemism for 'looking at her butt.' You know, sort of a pun.

Xander Oh! Right. *gets the insult* Hey!

Cordelia Well, you do.

Xander Jealous?

Cordelia Fine. Watch **my** back.

She walks past him and down the hall. He turns around and watches her go. He tilts his head to check out her butt, but quickly straightens back up again.

Cut to the hall outside the children's ward. Buffy comes along, stops by the door and looks into the room. Ryan is sitting at a table drawing a picture with crayons. Buffy walks over to him.

Buffy Hey. Remember me?

Ryan You shouldn't be here.

Buffy Why not?

Ryan Contagious.

Buffy Nah. I already got what you got.

She sits down by the table. Ryan goes back to drawing his picture.

Buffy Oh, what, you think because I'm a grown-up? Believe me, I'm not that grown up.

She takes a look at his picture. It's of the monster that he's seen coming after the other kids. Buffy briefly flashes back to when she saw it walk past her door in her dream.

Ryan He'll come again tonight.

Buffy Ryan, listen to me. *he looks at her* I'm not gonna let this thing hurt you. Any of you. Grown-ups don't believe you, right? Well, I do. We both know that there are real monsters. But there's also real heroes that fight monsters. And that's me.

He looks away and goes back to drawing his picture.

Ryan Can't fight death.

Cut to the library. Willow is sitting at the table surfing for information on her laptop. Giles is standing behind her looking over her shoulder. Dr. Backer's medical database file comes up on the screen.

Giles Our Dr. Backer has something of a rap sheet.

Willow Reprimands for controversial experiments, risky procedures, a malpractice suit. Looks like it was dropped suddenly.

Giles *takes off his glasses* Factor in Buffy's observation that he gives her the, um, uh, wiggins... *turns away and thinks*

Willow This may be our death guy?

Giles *turns back to her* I just wish I knew what he was doing to these children.

She looks up at him.

Cut to a deserted hall in the hospital. Cut to Dr. Backer's office. He's deep into his research and mutters under

his breath. He looks up from his printouts and steps over to his refrigerator. He opens it, pulls a specimen from a rack, checks the label and marks it. He puts the test-tube back, closes the fridge and reaches for a reference volume on his desk. He sits back down as he quickly leafs through it and finds the page he wants. He reads it back to himself and jots some notes onto his papers.

Dr. Backer Yes. Yes.

Cut to the hall. Xander is sitting on a chair, waiting out his self-imposed sentry duty. He nearly nods off, but jerks his head back up. Cut to the table between his chair and the next one. A bag of Krispy Kreme doughnuts plops down onto it. The camera pulls back, and Cordelia walks in front of it and sets down a tray with two cups of coffee. Xander looks up at her as she sits down. She looks back at him, then turns her attention to a copy of Cosmopolitan that she brought with her. Xander reaches for one of the coffees. He gives Cordelia another look and takes the bag of doughnuts also. He takes a long sip of coffee and then opens the bag.

Cut to the hall outside Dr. Backer's office. He walks out, and the camera precedes him as he makes his way to the children's ward. He goes through one of a pair of doors. The camera stops, pans over to Buffy waiting behind the other door and closes in on her suspicious face.

Cut to the children's ward. Dr. Backer comes in and looks around at the various beds as he makes his way over to a particularly sick child. The boy is asleep. He

checks his watch and looks at the child for a moment. The boy lets out a labored breath. Dr. Backer raises a syringe, taps it twice to get the air bubbles to the top and depresses the plunger until the fluid starts to squirt out. He takes the IV line and pushes the needle into the drug administration stopper. Behind him he hears a muffled laugh and turns to look, but sees nothing. He looks back at the boy again. Suddenly he gets hit in the back and spun around by something unseen.

Dr. Backer Uhh!

He is hit again in the chest and yells out in pain. Ryan sees what's happening from his bed and cowers in fear. Dr. Backer is choking. Four slashes appear on his lab coat that go deep and draw blood. He grabs his wound, but is bent backward onto the bed, still being choked. On the wall a shadow can be seen swinging its arm for another slice at the doctor. He screams, and blood sprays onto the wall. Ryan cowers further under his covers.

Cut to the hall. Buffy slowly approaches the door to the ward and looks in, but she quickly has to step back and out of the way as Dr. Backer comes flying out and onto the floor. He groans, and she bends down to help him, but something pushes her away and throws her back into the wall. She hits it hard and slides down to the floor unconscious. Dr. Backer's arms are lifted by the unseen being, and his body is pulled around and dragged down the hall. Further down the hall he is dragged around a corner and out of sight.

Part 3

Sunnydale General. Cut to Buffy's room. She's in her bed looking at the picture Ryan drew. The grapes Giles gave her are on a plate on the table. Giles appears in the doorway and knocks. Buffy looks up as he, Xander and the girls come into the room. Willow closes the door behind her.

Giles Uh, well, it looks as if you, uh, were on to something.

Buffy I know.

Giles *walks around the bed* The, uh, the, the girl Tina, um, it's apparent that she, she died of the fever, *sits* simple enough, but, but her records show her improving and then suddenly deteriorating w-w-w- without any apparent cause.

Willow So we checked Dr. Backer out. This guy was **not** a solid citizen.

Buffy It wasn't Backer. He was clean.

Cordelia What do you mean 'clean'?

Xander What do you mean 'was'?

Buffy He's dead. This thing killed him, and not with

kindness. *hands Giles the picture*

Willow You saw it?

Giles looks at the rough child's drawing.

Buffy No, it's invisible. I saw Backer nearly shredded and the thing knocked me down. But it's real. Which means I get to fight it.

Giles Um, *takes off his glasses* this is your work? *indicates the picture*

Buffy No, one of the kids.

Giles Oh. Um... Well, it would help if-if we knew what it was. *exhales* I-it's invisible to you, but the, the children can see it.

Cordelia But you said you did see something the other night.

Buffy Uh, yeah, but I was pretty delirious. I mean, it doesn't make any sense. Why would I see it then and not last night?

The door to the room opens, and Buffy's mother comes in.

Joyce Good morning.

Giles puts his glasses back on. She sets down the bag she brought with her.

Joyce Ooo, looks like I interrupted a secret meeting. They all let out forced laughter.

Cordelia *smiling widely* You sure didn't!

Joyce Honey, I, I just talked to the doctor, and she said I can take you home.

Buffy *considers a moment* No. I should stay here.

Joyce *confused* But, honey, I thought you'd be raring...

Buffy I think my symptoms are flaring up.

Willow She doesn't look well.

Buffy 'Cause I'm not well. Uh, I feel all oogy.

Xander Increased ooginess. That's a danger signal.

Joyce Are you sure?

Buffy Oh, yeah, but just for a day... or s-so.

Joyce Okay, well, I'll, uh, I'll talk to the doctor.

She goes back out of the room. Cordelia closes the door behind her.

Xander So what's the drill?

Buffy Giles, see if you can get a mug shot on that guy. I need to know what I'm fighting.

Giles Right. Yes. *walks around the bed*

Buffy I'll check Backer's office. See if I can find any post-its marked 'why a monster might want me dead.'

Xander Sounds like a plan.

Buffy Course, if I find anything, I won't know what it means, so, Will...

Willow Oh, yeah, I'm good at medical stuff since Xander and I used to play doctor all the time.

Xander *chuckles* No, she's being literal. *gets a look from Cordelia* She used to have all these medical volumes, uh, and diagnosed me with stuff. I didn't have the heart to tell her she was playing it wrong.

Willow *to Xander* Wrong? Why? *to Buffy* How did you play doctor?

Buffy *evasively* I never have.

Cordelia raises her eyebrows at Buffy and clears her throat. Giles picks up on the hint.

Giles Um, fascinating though this is...

Buffy Yeah, right. Go!

Giles W-w-we'll call you if we... know something.

He starts out with Cordelia and Xander close behind.

Buffy Know something soon.

Cut to the hall. The three of them start toward the waiting room.

Giles I'd best head for the library. Research beckons.

Xander I'm on sentry duty. Angel won't show till sundown if at all, but maybe I'll get lucky with this death guy.

Cordelia He's invisible.

Xander Yeah, but if I see a floating pipe and a smoking jacket, he's dropped.

Giles Well, you two, stay alert.

They stop outside the waiting room.

Xander Finding out who this thing is takes priority. Cordy, you should go with Giles.

Giles Why do I have to have... *looks at Cordelia* Uh, good thinking. I-I-I could do with a research assistant.

Cordelia *to Giles* Let's go, tact-guy.

Giles Yes. *goes to the elevator*

Cordelia *to Xander* Be careful. *follows Giles*

Xander sits down on the chair across from the nurse's station.

Cut to the children's ward that evening. Ryan opens the door and looks out into the hall. The only person there is the security guard checking things. Ryan steps back into the ward and closes the door.

Cut to Dr. Backer's office. The camera closes in on his nameplate on the door. Cut inside. Buffy opens the door and pokes in her head. Seeing that it's empty she opens the door further to let Willow in, checks the hall and closes it behind her. She starts to look around and checks out the reference volumes on the shelves by the fridge. Willow looks over the papers on his desk.

Willow It's weird going through his things. *Buffy opens the fridge* Look, he didn't finish his coffee. Guess he won't. *looks at the printouts*

Buffy *closes the fridge* Yep, another person I wasn't in time to save. *comes to the desk* It's too bad Angel didn't put me in the hospital sooner. There's something I never thought I'd hear myself say.

The two of them keep looking.

Willow Hey, wait, I think I have something.

Buffy Hmm. Sherlock.

Willow Okay, this makes sense. Dr. Backer was trying to inoculate the kids with a controlled dosage of the same virus they already had. *gets a confused look from Buffy* Oh, raising their temperatures to burn the fever out of them.

Buffy Would that work?

Willow According to this it was starting to. So he really was trying to help the kids.

Buffy Till that thing stopped him.

Cut to the library. Giles and Cordelia are going through a stack of books on the table. He has Ryan's drawing for comparison. She turns a page and finds a picture of a demon. He takes a sip of his tea.

Cordelia Eww, what does this do?

Giles *puts his mug down* What?

Cordelia What does this do? *pushes the book toward him*

Giles Uh, it, uh, extracts vital organs to replenish its own mutating cells.

Cordelia Wow! *leans over to look at his book* What does this one do? *points to a drawing*

Giles *looks up at her* Um, i-it elongates its mouth to, uh, engulf its victim's head with its incisors.

Cordelia Ouch. Wait, what does this one do? *points to another*

Giles *frustrated* It asks endless questions of those with whom it's supposed to be working so that nothing is getting done.

Cordelia Boy, there's a demon for everything.

He slaps down Ryan's picture and gets up from the table in disgust. He takes off his glasses and rubs his forehead.

Giles I don't even know if we're on the right track. Since this, uh... miscreant has only been seen by select individuals, there's a chance we won't ever... find a picture of it.

Cordelia Well, it's not in here.

She closes her book, and on the cover is a drawing of the monster they are seeking. Giles looks down at it and puts his glasses back on. She notices his gaze and looks at the book's cover also.

Cut to Giles' office. Cordelia is on the phone with Buffy.

Cordelia It's called Der Kindestod.

Buffy *cut to her on her bed* Who is this?

Cordelia *cut to her* It's me. I've got your monster!

Buffy *cut to her* Where's Giles?

Cordelia *cut to her* Looking up stuff.

Buffy *cut to her* Well, can you put him on?

Cordelia *cut to her* Hey! *closes the book and heads for the desk* I found your guy, *cut to Buffy* okay? Just listen.

Buffy Right.

Cordelia *cut to her at Giles' desk* The name means 'child death'. *cut to Buffy listening intently* This book says that he feeds off of children by sucking the life out of them. *cut to her* Eew! But anyway, afterwards, it looks like they died because they were sick.

Buffy *cut to her* So it did kill Tina.

Cordelia Yeah, that's my take. *cut to her* 'Cause it would be looking at the children's ward as basically an all-you-can-eat kind of thing, y'know.

Buffy *cut to her* Backer was curing the kids and taking away the *cut to Cordelia, nodding* Kindestod's food.

Cordelia Hence, the slice-age.

Giles *comes into his office* I found a picture of how it kills. Let me talk to her.

Cordelia *takes the book and looks* Oh! Eww!

Buffy *cut to her* What?

Cordelia *cut to her* Oh! *cut to Willow, looking concerned* Uh, you should see this thing! The way it does its thing, *cut to her* I mean, eww! *hands the phone to Giles and*

gets up Why do I let you guys drag me into this stuff? *leaves*

Giles *into the phone* Uh, uh, Buffy? *cut to Buffy* Are you, are you still there?

Buffy Hanging on every *cut to Giles* eww.

Giles *sits* Uh, the, um, the Kindestod gorges by sitting atop his prey, *cut to Buffy listening closely* pinning it down, uh, helplessly. Then he slowly draws out the life. I-it must be, uh, h-horrifying for the victim.

Buffy just stares off into space.

Giles Buffy? Hello?

Cut to a flashback of Little Buffy pulling aside the curtain around Celia's bed.

Little Buffy Celia?

Celia wakes and starts to scream. She holds her hands in front of her as if trying to push something away.

Little Buffy What's wrong?

Celia keeps screaming at the top of her lungs in complete terror.

Little Buffy I don't know what to do, Celia!

Celia continues screaming and swats with her hands at something unseen.

Little Buffy *toward the door* Help! Help! Help! Somebody help!

Celia Get it off of me! *screams*

Little Buffy Come on, Celia!

Celia Get it off of me! *screams*

Cut to the bright and empty hall outside Celia's room. No one is coming in spite of all the screaming.

Cut back to Buffy holding the phone to her ear and staring off into space.

Giles *cut to him* Buffy, w-what is it?

Willow *cut to her takes the phone* Thanks. *hangs up*

Buffy It killed Celia.

Willow Your cousin?

Buffy *looks at Willow* We have to get this thing, Willow, before it gets any more kids.

Willow You will. We will.

Buffy But how? I-I can't even see it.

Willow You saw it once.

Buffy Did I? Uh, maybe my mind was playing tricks on me. I mean, I was crazed with that fever. Who knows... Cut inside Dr. Backer's refrigerator. The door opens and the light goes on.

Willow Buffy, think about this.

Buffy I have. Lots of thoughts. *crouches down*

Willow It's crazy.

Buffy *searches the test-tubes* The fever. That's how you see the Kindestod. That's why Celia could see it. That's why Ryan still can. *finds the right one* It's the only way. Cut to the office. Buffy stands back up and faces Willow.

Willow But how are you gonna fight this thing with 107 degree temperature? *42d C*

Buffy I guess we'll find out.

She uncaps the tube and raises it to drink the serum. Willow quickly stops her.

Willow Buffy!

Buffy Willow, I'm going to do this.

Willow Buffy, that's 100% pure. It'll kill you in an instant.

Buffy Oh. They really should put that on the label.

Willow reaches into the refrigerator for a bottle of drinking water and grabs a beaker that's sitting on top. Buffy closes the fridge while Willow sets the beaker on the desk and opens the bottle.

Willow It needs to be diluted.

She pours some water into the beaker and closes the bottle.

Buffy Okay, but this better work fast.

Willow takes the test-tube and draws some of the serum into a dropper. She holds it over the beaker and lets a single drop fall in.

Buffy Faster than that.

Willow looks up at her, worried, but gives in and puts another drop into the water. Buffy takes the beaker, holds it up and looks at it, then over at Willow.

Buffy Here's to my health.

After another moment's hesitation she quaffs the water and serum.

Cut to the hall outside the children's ward. Willow and Buffy come around the corner and head toward the ward. Buffy is already feeling the effects of the virus and walks unsteadily, breathing heavily. Willow supports her.

Buffy Oh, God. I'm not sure this was such a good idea.

Willow Hang in there. You'll be okay.

Buffy Okay. I'm okay.

They reach the door to the ward, and Buffy looks in through the door's window. The beds are all empty.

Buffy The kids. They're gone.

She and Willow exchange a surprised and very worried look.

Part 4

The basement tunnels under the Hospital. Ryan leads the kids from the children's ward as they try to run away from the Kindestod.

Ryan Come on!

Girl Hold me!

Ryan Keep quiet!

Cut to the hall outside the children's ward.

Willow What could have happened?

Buffy I don't know. *faces her* Maybe we're too late. Maybe they moved. *feels her forehead* Maybe I don't... I'm burning up!

She looks back into the room and starts to see something.

Buffy Will?

Willow What?

Buffy I think it's in there.

A form begins to take shape as though unfolding. It steps over to a bed, and suddenly the Kindestod is clearly visible to Buffy. It looks into a bed and finds it empty. She stares at it through the door's window. The monster looks over at another bed and notices her staring. It straightens itself up and looks at her. Buffy's eyes go wide with fear. It just giggles maniacally and takes off its hat to her. It keeps an eye on her for another moment as it turns toward the other door to the ward, then puts the hat back on and walks to the other door. The Kindestod opens it and goes through, and as it closes the camera cuts to a close-up shot of the sign on the door: basement access.

Cut to the hall. Buffy frantically tries to follow, but the door to the ward is locked, and the virus has weakened her enough so that she can't break it open.

Buffy It's going after them! *turns to Willow* We gotta get 'em.

Dr. Wilkinson *coming around the corner* Buffy?

Buffy *to Willow* Okay, we'll get 'em in a second.

Dr. Wilkinson *quickly approaches* What's wrong?

Willow I, uh, she's not feeling well again.

Dr. Wilkinson You should be in bed. *puts her arm around Buffy*

Buffy No, no, it's not that bad.

Dr. Wilkinson No, you're coming with me. *starts to pull her away*

Buffy No!

She pushes the doctor away and starts to run down the hall. Willow quickly follows.

Willow *back to the doctor* She's sorry!

Dr. Wilkinson *grabs a phone and dials* Security, come to the children's ward. We have a situation.

She hangs up and runs after the girls.

Cut to an intersection in the halls. Buffy and Willow come through a pair of doors. The camera pans around down the adjacent hallway where the security guards are coming. They head the girls off at the intersection.

Guard Okay, come on now. *holds his baton threateningly* We can do this the easy way.

The two girls give each other worried looks, then Willow has an idea and starts to swat at herself with her hands.

Willow *frantically* Frogs! Frogs! Get 'em off of me!
The two guards make for her, assuming she's the reason they were called.

Willow Oh, my God, frogs! Get them off of me! Please, help!

Buffy edges around the corner and quickly goes down the other hall.

Willow Get 'em off! FROGS! Frogs! Oh, my God, horrible frogs!

Dr. Wilkinson comes through the doors.

Willow *squeals* Get 'em...

Dr. Wilkinson Not her, the other one!

Willow *looks up, calm again* No more frogs!

Guard C'mon!

They start to run after Buffy.

Cut to Xander sitting at his post in the hall across from the nurse's station. Buffy comes into view and bumps into the wall, unsteady from her fever. Xander looks up, sees her, jumps to his feet and runs to her.

Xander Buffy, are you okay? Did Angel...

Buffy *shakes her head* No. We need to get to the basement.

Cut to the basement tunnels. The Kindestod is looking around for signs of the children's passing.

Cut to the children weaving their way through the hospital's boiler room.

Ryan Shh!

They find a secluded corner and all crouch and huddle together.

Girl I'm cold.

Ryan Here.

He takes off his robe and drapes it around the girl.

Ryan Here. We're gonna be safe in here.

Boy Look!

The Kindestod appears behind Ryan. The other kids all scream.

Ryan What?

It grabs Ryan from behind and lifts him up and away.

Ryan Whoa!

Cut to the stairs to the basement tunnels. Xander supports Buffy as they hurry down.

Xander You don't know how to kill this thing.

Buffy I thought I might try violence.

Xander Solid call.

They head down the tunnel.

Cut to the Kindestod holding Ryan up to look at him. He and the other kids are all screaming. Cut to Xander and Buffy running down the tunnel. Cut to the Kindestod, still holding up Ryan. It throws him aside, and he hits the concrete floor hard.

Ryan Oof!

The kids keep screaming. Ryan tries to get up. The monster growls as it slowly comes for him. Ryan turns around and looks up at the Kindestod. He can't scream for fear. It kneels and leans over him, and now Ryan starts to scream again. It takes his head to hold him steady. The boy watches as the monster's eyes bug out and split open. They extend from their sockets down toward his forehead. The monster drools heavily and licks its lips. Its eyes make contact with Ryan's forehead. He screams as he feels his energy being drained. Suddenly the Kindestod gets hit in the head with a large section of pipe, and its eyes snap back into their sockets. Buffy stands over it with the pipe held ready.

Buffy You make me sick.

The Kindestod stands up and faces her. She swings the pipe at it again, but the monster blocks it and knocks it from her grip. Although Xander can't see it, he sees that Buffy is fighting something and takes the opportunity to go to Ryan and lift him up from the floor.

Xander Up.

He carries the boy over to the other kids. Buffy is not in top form as she fights the Kindestod, and it gains the upper hand and punches her twice in the face, then throws her against a pipe. Xander finds the other children and starts to herd them away.

Xander C'mon, c'mon, c'mon! Hurry!

He follows them, throwing a few glances over at Buffy along the way. She swings twice at the monster, but it just leans back and avoids the blows. It grabs her again and throws her into another pipe. She recovers quickly, spots a raised grating and hops up onto it. She takes a good look at the Kindestod, and then jumps from the grate and lands a hard kick on its face. It stumbles back and to its knee as she lands on her feet. She kicks it three more times while it tries to get back up. Xander comes back after leading the kids away and watches her fight. He sees her kick, but to him it looks like she's fighting thin air. He hears her get hit, and she spins around and lets out a grunt of pain. The monster takes her by the shoulder and backhand punches her in the face again. He takes her by the throat, lifts her up and throws her into some sections of large duct tube. Buffy is dazed and just lies there on the pipe. The Kindestod reaches down for its hat, brushes it off and puts it back on. Buffy recovers from her daze, but not in time to get away as it kneels and reaches for her head. It holds her steady with both hands. Its eyes bug out and split open again. She reaches up for its head with both hands and gives it a good quick twist. The monster's neck snaps loudly, and it falls over dead next to her. Buffy stands up and looks down at the Kindestod's prone body. Xander finally dares to come closer.

Xander *concerned* Are you okay?

Buffy Actually, *looks up at him* I think I'm starting to feel better. Let's...

She takes a step, but loses her balance and falls into Xander.

Buffy Oh!

He puts his arm around her to support her, and they go.

Xander He's dead right? I mean, I heard something snap.

Buffy That would be his neck.

Xander You're not gonna yak on me, are ya?

Cut to the Summers house. Cut to Buffy's room. Joyce walks in with a sandwich on a plate and a glass of juice.

Joyce Here you go, honey. Peanut butter and jelly, without the crust, just the way you like it.

She sits on the bed next to Buffy and puts the glass on the nightstand. Buffy is lying back comfortably.

Buffy And the juice?

Joyce *hands Buffy the plate* Two parts orange, one part grapefruit.

Buffy That's my drink.

Joyce I measured it exactly. *gets up to go*

The camera pulls away from Buffy to show Xander lounging on the bed next to her, munching away on cheesy chips and watching TV.

Buffy *looks at the sandwich* Oh, mom?

Joyce Mm-hm?

Buffy I wanted crunchy peanut butter.

Joyce Oh, sorry. *comes back*

The camera pulls back even further to show Willow on the floor next to the bed surrounded with pillows.

Buffy A-and I said extra jelly. *hands up the plate*

Joyce *smiles* Anything to help my daughter get well. *starts to go again*

Willow Oh, and while you're up, could I get a refill? *holds out her glass* It's just I'm so comfortable.

Joyce *steps over* Of course. *takes the glass*

Willow Thanks.

Xander Oh, oh, oh, *holds up an empty bag* and another bag of cheesy chips. *tosses the bag away*

Joyce *raises her eyebrows at him* Uh, you ate the last one.

Xander No, there's another bag hidden behind the raisins.

Joyce *sighs* I'm on it. *leaves*

Xander *to Buffy* Your mom's tryin' to Bogart the cheesy chips. What's that all about?

Joyce comes back into the room holding an envelope.

Joyce Oh, Buffy, here. Um, this came in the mail. *hands it to Buffy*

Buffy *reads the return address and smiles* It's from Ryan. *opens it*

Joyce The boy from the hospital?

Buffy takes out the paper inside and unfolds it. Joyce looks down at it.

Joyce *smiles* Oh, he drew you a picture.

Cut to a shot of the picture. It's of Buffy standing over the Kindestod with her foot up on its chest. The monster's neck is split open and blood is gushing out.

Joyce How... nice.

I Only Have Eyes for You

Written by Marti Noxon

Directed by James Whitmore, Jr.

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "I Only Have Eyes For You". It also includes descriptions of the set-

tings, action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.08

This episode was originally broadcast on April 28, 1998.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

The Bronze. Splendid is the band tonight. They are on stage performing "Charge". The camera pans from the spotlights above the band down past the drummer to the lead guitar player.

Lyrics The way you love / Have you got a name for it / Cause I don't understand it

The camera pans past the singer and into the crowd. Cordelia and Xander are dancing close with their arms around each other and smiling.

Lyrics The language is an annoying necessity / And I depend on all the regular things

The camera reaches Willow, who is looking around for Buffy. She turns around, looks up and spots her on the upper level leaning against the railing and watching the band. The camera pans up to her.

Lyrics Got a list tattooed on my memory / Of how our tryst should unfold

Behind Buffy a boy approaches her.

Lyrics I'm falling from the opposite

Ben Hey.

Buffy turns to him, a little surprised.

Lyrics What good is it

Ben I'm Ben. We had Algebra II together last year.

Lyrics Fight the map with no key attached

Buffy Sorry, I pretty much repress anything math-related.

Lyrics My heart's enlarged, and I charge / What do you say

Ben Ms. Jackson? Second period? You sat in the seat three over and one behind.

Lyrics To a dream that won't go away

Buffy Oh! Yeah, I remember now, it's the one with the desks and the chalkboards and pencils and stuff, right?

Ben That's the one. *chuckles*

Buffy *smiles and points at her head* Like a steel trap.

Lyrics 'Cause I don't know if I can stand it

Ben So, I was wondering, you know the dance tomorrow night? Are you going?

Buffy You mean the Sadie Hawkins thing? The deal where the girls ask the boys?

Ben Yeah.

Lyrics Forever isn't something you want to be

Ben And I thought maybe, you know, if you're free, you might ask me.

Lyrics And I rely on familiar things

Buffy Oh, gosh... *exhales* I...

Ben *holds up his hand* Oh, oh, hey, hey, no, don't, don't worry about it...

Buffy No, no, you seem like a really great guy, it's...

Lyrics Seven days all have special meanings

Buffy ...me. I-I'm not seeing anybody.

Lyrics But you just call it a week

Buffy Ever again, actually.

Ben Oh. That's, that's too bad.

Lyrics I'm falling from the opposite / What good is it

Ben Okay, well, I better... *indicates away and goes*

Lyrics Fight the map with no key attached

Buffy *to herself* Sorry.

Lyrics My heart's enlarged, and I charge

She watches him go for a moment, glances sadly down at the band and then heads for the stairs.

Cut to the stage. The camera focuses on the singer and the band as she sings the refrain again.

Lyrics I'm falling from the opposite / What good is it

/ Fight the map with no key attached / My heart's enlarged, and I charge

When Buffy reaches the bottom of the stairs Willow meets her.

Willow Hey! You're bailing?

Buffy Yeah. I'm gonna stop by the library and see if Giles wants me to patrol, and then sack it.

Willow You've been doing that a lot. Patrolling and sacking. In fact, you've kind of been All-Work-And-No-Play Buffy.

Buffy I play. I have **big** fun. I came here tonight, didn't I?

Willow You came, you saw, you *glances up* rejected.

Buffy You mean that guy? Just not in date mode right now.

Willow *smiles* Well, maybe you need to date to get in date mode.

Buffy I don't think I'm ready for that, Will.

Willow You're thinking too much. Maybe you need to be impulsive. *smiles*

Buffy Impulsive? Do you remember my ex-boyfriend, the vampire? I slept with him, he lost his soul, now my boyfriend's gone forever, and the demon that wears his

face is killing my friends. The next impulsive decision I make will involve my choice of dentures.

Willow Okay, the Angel thing went badly, I'm on board with that, but that's not your fault. And anyways, love isn't always like that. Love can be... *smiles* nice!

Cut to the halls at Sunnydale High School. A boy is chasing a girl as she walks away from him determinedly.

Boy *angrily* Come back here! We're not finished!

He grabs her by the arm and turns her around to face him.

Boy You don't care anymore, is that it?

Girl *sobbing* No, it doesn't matter, it doesn't matter what I feel.

Boy Then tell me you don't love me. *shakes her* Say it!

Girl Will that help? Is that what you need to hear? I don't. I don't! Now let me go. *tries to go*

Boy No! A person doesn't just wake up one day and stop loving somebody.

He takes a step back, raises a revolver, pulls the hammer back and aims it at her. She looks at the gun, then up at him, frightened.

Boy Love is forever.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part 1

The halls at Sunnydale High. The boy has his gun trained on the girl.

Boy I'm not afraid to use it. I swear! If I can't be with you...

Buffy comes walking around the corner and sees them.

Buffy Hey!

Girl Oh, my God!

She turns and starts walking away. Buffy starts running at the boy.

Boy DON'T WALK AWAY FROM ME, BITCH!

Down another hall George the janitor hears the yelling, drops his mop and starts toward the commotion. Buffy comes running at the boy full steam. He looks at her just as she grabs his arm, raises it and brings it down over her shoulder, making him drop the gun. She elbows him hard in the gut, knocking the breath out of him. She turns around, grabs him by the shirt and yanks him hard to the floor. He spins a turn and a half on his way down and lands hard on his back. The girl just looks on in shock. Buffy bends down to pick the boy up by the collar. George arrives at a run and goes over to the girl. They look over at Buffy and the boy. She pushes him away. He is in open-mouthed shock over what just happened.

Boy What happened?

Buffy What happened?! You just went O.J. on your girlfriend!

His girlfriend looks down away from him.

Boy This is nuts! I... I don't know why I got so mad.

Buffy Because you're a jerk?

Girl He's not. We weren't even fighting a few minutes ago.

Boy We weren't, I, I swear to God!

Buffy If you weren't fighting, then why'd you have a gun?

George looks around the hall.

Boy I don't, I don't know. I don't even know where I got it.

George I don't see any gun.

Buffy looks at him, confused. The boy takes a look around also.

Cut to school the next day. Cut to Principal Snyder's office. He comes in and closes the door behind him. The camera starts to follow him to his desk.

Snyder I'm sure you know why I asked you here.

He passes Buffy as she takes a seat.

Buffy To thank me?

Snyder *walks around his desk* That's right, I wanna thank you. What would Sunnydale High do without you around to incite mayhem, chaos and disorder?

Buffy I don't incite! I stopped that boy from killing his girlfriend, ask him. Ask the janitor.

Snyder People can be coerced, Summers. I'm no stranger to conspiracy. I saw JFK. I'm a truth seeker.

I've got a missing gun and two confused kids on my hands. Pieces of the puzzle. And I'm gonna look at all the pieces carefully and rationally, and I'm gonna keep looking until I know exactly how this is all your fault.

Buffy is about to respond when his secretary buzzes him on his office intercom.

Secretary Mr. Snyder, Billy Crandal chained himself to the snack machine again.

Snyder *to the intercom* Pathetic little no-life vegan.

He walks around his desk to go take care of Billy. Buffy stands up to go also.

Snyder Not so fast, missy. I'm not done with you yet. You stink of lies.

He points to her chair, and she sits back down and exhales. He leaves the office and closes the door behind him. Over to Buffy's right is a bookcase with copies of all of the yearbooks since Sunnydale High opened, and the one from 1955 slides out on its own and falls. She hears it hit the floor and looks down at it. She gets up and bends down to pick it up. She looks at the cover, looks over at its space on the shelf, shrugs and puts it back.

Cut to the computer science class. Willow is still substituting for Ms. Calendar. She walks along the front of the class.

Willow So, for next time read the chapters on information grouping and binary coding.

Giles looks into the classroom from the hall.

Willow I bet you'll think coding is pretty cool. I mean, if you find two-digit, multi-stacked conversions and primary number clusters a big hoot.

Everyone in the class laughs. The bell rings, and the students begin to leave. Willow watches them go and notices Giles waiting just inside of the doorway.

Willow Giles! *goes to him* I made them laugh, did you hear? I did the joke thing! *smiles goes back to the desk*

Giles Yes, yes, so it seems. I-I mean, um, *approaches the desk* uh, you did indeed. Good, good, good show. I-I-I just stopped by to, to see if you needed any assistance, *sits on the desk* but you seem to have things quite under control.

Willow *puts things away* Well, I had good lesson plans. Ms. Calendar had them on her computer.

Giles Yes, yes, she was very, um... uh, dedicated.

Willow And I found a bunch of files and Internet sites on paganism and magic and stuff. *smiles*

Giles Oh?

Willow Yes, it's really interesting.

Giles looks down away from her.

Willow *reaches for something on the desk* And, uh, I found this in her drawer. *Giles looks up* She told me it was a rose quartz. *Giles looks at her hands* And it has

healing powers.

She holds up a light pink quartz stone strung on a thin leather thong.

Willow I thought she'd want you to have it.

He gets up from the desk and slowly takes the necklace from her. He gently turns it over in his hand.

Giles Oh, thank you, Willow, that's, um... that's very thoughtful of you.

He turns and leaves the classroom. Willow watches him go with a small smile on her face.

Cut to history class. Buffy has her chin propped up in her hand, bored with the lecture and trying not to fall asleep to the drone of the male teacher's voice.

Teacher Before 1935, the new deal focused on revitalizing stricken business and agricultural communities. And the new deal also tried to regulate the nation's financial hierarchy to avoid another disaster like the 1929 stock market crash.

Buffy can't help but close her eyes for a moment. The next thing she knows she hears a woman's voice, and she shakes herself out of her reverie.

Ms. Newman Don't forget, your assignments are due on Friday, class.

The students begin to leave. Buffy looks around and is taken aback by the sudden changed appearance of the classroom and the different dress and hairstyles of the other students.

Girl#1 I told Ms. Hall we'd go help decorate the gym. Who are you taking?

She hands a flyer for the Sadie Hawkins Dance to another girl. Buffy can see that the year on it reads 1955.

Girl#2 David said yes.

Girl#1 Oh, you're kidding! He's so dreamy!

Buffy looks all around, confused.

Ms. Newman *collecting papers* Thank you.

James goes up to the desk and hands in his paper also.

Ms. Newman Thank you, James. How are you enjoying that book I loaned you? The Hemingway.

Buffy observes and listens to the conversation.

James I like it. Very much. It's honest.

He slowly reaches for Ms. Newman's hand and gently takes it.

Ms. Newman *exhales* Yes, it's, um... it's based on a true story, actually. He fell in love with his...

They are interrupted by the door opening, and let go of their hands. Suddenly Buffy finds herself back in her history class as her teacher continues his lecture while writing on the board.

Teacher ...hours, child labor...

Buffy stares in surprise at what the teacher is writing.

Teacher ...and collective bargaining.

The teacher looks back at the class. The students all start laughing. He looks back at the board and sees that he's just written "DON'T WALK AWAY FROM ME BITCH!" in huge letters.

Teacher Oh, my God!

He quickly grabs an eraser and frantically wipes it away.

Boy *smiling* Did you see what he wrote?

Cut to the halls. Buffy and Xander walk through the doors from the lounge and head down the hall.

Buffy I'm telling you, something weird is going on.

Xander Something weird is going on. Isn't that our school motto?

Buffy Pretty much. But I don't know. This time it bugs me.

They reach his locker, and he starts to work the combination.

Xander I don't wanna poo-poo your wiggins, but a domestic dispute, a little case of chalkboard Tourette's? All sounds like Hellmouth Lite to me.

He opens his locker, and a wiry-muscled green arm shoots out and grabs him by the shirt. He screams, and it pulls at him and slams him into the locker. Buffy grabs him by the shoulders and tries to pull him away, but the arm is extremely strong and pulls Xander away from her and against the locker again. He screams out in pain when he hits it. Buffy grabs him again and pulls harder, and the arm lets go. Xander falls to the floor as Buffy slams the locker shut. He scrambles back to his feet, and they both look around the hall and see the other students' reactions. They are all confused, but stay away and just stare. Buffy gives Xander an intent look and indicates that they should open his locker again and take a look inside. Xander rubs his chin and stands ready as Buffy slowly lifts the latch. She slowly opens the door, and they peek in. Nothing. They open it all the way, and it appears to be completely normal.

Cut to the library. Willow is at the table studying. She looks up when she hears the doors open and sees Xander's torn shirt.

Willow Xander, what happened? Did Cordelia win another round in the broom closet?

Xander You're just a big bucket of funny, Will.

Buffy sits down next to her. Xander walks over to Giles, who is kneeling and going through some books on a shelf.

Xander I'll have you know I was just accosted by some kind of, um, locker monster.

Giles *looks up* Loch Ness Monster?

Buffy 'Locker' monster is what he said. But it wasn't really a monster. It was, like, this big arm that came out of the locker, but then we opened it again, it was gone. Nothing.

Xander This was right after Buffy's history teacher starts doing some freaky channeling thing in class.

Giles *stands up* Ooh! Sounds like paranormal phenomena.

Willow *smiles* A ghost? Cool!

Xander Oh, no, no. No. No cool. This was no wimpy chain rattler. This was 'I'm dead as hell, and I'm not gonna take it anymore.'

Giles Well, despite the Xander-speak, that's a fairly accurate definition of a poltergeist.

Xander I defined something? Accurately? *closes a book on the table* Guess I'm done with the book learning. *sits*

Buffy So we have some bad boo on our hands?

Giles Yes.

Willow Well, why is it here? Does it just wanna scare people?

Giles Unfortunately, he doesn't know exactly what he wants. That's, that's the trouble. See, uh, many times the spirit is plagued by all manner of worldly troubles. Being dead, it has no way to, uh, to make its peace. So it, it lashes out, growing ever more confused, ever more angry.

Buffy So it's a normal teenager, only dead.

Willow Well, what can we do? Is there any way to stop it?

Giles *sits on the table* Uh, the only tried and true way is to work out what unresolved issues keep it here, and-and-and, um, resolve them.

Buffy Fabulous. Now we're Dr. Laura for the deceased.

Giles Only if we can find out who this spirit is. *considers* Or was.

Cut to the halls that evening. George is doing his usual mopping. Behind him a classroom door opens, and a teacher comes out to go home.

George Working late Ms. Frank?

Ms. Frank My fault. Let myself get behind. *stops* Is it okay to walk here George? It is George, right?

George Oh, yes ma'am. You go ahead.

Ms. Frank Thanks. *continues on her way* You have a nice evening.

George You too. Drive safe. *looks up at her* Oh, Ms. Frank?

Ms. Frank Yes?

George *drops his mop and approaches her* You can't make me disappear just because you say it's over.

Ms. Frank *shakes her head* There's no way we can be together. *steps closer* No way people will ever understand. Accept it.

George Is that what this is about? What other people think?

Ms. Frank No! I just want you to be able to have some kind of a normal life. We can never have that. Don't you

see?

George I don't give a damn about a normal life! I'm going crazy not seeing you. I think about you every minute.

She steps closer and puts her hand up on his cheek. He looks down sadly.

Ms. Frank I know. But it's over. It has to be.

She turns around and starts to leave. He looks up again and starts to chase after her.

George *angrily* Come back here! We're not finished yet! He grabs her by the arm and turns her around to face him.

George You don't care anymore? Is that it?

Ms. Frank *sobbing* It doesn't matter, it doesn't matter what I feel.

George Then tell me you don't love me. *shakes her* Say it!

Ms. Frank Will that help? Is that what you have to hear? I don't. I don't. Now let me go. *tries to go*

George No. A person doesn't just wake up one day and stop loving somebody.

A gun materializes in his hand. He takes a step back, raises the revolver, pulls the hammer back and aims it at her. She looks at the gun, frightened.

George Love is forever.

Part 2

The library. The camera pans through the main room over to a window looking into Giles' office. George and Ms. Frank can be heard faintly as they continue their quarrel.

George I'm not afraid to use it. I swear. If I can't be with you...

Ms. Frank Oh, my God.

George DON'T WALK AWAY FROM ME, BITCH!

Giles notices George's loud yelling and looks up from his desk. He gets up, takes off his glasses and walks out of his office to the area behind the checkout counter. There he hears a faint female voice.

Voice I need you.

He looks around for a moment, then jumps to a conclusion.

Giles Jenny.

Cut to the hall. He arrives at the hall intersection.

George Don't!

Giles looks in the direction of George's voice and sees him out on the balcony holding the gun up to Ms. Frank.

George Don't do that, damn it! Don't talk to me like I'm some dumb...

The gun goes off. Giles rushes to the other side of the intersection and hides behind the corner, watching the events as they unfold. Outside Ms. Frank goes into shock from the bullet wound and begins to fall backward. She tumbles over the balcony railing down to the base of the stairs below. There George sees her lying dead with her eyes closed. He panics and runs into the hall. As he reaches the intersection Giles rushes out, grabs him and tackles him to the floor. George loses his grip on the gun and it slides away. As it does so it dissolves and disappears in a whiff of black vapor. George raises his head as Giles gets to his knees behind him and holds him down.

George What's going on?

Giles What's going on? You just shot a woman.

George is stunned by the realization that it actually happened.

Cut to a modern-looking but deserted mansion. Cut inside to an atrium. Angelus comes in leading Spike and Drusilla on a tour.

Angelus And this... this is the garden.

Drusilla Wow! *walks through* Look. Jasmine. *holds a flower*

Angelus Night blooming. *plays with some pruning shears*

Drusilla Like us. Oh, Angel, it's fairyland. *turns in excitement* Ooh!

Spike *still at the entrance* It's paradise. Big windows, lovely gardens. It'll be perfect when we want the sunlight to kill us.

Angelus If you don't like it, Spike, hit the stairs and go. Take a stand, man. *comes up behind Drusilla*

Spike Well, our old place was just fine till you went and had it burned down.

Angelus *walks around the center stone table* Things change, Spikey. You gotta roll with the punches. Well, actually, you pretty much got that part down, haven't you?

Spike Very funny, mate.

Angelus *peeks his head out from behind Dru* What can I say? *peeks from the other side of her head* I just love to see you smile, buddy.

He holds up a jasmine bloom and brushes it across Drusilla's cheek as he growls into her ear.

Spike Yeah, you're a giver. *turns and rolls out*

Cut to the library. Giles is in his office, and the others are standing outside his door.

Giles It was just as with the, the couple you encountered the other night, Buffy. The, the janitor remembered everything. He, he knew he'd killed this poor

woman, but he had no idea why. Well, they-they had no intimate relationship.

He comes out with a few books and heads into the main area. They all follow.

Willow What about the gun? Did you find it?

Giles No, no. The police, everybody, we-we-we-we searched high and low. I think it's very clear what's happening here.

He goes into the cage with the books and puts them away.

Xander Fill me in then, 'cause I've read the book, seen the movie, and I'm still fuzzy about what's going on.

Giles It's Jenny.

Buffy What?

Xander You think she's the ghost?

Giles Well, don't you see? Well, she-she-she died here under tragic circumstances, a-a-and now she's trapped.

Willow But what about the gun? I mean, Angel didn't shoot Ms. Calendar.

Giles The gun is insignificant. It's the violence of the thing that matters. *goes back into his office*

Buffy I don't know. These fights these couples keep having, it's sort of... specific.

Willow She's right. It's a pattern that doesn't fit with the way Ms. Calendar died.

Giles *comes out of his office* Yes, well, I, uh, I appreciate your thoughts on the matter, I, in fact I... well, I **encourage** you to, to always, uh, challenge me, uh, when you feel it's appropriate. You should never be cowed by authority. *starts back in, but comes back* Except, of course, in this instance, when I am clearly right and you are clearly wrong. *goes back in*

Cut to the computer science classroom. Willow, Xander and Buffy come in.

Willow This is freaky. I don't ever remember ever seeing Giles be this weird.

She sits at the desk and types at her laptop. Xander leans on a table behind her. Buffy walks to the other side of the desk.

Xander I know. He's usually Investigate-Things-From-Every-Boring-Angle Guy. Now he's I-Cling-Onto-My-One-Lame-Idea Guy. What gives?

Buffy He misses her. He can't think. Just a little more fallout from my love life.

Willow Okay, but this ghost stuff is something else. Let me do a crosscheck on other shootings at the school.

Buffy Yeah, we need some alternate ghost theories. What do we know?

Xander Dog spit is cleaner than human.

Buffy Besides that?

Willow *finds something* Oh, boy, we know plenty.

She scrolls through a newspaper article on her laptop. The title reads "Sunnydale High Jock Kills Lover, Self".

Willow It says a student murdered a teacher on the night of the Sadie Hawkins Dance. The rumor was they were having an affair, and she tried to break it off. After he killed her, he went into the music room and shot himself.

Xander Ladies and gentlemen, we have a ghost. It is one of those two, right?

Willow It all fits: the gun, the Sadie Hawkins Dance.

Buffy Which is tonight.

Xander How come we've never heard about this murder-suicide thing before? When did it happen?

Buffy 1955.

Willow and Xander both look up at her surprised.

Willow How did you know?

Cut to a short while later. Buffy sets the 1955 Sunnydale High yearbook on the desk and opens it to a picture of Ms. Newman.

Buffy Okay, here's the new strangeness. I dreamt about this woman, *points* Grace Newman, the other day. *turns more pages* Her and this guy. *points*

Willow Jim Stanley? He's the one. He did it.

Xander Your dreams are getting wicked accurate, Buff. You wouldn't happen to see me coming across some big cash? Or possibly knowing the love of a woman? In a full body sense?

Buffy *ignores him* He couldn't make her love him, so he killed her. *turns away* Sicko. *steps away*

Willow He looks so normal on this picture. He was smart, too. He made the honor roll.

Buffy *looks back* Smart.

Xander He killed a person and killed himself. Those are pretty much two of the dumbest things you could do.

Willow I know, but... Well, don't you feel kind of bad for them?

Buffy Sure I feel lousy. For her. He's a murderer and he should pay for it.

Willow With his life?

Buffy No, he should be doing sixty years in a prison, breaking rocks and making special friends with Roscoe the Weightlifter.

Xander Yikes. The quality of mercy is not Buffy.

Willow Whose ghost do you think we're dealing with? His or hers?

Buffy Well, considering how violent it is, I'm gonna say his.

Xander That tracks.

Willow *sits* Well, I've been browsing on some of Ms. Calendar's pagan sites. Maybe I can find a way to communicate with them and... we can find out what he wants.

Buffy Who cares what he wants? We need to shut him down before some other innocent guy goes and kills some poor nice girl and then blows his brains out all over the music room wall.

Xander Okay! *smiles and rubs his hands* Who's hungry? Cut to the cafeteria. Kraut dogs and spaghetti are on the menu today. Cordelia has opted for spaghetti, and after paying comes over to the team's table with her tray.

Cordelia I hope you guys aren't going to the Sadie Hawkins Dance tonight, *sits* 'cause I'm organizing a boycott. Do you realize that the girls have to ask the guys? And pay and everything? I mean, whose genius idea was that?

Xander Obviously, some hairy-legged feminist.

Cordelia Really! Well, we need to nip this thing in the bud. I mean, otherwise, things are going to get really scary.

Suddenly they hear several students scream. The hot-dogs and spaghetti have all turned into snakes. A boy pulls his snakedog away from his mouth. He has a snake protruding from his lips. He drops the bun, spits out the snake and quickly gets up, backing away from his table. Xander and the others look back at their table and see snakes all over it as well. They quickly get up, except for Cordelia, who is too busy screaming to think. When she finally looks at the table again a snake lunges at her and bites her on the cheek. She reacts fast, throws the snake off of her and runs. Snyder comes through the door and sees the mayhem. He steps back just as a student comes running by and falls over a table. Moments later the cafeteria is deserted.

Cut to later outside. The police are there. A team of pest controllers is gathering the snakes, which in the mean time have managed to make their way all around the school. Students are still fleeing the building and running around. Cut to an ambulance. Cordelia and Xander sit at the back while a paramedic dresses Cordelia's snakebite.

Cordelia Perfect. I'm gonna be scarred and swollen. Why didn't they just kill me?

Cut to the Police Chief's car. Snyder holds the door open as the Chief gets out.

Chief Schoolboy pranks?

Snyder Never sell. *slams the door and they walk*

Chief The sewer got backed up.

Snyder Better. I can probably make that one fly. But this is getting out of hand. People will talk.

Chief You'll take care of it.

Snyder I'm doing everything I can, but you people have to realize...

Two men arrive.

Man Snyder, what's going on here?

Snyder Backed up sewer line. Same thing happened in San Diego just last week.

The two men continue into the building.

Snyder to the Chief We're on a Hellmouth. Sooner or later, people are gonna figure that out.

Chief The city council was told that you could handle this job. If you feel that you can't, perhaps you'd like to take that up... with the Mayor. *leaves*

Snyder I'll handle it. I will.

Cut to Buffy's house that night. Cut inside to her room. She's on her bed, Xander is in her wicker chair, Cordelia is kneeling and leaning against the bed and Willow is standing.

Willow Remember the plan to contact the spirit and talk to it? Scrap that plan. Buffy, you were right. The time for touchy-feely communication is passed. I've done some homework and found the only solution is the final solution.

Xander Nuke the school? *smiles* I like that.

Willow Not quite. Exorcism.

Cordelia Are you crazy? I saw that movie! Even the priest died.

Buffy What's the deal?

Willow lays down a map of the school building, and they all lean in to look.

Willow Okay, see here, the balcony? That's where the original teacher died back in 1955 and that teacher last night. That's the hot spot where all the bad mojo is coming from. We need to create a Mangus-tripod.

Cordelia A what?

Willow *points* One person chants here on the hot spot. And the other three chant in other places around the school forming a triangle. It's supposed to bind the bad spirit and keep it from doing any more harm.

Buffy Well, I'll take the hot spot. *takes the map* If there's trouble, that's where it'll be.

Willow nods.

Xander This ghost, this James guy, is fixating on you, Buffy. The dreams, the yearbook... You sure you can handle it?

Buffy Well, I'm hoping he'll show. I truly am.

Cut to the school that night. They all come into the hall from outside.

Buffy Okay, we all have our places. We do the chant and light the candle at midnight exactly. Any questions?

Cordelia Yeah, what if this mangled triangle thingy doesn't work?

Willow Oh! I almost forgot. I made us all scapulas. *hands them out*

Xander Okay, so we can flip the ghost over when it turns a nice golden brown?

Willow Scapula, not spatula. Um, you wear it around your neck for protection.

Cordelia You expect me to wear this? It smells like grandpa breath.

Willow Sorry, I didn't have a lot of time. I had to use sulfur. Stinky, but effective.

Buffy Okay, let's do this.

They all continue into the student lounge.

Cordelia No problem. This will be a piece of cake. Right?

They hear a creaking and then a crashing noise. They jump and look in that direction and see that the doors at the end of the hall have slammed shut on their own. One by one the other doors at the ends of the two intersecting halls slam shut.

Part 3

The atrium in the mansion. Drusilla sifts through the dirt in one of the large planters. Spike is in his wheelchair, and Angelus is on the bench behind Drusilla.

Drusilla Maybe I'll sleep underground. Dig myself a little burrow.

Spike What about your pretty dress, sweet? It'll get all dirty.

Drusilla Then I'll sleep naked. Like the animals do.

Angelus You know, I'm suddenly liking this plan.

Drusilla lies down on the ground in front of the planter.

Spike Fortunately, nobody cares what you like, mate.

Angelus Oh, yeah? Let's ask Dru.

He slides off of the bench and crouches, looking at Drusilla. She begins to laugh as she has a vision.

Drusilla There's a gate! *rolls onto her back, laughing* It's opening! *gets to her knees*

Angelus Incoming! I love when she does this.

Spike What gate, pet? What do you see?

Drusilla *bounces gleefully* It's black. *hums* It wants her. *hums*

Angelus *crawls up behind her* Wants who?

Drusilla The Slayer. It's time, Angel. *stands up* She's ready for you now. *begins to move* She's dancing. Dancing with death.

Spike Big deal. He won't do anything. Our man Angel here likes to talk but he's not much for action. All hat and no cattle.

Angelus *grabs Dru's waist* I don't know about that. *turns her around* I think this whole Slayer thing has run its course. *crouches down by her* I'm ready to focus my energy elsewhere.

Spike Really?

Angelus Oh, yeah! What, with you being Special Needs Boy, I figure I should stick close to home. *walks his fingers up Dru's thigh and waist* You and Dru can always use another pair of hands.

Drusilla coos with delight. Angelus chuckles maniacally. Spike looks at the two of them angrily.

Cut to the hall outside of the school library. Willow walks along and slows down to look down the other hall before continuing. Behind her Giles opens the door,

and she screams out in fright. He startles and yells out, too.

Giles God, Willow, what are you doing here? You're not supposed to be inside.

Willow Me? What about you?

Giles I'm, uh, I'm, I'm trying to, uh... *puts on his glasses* I think I-I may be close to, uh, contacting Jenny.

Willow gives him an understanding look. He starts to go back into the library, but turns back.

Giles What's that smell?

Willow It's my scapula.

Giles Ah, right, of course. Did you use sulfur?

Willow Yeah.

Giles That's clever. Uh, well, uh, run along then. There may be some, uh, paranormal ph-phenomena if I contact her. Y-y-you don't want to be in the line of fire. He goes back in, and the door swings shut behind him.

Willow Okay. 'Night.

Cut to a girls' bathroom. Cordelia comes in with her candle and flashlight and looks around. The place is deserted. She sees her reflection in the mirror with a bandage on her cheek. She walks over to it and sets the candle down on the shelf. She pulls off the bandage and winces at the pain. Leaning toward the mirror she inspects the twin fang marks on her cheek.

Cut to the hall. Buffy walks along and hears the song "I Only Have Eyes For You", by The Flamingos, playing somewhere. Down another hall she can see shadows in a bright light dancing against a wall.

Lyrics My love must be a kind of blind love

She walks toward the sound and through a pair of doors.

Lyrics I can't see anyone but you

Beyond them is another set of doors to the music room. A Class of '55 Sadie Hawkins Dance flyer is taped to one of the door windows. She steps over to the other door and looks in. There she sees James and Grace dancing slowly to the music.

Cut to the cafeteria. There are still a few snakes there. Xander comes in and looks around.

Xander Oh, yeah, baby, it's snakalicious in here.

Cut to the landing up the stairs from the student lounge. Willow steps up to it and looks around nervously.

Cut to Buffy watching James and Grace slowly turn as they dance.

Lyrics The moon may be high / but I can't see a thing in the sky

When James turns into view again Buffy sees that his face is all rotted.

Lyrics 'Cause I only have eyes for you

Buffy stares back in open-mouthed shock. James and Grace are suddenly gone.

Cut to the girls' bathroom. Cordelia digs in her purse for some makeup. When she looks back up and is about to put some on, the side of her face with the snakebite suddenly becomes rotten. She screams at the top of her lungs.

Cut to the landing. Willow sets her candle down on the floor. Below her the floor suddenly starts to swirl, and a green demonic hand reaches up and grabs her, pulling her down. She screams for all she's worth, and grabs the stair railing to keep from being pulled in.

Willow screams GILES!

He hears her screams and comes running.

Giles WILLOW!

Willow GILES! GILES!

The pull is too strong, and she loses her grip on the railing.

Giles WHERE ARE YOU?!

He comes running into the lounge area.

Willow PLEASE! HELP! HELP ME!

He turns and sees her sinking into the floor. He scrambles up the stairs to her aid.

Willow HELP! HELP! HELP! HELP!

He grabs her arms and starts to pull. She screams again as the pit continues to try to suck her in. Giles lets out a grunt and manages to slowly lift her out. When she's free of the pit she suddenly snaps into his arms, and they both go rolling down the stairs.

Cut to the balcony. Buffy puts her scapula around her neck and pulls her hair out of the back. Suddenly she senses something and stares off into space. She has a vision of Ms. Newman running out of the hall onto the balcony being chased by James with his gun.

James Stop!

Cut to Ms. Newman facing James.

Ms. Newman Just calm down.

Cut to James shaking the gun at her. It goes off. Cut to Ms. Newman clutching her chest over the bullet wound. She pulls her hand away and looks at the blood. Cut to Buffy for just an instant. Cut to James walking into the music room. Cut to him putting on a record. Cut to him crying. Cut to him raising the gun to his

head. Cut to him crying again as he pulls the trigger. Cut to Buffy on the balcony. James comes up to her with a rotted face and grabs her by the arms.

James Get out!

The vision of him fades quickly, and she takes a few steps back.

Cut to the girls' bathroom. Cordelia is panting with fear, covering her face with her hands. She looks into the mirror again and sees that her face is suddenly normal again. She pulls her hands away, takes a closer look and begins to calm down a bit.

Cut to the lounge. Giles gets up and goes up a few steps to make sure that the pit is gone. He comes back down to Willow.

Giles Are you all right?

Willow *still frightened* Giles, *shakes her head* Jenny could never be this mean.

Giles *glances up at the landing* I know. *sits* It's, it's not her, is it?

Willow I'm sorry.

The town clock begins to strike midnight.

Willow Oh, God. Oh.

She scrambles back up to the landing to light the candle. He follows.

Giles Careful up here!

Cut to the girls' bathroom. Cordelia is nervous but ready with her candle and lighter.

Cut to the balcony. Buffy strikes a match and lights her candle.

Cut to the landing. Willow struggles with her lighter. The flame won't ignite. Giles crouches down, takes it from her and lights the candle.

Willow I shall confront and expel all evil.

Cut to the girls' bathroom. Cordelia lights her candle.

Cordelia I shall **totally** confront and expel all evil.

Cut to the cafeteria. Xander sits on a table with his lit candle before him. He has his legs crossed, hands folded and eyes closed as if in prayer.

Xander Out of marrow and bone...

Cut to the balcony. Buffy lights her candle.

Buffy Out of house and home... never to come here again.

Cut to the landing. Giles and Willow look around. Nothing is happening. Cut to the cafeteria. Xander opens his eyes. Nothing happens there either. Cut to the bathroom. Cordelia looks around also. All seems quiet. Cut to the balcony. Buffy watches as a breeze blows out her candle. She looks in the direction of the gust. Cut to the landing. The candle there has been blown out, too. Giles and Willow exchange a look. Cut to the cafeteria. Xander's candle is out also. He looks around nervously. Cut to the girls' bathroom. Cordelia watches the smoke

drift from the glowing wick. Cut to the lounge. Giles and Willow come down the stairs and look down the hall. They hear a faint buzzing. It steadily gets louder. At the far end of the hall they see a dark swarm of wasps coming toward them.

Giles Oh, my God!

They both break into a dead run. As they round a corner Buffy and Cordelia join them from another hall.

Giles You all right?

Xander comes running out of the cafeteria and keeps pace. They reach the far end of the hall where the doors are jammed shut.

Buffy Get back!

Giles backs off, and Buffy kicks the door open, shattering the glass. They all immediately run out. The wasps are right behind them. When they reach the street Xander looks back and stops.

Xander Check it.

They all stop and turn to look as well.

Xander I'd say school's out for good.

They all stare in amazement. Giles takes off his glasses. The wasps have arranged themselves in a wall around the school so that nothing can get in or out.

Cut to the living room at Buffy's house. She leans against the wall. Giles and the others are seated around the coffee table. He pours some tea for himself. There is also a pot of coffee for the others.

Giles The good news is none of you girls were shot. Well, we've established, based on all the parallels and-and Buffy's visions, that it's James' spirit.

Willow So what do we do, Giles? About James.

Giles Well, he's obviously reliving the night of the Sadie Hawkins Dance when he killed Ms. Newman. It-it's-it's common enough for a spirit to do this, to... recreate a, a tragedy.

Cordelia *munches a cracker* Hey. If Sunnydale High School shuts down forever, do we automatically graduate?

Xander *ignores her* But why? What does he want? *thinks again about Cordelia's question* Actually, that's an interesting point.

Giles He's, he's trying to... resolve whatever issues are keeping him in limbo. W-w-what exactly those are, I'm not...

Buffy *interrupts* He wants forgiveness.

Giles *leans back* Yes. *gets up* I imagine he does. *goes to her* But when James possesses people, they act out exactly what happened that night. So he's experiencing a form of purgatory instead. I mean, he's, he's doomed to, to kill his Ms. Newman over and over and over again, and... forgiveness is impossible.

Buffy Good. He doesn't deserve it.

Giles To forgive is an act of compassion, Buffy. It's, it's not done because people deserve it. It's done because they need it.

Buffy No. James destroyed the one person he loved the most in a moment of blind passion. And that's not something you forgive. No matter why he did what he did. And no matter if he knows now that it was wrong and selfish and stupid, it is just something he's gonna have to live with.

Xander He can't live with it, Buff. He's dead.

She just looks back at them all for a moment, then stalks off into the kitchen.

Cordelia Okay. Overidentify much? *munches her cracker*

Cut to the kitchen. Buffy comes in. She has her hands in her pockets and finds a folded sheet of paper. She pulls it out and unfolds it. It's a Class of '55 Sadie Hawkins Dance flyer. She puts down the flyer and hears a faint male voice.

Voice I need you.

She goes out the kitchen door.

Cut to the living room. Willow gets up from her chair.

Willow So what do we do next? Do we go in again?

Giles Well, not now. No, the, uh... the spirit is too angry, too, too powerful. No, we have to work out exactly how and, and if this thing can be defeated.

Cut to the school. It is still surrounded by the swarm of wasps. Buffy walks up to it anyway. The swarm parts to let her in. When she reaches the doors they open for her, and the swarm closes the gap behind her.

Part 4

The kitchen at Buffy's house. Willow comes in looking for her.

Willow Hey, Buffy, are you...

See sees the flyer lying on the island and picks it up.

Willow Oh, God. Giles! *he comes in* She went back.

Cut to the school. They all stand in front of it looking at the swarm.

Xander So what now? Not even a mega-vat of Raid's gonna do the trick here.

Cordelia I don't get it. Is she trying to be a big loner hero or something?

Giles No. I believe she's under the spirit's thrall. He's, he's calling her.

Cordelia But why?

Giles James needs her to re-enact everything that happened on the night that he, he killed Ms. Newman. He wants to change things, make, make a happy ending.

Willow But it can't ever happen! It always ends the

same, which means Buffy just went in there to get shot, Giles.

Giles Yes. But the school's deserted. There's no way for James to... to play his part. There's, there's no man inside for him to possess.

Xander So Buffy should be safe until we find a way to get her out.

Willow In theory, yeah.

Cut inside the school. Buffy walks idly through the halls. She stops by the trophy case and turns around. Angelus walks in and blocks the camera's view.

Angelus Fun fact about wasps.

Cut to Buffy with her back to Angelus.

Angelus They have no taste for the undead. Not that a sting would do me any damage, it's just... tonight's special. I wanted to look my best for you.

Buffy quietly You're the only one. The only person I can talk to.

Angelus Gosh, Buff. That's really pathetic.

Buffy faces him You can't make me disappear just because you say it's over.

Angelus Actually... *approaches her* I can. In fact... I just want you to be able to have some kind of normal life. We can never have that, don't you see?

Buffy I don't give a **damn** about a normal life! I'm going crazy not seeing you. I think about you every minute.

He raises his hand to her cheek. Cut to 1955. Grace puts her hand on James' cheek. He looks down sadly.

Ms. Newman I know. But it's over. It has to be!

She turns around and starts to leave. He looks up again and starts to chase after her. Cut to 1998. Buffy chases after Angelus.

Buffy angrily Come back here! We're not finished!

She grabs him by the arm and turns him around to face her.

Buffy You don't care anymore, is that it?

Angelus sobbing It doesn't matter, it doesn't matter what I feel.

Buffy Then tell me you don't love me!

Cut to 1955.

James Say it!

Ms. Newman Is that what you need to hear? Will that help? I don't.

Cut to 1998.

Angelus I don't. Now let me go. *tries to go*

Buffy No. A person doesn't just wake up and stop loving somebody!

Cut to 1955. Grace looks at James. He takes a step back, raises a revolver, pulls the hammer back and aims it at her. Cut to 1998. Angelus looks at the gun and then at Buffy, frightened.

Buffy Love is forever. I'm not afraid to use it, I swear! If I can't be with you...

Angelus Oh, my God!

He turns around and starts running out of the hall toward the balcony. Cut to 1955. Grace runs from the hall.

James DON'T WALK AWAY FROM ME...

Cut to 1998.

Buffy ...BITCH!

Angelus runs out of the hall. She runs after him. Cut to 1955. James runs after Grace. Cut to 1998. Angelus barges through the door out onto the balcony.

Buffy Stop it! *comes out the door* Stop it! Don't make me!

He stops next to the balcony railing.

Angelus breathing heavily with fear All right. Just... *turns around*

Cut to 1955. Grace turns around to face James.

Ms. Newman You know you don't want to do this. Let's both... just calm down. Now give me the gun. *holds out her hand*

James Don't. Don't do that, damn it!

Cut to 1998.

Buffy Don't talk to me like I'm some stupid...

The gun goes off. Angelus flinches from the wound. Cut outside the school. Giles and the others hear the gunshot. Willow draws a worried breath. Cut to the balcony. Angelus has his hand clutched to his chest. He pulls it away and sees the blood. He looks up at Buffy. She stares back in open-mouthed shock at what she just did.

Angelus James.

Cut to 1955. Grace goes into shock from the bullet wound and begins to fall backward. She tumbles over the balcony railing down to the base of the stairs below. Cut to 1998. Buffy just stares in shock. Cut to 1955. James sees Grace below lying dead with her eyes closed. He slowly goes back into the hall. Cut to 1998. Angelus lies prone at the base of the stairs below. Cut to the music room. Buffy slowly comes in. Cut to Angelus. His eyes suddenly open. He props himself up on his elbows and looks up at the balcony. Cut to the music room. Buffy walks to the record player at the back of the room. She turns it on and begins playing the record.

Lyrics My love must be a kind of blind love

She looks over into a mirror, and James looks back at her. Her eyes are full of tears as she looks at him. He looks down at the gun in his hand.

Lyrics I can't see anyone but you

The camera pans down from Buffy's face to the gun in her hand. She raises it slowly, but a hand takes it and pushes it back down. She turns and finds herself face to face with Angelus.

Buffy Grace!

Angelus Don't do this.

Buffy But-but I killed you.

Angelus It was an accident. It wasn't your fault.

Buffy Oh, it **is** my fault. How could I...

Angelus Shhh. I'm the one who should be sorry, James. You thought I stopped loving you. But I never did. I loved you with my last breath.

Buffy lets out a few sobs.

Angelus Shhh... No more tears.

Cut to 1955. Grace and James kiss. Cut to 1998. Angelus and Buffy kiss. They hold each other tightly as they continue kissing for a long time. Above them in the ceiling a bright light appears, and the spirits of Grace and James leave this world for the next. As quickly as it appeared the light is gone. Buffy and Angelus gently break off their kiss and open their eyes.

Buffy *softly* Angel.

Suddenly he growls, pushes her away and runs from the room, leaving Buffy there in shock.

Dissolve to the library. Giles paces behind the counter. The door opens, and Willow, Xander and Cordelia come in.

Willow Everything seems normal. Not a snake, not a wasp.

Cordelia Yep. School can open again tomorrow.

Xander Explain to me again how that's a good thing. They all lean against the counter.

Cordelia I'm drawing a blank.

Giles goes back into his office where Buffy is resting.

Giles Are you feeling any better?

Buffy James picked me. I guess... I guess I was the one he could relate to. He was so sad.

Giles *sits by her* Well... they can both rest now.

Buffy I still... *exhales* A part of me just doesn't understand why she would forgive him.

Giles Does it matter?

Buffy No. I guess not.

Cut to the atrium at the mansion. Angelus stands by the fountain bare-chested, breathing frantically and scrubbing himself hard with the water.

Spike You might want to let up. They say when you've drawn blood, you've exfoliated.

Angelus What do you know about it? I'm the one who was friggin' violated. You didn't have this thing in you. He walks from the fountain and passes Spike in disgust.

Drusilla What was it? A demon?

Angelus Love!

He grabs a clean shirt and starts to put it on.

Drusilla Poor Angel.

Angelus *walks back* Let's get outta here. I need a real vile kill before sunup to wipe this crap out of my system.

He pulls on his jacket over his still-unbuttoned shirt. Drusilla comes up to him and growls. He snarls back.

Drusilla Of course. We'll find you a nice toddler. *snarls* Angelus starts up the stairs out of the garden.

Drusilla *to Spike* Want to come, pet?

Angelus *comes back down* No can do, Dru. I'm sure he'd be hell on wheels, but we don't have much time. *to Spike* Gotta travel light. *puts his hands on Spike's shoulders* Sorry. Try to have fun without me.

He goes back up the stairs, and Drusilla makes haste to follow. Spike watches them go with an angry look on his face and exhales.

Spike Oh, I will.

He takes his foot from its footrest and puts it on the ground. He slowly gets up and stands tall, apparently recovered from his weakness. He kicks back at his wheelchair angrily. It goes spinning away. He looks back up at the garden entryway.

Spike Sooner than you think.

Go Fish

Written by David Fury & Elin Hampton

Directed by David Semel

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Go Fish". It also

includes descriptions of the settings, action scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.08

This episode was originally broadcast on May 5, 1998.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

Sunnydale State Beach at night. There is a large party going on with about fifty students in attendance. "Mann's Chinese", by Naked, plays in the background. The camera pans from a few parked cars through the crowd of students laughing and celebrating and stops at a fire, where Xander, Cordelia and Willow are warming themselves.

Xander All I'm saying is, it's a stupid idea to have a victory party at the beach. It's officially nippy. *looks down at himself* So say my nips.

Willow I think it's festive. A party with nature.

Cordelia Well, it's the team's choice. It was their victory.

Xander Team? Swim team. *chuckles* Hardly what I'd call a team. The Yankees. Abbott and Costello. The 'A'. Now, those were teams.

Cordelia Jealous?

Xander No. Y-yes, but 'no' more than 'yes'.

A member of the swim team staggers by with a girl under each arm.

Xander I mean, look at that. *indicates them* Dodd McAlvy. Last month he's the freak with Jicama breath who waxes his back. He wins a few meets and suddenly inherits the cool gene?

Cordelia Well, all I know is, my cheerleading squad wasted a lot of pep on losers. It's about time our school excelled at something.

Willow Hmm. You're forgetting our high mortality rate. Cordelia smiles at that.

Xander *pumps his fist* We're number one! *looks around* Huh?

He gets a few positive responses from nearby students. The camera pans from them over to Buffy sitting by her-

self behind a pile of sand and staring out over the ocean with a tuned-out look on her face. After a moment another member of the swim team approaches her from behind.

Cameron Beautiful. *stands behind her* Isn't it?

Buffy *still staring at the ocean* Yeah. It's just so...

Cameron Eternal. A true mother, giving birth to new life and devouring old. *sits behind her* Always adaptable and nurturing... yet... constant... and merciless.

Buffy *looks at him* Boy. I was just gonna go with big and wet.

Cameron *laughs* Me and some of the other guys on the team, we come out here once a week to train in it. See, we swim against the current.

Buffy Funny. That's how I feel most of the time. *turns to him* So, Cameron Walker, you just won the state semifinals. What are you going to do next?

Cameron I'm going to hang out with Buffy Summers. Get to know her.

Buffy *looks down for an instant* Hey, pause that tape for a second.

Cameron Hey. No pressure. I just like being around you. That's all.

They both look out over the ocean for a moment. Then behind them a lot of shouting and laughing starts.

Jonathan Somebody help me!

Buffy and Cameron both turn to look. Cut into the drink tub looking up through the ice floating on the surface. Jonathan's face gets pushed into the water and shaken around. Cut to Dodd harassing him. He pulls Jonathan's head back out of the tub and holds him back by the hair.

Dodd Come on, Jonny, you gotta hold your breath longer than that if you ever wanna make the team! Hey, somebody time him!

He shoves Jonathan's head back into the tub. Suddenly a hand appears on his shoulder and pulls him up, raising his short sleeve in the process. He has a tattoo of a mean-faced shark smoking a cigar on his upper arm.

Dodd Hey!

Buffy Nice tat. What, they ran out of Tweety bird? She shoves him down to the ground. Jonathan coughs at the side of the tub.

Dodd Hey, what's your problem?

Cameron *chuckles* You had it coming to you, bro.

Dodd gets up and starts to confront Buffy, but Gage gets between them.

Gage Chill, dude. A bunch of us are gonna take a little night dip down on the beach. You in?

Dodd Whatever.

They start to go. Buffy turns her attention to Jonathan.

Buffy Hey, let's, let's get you a towel.

Jonathan *waves her off* No. Why don't you mind your own business? I can handle this without your help. *leaves*

Buffy *sighs* See? It's fun to hang out with me.

Cut to Dodd and Gage walking further down the beach.

Dodd I can't believe Buffy. Man, that girl gives me the creeps.

He lags behind a bit and then stops, staring out over the ocean as Gage continues to walk. He looks back and forth with his eyes between the ocean and Gage walking ahead of him. After a long pause he continues to walk as well.

Cut to Gage. He smells something and stops in his tracks. He takes another sniff of the rank-smelling air.

Gage Oh! Dude! What is that foulness?

He looks behind him and sees that Dodd has disappeared.

Gage Hey, Dodd! *looks around the other way* Dude! *gives up* Huh.

He goes on to the group of people gathered under the pier. The camera stops following him and pans up the beach. A muffled scream can be heard followed by some tearing sounds and painful moaning. Finally a deep growl is heard as the camera reaches Dodd, or at least what's left of him. It's just a pile of ripped-up clothes and torn and bloody skin steaming in the cold night air. The camera stops on his shark tattoo for a moment, then pans up to a large storm drain coming out of the hillside. A hunched-over creature walks into it.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part 1

Computer science class at Sunnydale High School. The camera focuses on a pie chart appearing on a student's screen. Willow walks up the aisle, and the camera follows her through the classroom as she looks around at the students' work.

Willow Okay! Good pie charts, everyone. *looks at another* Good. *looks at another* All good.

Girl Thanks.

Willow *continues on* Nice. *walks around another* Good. *looks at Gage's PC* Gage. Your pie chart is looking a lot like solitaire... *looks closer* with naked ladies on the cards?

Gage *looks up at her* What's your point?

The bell rings, and Gage gets up to go.

Willow No point.

Principal Snyder walks into the room past the leaving students. He spots Gage and stops.

Snyder Nice work in yesterday's meet, son. Now, let's go for it. *pumps his fist*

Gage gives him an acknowledging nod and continues out of the classroom. Snyder turns his attention to Willow.

Willow Uh, hi there, sir.

Snyder Rosenberg. How's the class? Everything in order?

Willow *worried* Well, actually...

Snyder *interrupts* Great. I've been talking to the board. We've been having trouble finding a competent teacher this late in the term. Do you think you could continue subbing through finals?

Willow *smiles* Oh! Sure! I like teaching.

Snyder Isn't that nice. You're a team player, and I like that. A team player wants everyone on the team to succeed. Wants everyone to pass.

Willow Well, yeah. Sure. *goes to her desk*

Snyder *follows her* I understand there's a problem with Gage Petronzi.

He stops at one of the PC's and looks at it with his back to Willow.

Willow Oh, good, then you know. Well, yeah. Besides the behavior problem, he won't do homework, and his test scores are...

Snyder looks up exasperated, not wanting to hear this.

Willow Well, actually, he doesn't have any test scores because he never shows up when we have...

Snyder *turns to her and interrupts* I'm not interested in any of that. I'm interested in why, when this school is on the brink of winning its first state championship in fifteen years, you slap a crucial member of that team with a failing mark that would force his removal. Is that how you show your school spirit?

Willow *flustered* Yes. Well, I mean... no. I'm just trying to grade fairly.

Snyder Gage is a champion. He's under more pressure than the other students. And I think we need to cut him some slack.

He starts to leave the classroom. Willow considers his words for a moment.

Willow You're asking me to change his grade? *faces him*

Snyder *stops and turns back* I never said any such thing. *steps over to her* All I'm suggesting is... that you recheck your figures, and I think we'll find a grade more fitting to an athlete of Gage's stature. Perhaps something in a 'D'.

He turns and leaves. Willow is unsure of how to deal with what he just told her.

Cut to the halls. Xander, Cordelia and Willow come down the stairs and walk down the hall.

Xander Just like that? He actually told you to alter his grade?

Willow Exactly. Except for actually telling me to. But he made it perfectly clear of what he wasn't telling me.

Xander That is wrong, a big, fat, spanking wrong. It's a slap in the face to every one of us who studied hard and worked long hours to **earn** our D's.

Cordelia Xander, I know you take pride in being the voice of the common wuss, but the truth is, certain people are entitled to special privileges. They're called winners. That's the way the world works.

Xander And what about that nutty 'all men are created equal' thing?

Cordelia Propaganda spouted out by the ugly and less deserving.

Xander I think that was Lincoln.

Cordelia *exhales* Disgusting mole and stupid hat.

Willow Actually, it was Jefferson.

Cordelia Kept slaves. Remember?

Xander You know what really grates my cheese? That Buffy's not here to share my moral outrage about swim team perks.

Cut to Cameron's Mustang pulling up to the school. Buffy is in the passenger's seat.

Xander She's too busy being one of them.

Cameron I don't know, a dolphin. A dolphin in the ocean. Because, you know, when I'm in the vastness of the ocean, it's... *they pull to a stop* it's like I'm never alone.

He turns off the engine and leans against his door to face Buffy. She leans her elbow against her door with her head propped up on her hand.

Cameron You ever hear of a woman named Gertrude Ederle?

Buffy No. No, I can't say that I have, Cam.

Cameron First woman to swim the English Channel. *Buffy nods slowly, bored* Same thing. I mean, she would talk to it. I mean, she'd carry on entire conversations with it. Sometimes I do that. I mean, once I was out in...

Buffy *sits up* You know what, Cam? Thanks. I'd forgotten how nice it is to just talk, or, in my case, listen, without any romantic pressure.

Cameron Hey... I'm not about pressure. I just want you to be comfortable.

Buffy *smiles* I'm comfy! I'm so comfy, I'm nodding off actually, which is why...

Cameron *interrupts* Are you wearing a bra? *looks at her suggestively*

Buffy *in disbelief* What?

Cameron *grins* Come on. I mean, tell me you haven't been thinking about this ever since last night.

Buffy What I'm thinking about is that I should probably get out of this car...

She reaches for the door lever, but Cameron quickly hits the master lock button, locking her in.

Cameron Relax. I'm not gonna hurt you.

Buffy Oh, it's not me I'm worried about.

Cameron *snickers* You like it rough!

He reaches over to put his arm around her, and she grabs it and pulls him down toward her.

Cameron Ow!

With her other hand she grabs the back of his neck and jerks him up.

Cameron Oh!

She smashes his head into the steering wheel. The horn honks.

Cameron Oh!

He sits up and holds his nose in pain.

Cameron Ah!

Buffy notices Principal Snyder outside of the car. He walks up to the front and looks in through the windshield at her.

Cameron Oh, you broke my nose!

Buffy cringes at the sight of Principal Snyder.

Cameron Ah!

Snyder raises his hand and motions with his finger for her to come with him. Cameron groans in pain.

Cut to Nurse Greenleigh's office. She slams a cold pack onto a table to start the chemical reaction and kneads it a little before holding it up to Cameron's nose and gently laying it on.

Cameron Ow!

He takes hold of it, and the nurse leaves him alone. The camera pans over to Buffy.

Buffy I wasn't the attacker, Principal Snyder. I was the attacked.

Snyder That's not how it looked from where I was standing.

Cameron I don't know what happened. I mean, first she leads me on, then she goes schizo on me.

Buffy *steps over to him* Lead you on? When did I lead you on?

Cameron Oh, come on. *to Snyder* I mean, look at the way she dresses.

She looks down at herself. The door opens, and the swim team coach, Carl Marin, comes in. Buffy steps back and leans against a table.

Snyder Coach.

Coach Marin How we doing, Cameron? *goes to him*

Snyder *follows* Coach Marin, how bad does it look?

Coach Marin Well, luckily, it's not broken, but sure as hell it's gonna sting for a few days.

Snyder *leads the coach away from Cam* I mean our chances of winning the state championship.

Coach Marin Oh.

Snyder Can we still do it?

Coach Marin I'm gonna need Cameron back at a hundred and ten percent. Uh, he's my best swimmer, now with Dodd, uh...

Buffy What happened to Dodd?

Snyder That's none of your concern. You'd better hope that boy's nose heals before the meet this Friday.

Coach Marin *goes to Cam* Walker, I want you to hit the steam room as soon as you're done here and try to keep those sinuses clear. *to the nurse* Take care of my boy, Ruthie.

Nurse Greenleigh I always do.

Coach Marin *steps over to Buffy* And you... try to dress more appropriately from now on. This isn't a dance club.

He leaves the office. Snyder gives Buffy a look and follows the coach out. Cameron looks over at her and grins.

Cut to the library. Buffy stands between the cage and the table and talks toward the table behind the camera.

Buffy So I'm treated like the baddie just because he has a sprained wrist and a bloody nose. *considers* And I don't have a scratch on me, which, granted, hurts my case a little on the surface, but meanwhile he gets away with it because he's on the 'aren't we the most' swim team...

The camera cuts to show Xander, Giles and Willow studying a number of books at the table. They all look up at her.

Buffy ...who, by the way, if no one's noticed, have been acting like real jerks lately...

She notices their expressions of impatience and tries to find some sympathy there. They have none to give.

Buffy So, *giggles nervously* anything new with you guys? *sits*

Giles Thank you for taking an interest. Apparently, some remains were found on the beach this morning. Some human remains.

Willow Dodd McAlvy's remains.

Buffy Vampire?

Giles No. No, he was eviscerated. Nothing left but skin and cartilage.

Xander In other words, this was no boating accident.

Buffy So something ripped him open and ate out his insides?

Willow Like an Oreo Cookie. *Xander shoots her a look* Well, except for, you know, without the chocolatey cookie goodness.

Giles Yes. Um, Principal Snyder has, has asked the faculty to keep the news quiet for now, um, so as not to unduly upset the students.

Xander For 'students': read 'swim team'.

Willow So, we're looking for a beastie.

Giles That, uh, eats humans whole... except for the skin. *looks into his book*

Buffy This doesn't make any sense.

Xander Yeah. The skin's the best part.

Buffy Any demons with high cholesterol?

Giles slowly turns to her and gives her a look.

Buffy *points at Giles* You're gonna think about that later, mister, and you're gonna laugh.

Cut to the steam room in the boy's locker room. Cameron sits in it alone. Cut to another view of the locker room. The camera pans around it. The place is deserted. Cut to the steam room. Cameron feels his nose and groans. Cut to the locker room. The camera slowly moves through it and looks around. Cut to the steam room. Cameron hears a noise and looks up and around. Cut to the locker room. The camera has reached the steam room. On the adjacent lockers a shadow can be seen approaching the door. Cut inside the steam room. Cameron ignores the noise and goes back to relaxing. Suddenly the door to the room opens, and he looks up startled and sees the coach come in.

Coach Marin Okay, son, I think you've had enough. Time to hit the shower. *walks off*

Cut to the student lounge. Xander walks down the hall counting out change in his hand.

Xander Too much research. Need beverage.

He walks through the doors to the lounge area and is practically run over by Cameron coming down the other hall at a fast pace, knocking Xander's change onto the floor.

Cameron Hey! Watch it.

Xander Oh, forgive me, your Swim Teamliness.

He makes a bowing gesture as he bends down to pick up his change. Cameron turns to go.

Cameron Loser.

Xander Likin' the nose, Cam. Good look for you. *stands back up*

Cameron Meaning what? *faces Xander*

Xander *steps over to Cam* Meaning Buffy must not be on your list of privileges after all. *chuckles while Cam crosses his arms* Man, I love it when you guys mess with her.

Cameron *shakes his head* You're lucky I'm hungry.

Xander *in mock sympathy* Oh, the cafeteria's closed.

Cameron Not to me. *leaves*

Xander guffaws as he watches him go.

Cut to the cafeteria. The camera pans past the empty steam table. Cameron walks in the door and starts toward the kitchen. Halfway through the dining area he stops and sniffs the air.

Cameron God, what is that?

Cut to the hall. Xander stands in front of the vending machine and contemplates his choice of beverage, pointing at the buttons on the front panel.

Xander Grape, orange. Orange, grape.

Suddenly he hears screaming and loud crashing noises coming from the cafeteria and turns to look, then starts to run.

Cut to the cafeteria. Xander comes rushing in. He slowly walks through while looking around. The place is a shambles, with tables and chairs knocked over everywhere. He sniffs the air and looks down as he passes a table. There he sees Cameron's remains, just a pile of torn clothes and steaming skin.

Xander Oh, my God.

He puts his hand over his mouth in shock and fights back his urge to vomit. He straightens back up and turns to go. Standing there blocking his way is a dark green humanoid sea monster with catfish whiskers, sharp teeth and three scaly ridges across the top of its head, roaring loudly. Xander screams and backs away.

Part 2

The library. Xander is standing behind Cordelia sitting at the table and watches her sketch the monster he saw.

Xander No, no, no! The mouth's a lot bigger! And downward. Like this.

She looks at him make a face with the corners of his mouth turned down, and she sighs.

Xander With more teeth!

She's had enough. She puts the sketchpad down, gets up and goes over to Giles at the counter.

Cordelia I'm doing the best I can.

Giles takes off his glasses and looks up from his book over at Xander.

Giles Is that what you saw, Xander?

Xander *picks up and looks at the sketch* Y... yeah! *considers* I think so. *considers some more* Pretty much.

Giles Aaaaare you sure?

Cordelia faces Xander and crosses her arms.

Xander Well, it was dark! And the thing went through the window so quick, and I was a... little shocked when I saw it, and...

Cordelia Go ahead. Say it. You ran like a woman. *grins*

Xander Hey, if you saw this thing, you'd run like a woman, too.

Willow and Buffy come into the library and head for the counter.

Willow Buffy was right. According to the statistics, Dodd and Cameron were the best swimmers on the team. *hands Giles the figures*

Buffy First and second, actually. Which means if my theory's correct, Gage Petronzi, the third-best swimmer

on the team, would be the next item on the menu.

Cordelia God, this is so sad. We're never gonna win the state championship. I think I've lost all will to cheer-lead.

Xander *goes to the counter* Raise your hand if you feel her pain.

Cordelia gives him a disgusted look.

Giles If you're saying these killings aren't random, it would suggest someone's out for revenge.

Buffy And raise the possibility that someone brought forth this sea monster from whence it came to exact that revenge. *reconsiders her words* 'From whence it came'? *Willow smiles to Giles* I'm spending **way** too much time around you.

Xander Who would hate the swim team that much, though? *gets looks from Buffy and Cordelia* Besides me, I mean.

Willow *raises her hand* Ooo!

Buffy Willow?

Willow Jonathan! He was bullied by Dodd the other day on the beach, remember?

Buffy He did say he could take care of things himself. It's a good call. You should question him.

Willow *smiles* Really? Me? *menacingly* I'll crack him like an egg.

Giles Meanwhile, I think, uh, swimmer number three might benefit from your... watchful eye and protection. Discreetly, of course.

Buffy I'm on it. *leaves*

Xander What about me? What can I do?

Cordelia Well, you could go out to the parking lot and practice running like a man.

Xander hugs his arms around himself to protect against the sting of her words.

Cut to the student lounge. Gage is sitting and playing with his GameBoy on one of the couches with his feet up on the table. The camera pulls back until Buffy is also in view, sitting in a chair and watching him while pretending to read a magazine. Gage can feel her eyes on him and shoots her a glance. Buffy quickly jerks her head back to stare into her magazine. Gage shakes the feeling off and goes back to his GameBoy. Buffy slowly turns her head to watch him again.

Cut to Willow's classroom. Jonathan is sitting in a chair at the front of the room. Willow aims a reading lamp at him. The camera pans from it up to her face, determined to get what she wants out of him.

Willow So, Jonathan. *crosses her arms* You tried out for the swim team twice and never made it?

Jonathan *fidgets* I'm asthmatic. I couldn't keep up.

Willow You resented it, didn't you?

Jonathan Maybe.

Willow *approaches him* You hated being pushed around by Dodd and the others.

Jonathan So?

Willow *walks around to his other side* So, you wanted revenge. Didn't you? *leans in suddenly sternly* Didn't you?!

Jonathan *nervously* Yeah! Okay? I did!

Willow *smiles and straightens back up* So... You delved into the black arts and conjured up a hellbeast from the ocean's depths to wreak your vengeance.

Jonathan Huh?

Willow Didn't you?

Jonathan *confused* What? No! I snuck in yesterday and... peed in the pool.

Willow *disappointed* Oh. *disgusted* Eww!

He looks down in shame.

Cut to the halls. Principal Snyder and Coach Marin walk in from outside and walk into the student lounge.

Coach Marin This is such a blow. Sooner or later, the rest of my boys are gonna find out. How can I ask them to swim?

Snyder *quietly* It's a terrible, terrible tragedy. We all feel your pain, coach. I don't know two finer boys than Cameron and... that other one. *they stop* But I know they'd want their friends to go on and win that state championship. It's time to think about the team.

Coach Marin Well, I don't have a complete team as it is. If we don't find someone by this afternoon's tryouts, we won't be eligible to compete.

Snyder You'll find someone. *they continue* All he has to do is wear a bathing suit, right?

The camera follows them for a moment and then stops on Xander. He overheard, and he looks back and watches them go.

Cut to the Bronze. There's a DJ tonight and no cover charge. People come and go. Cut inside. The DJ is playing "If You'd Listen", by Nero's Rome. Buffy is at the bar sucking on a drink and watching Gage at a pool table practicing shots by himself.

Lyrics If you'd listen, we wouldn't have to go through this

Gage takes a shot and makes it. He walks around the table for his next one.

Lyrics If you'd just let me finish / Stop cuttin' and jumpin' ahead

Gage bends down and makes his next shot.

Lyrics Yeah, if you'd just shut your pretty mouth / You'd save yourself some tears

Buffy is bored at the bar, and gets up. She looks around nonchalantly and walks closer to the table, then gets behind a pillar and peeks out from behind it at Gage. Her change of position is not lost on Gage, and he stiffens up, frustrated at being watched so closely. He shoots her a look, and she quickly looks away. Gage has had enough. He puts down his pool cue and walks around behind the pillar.

Lyrics You came back from the bathroom

Buffy peeks back at the pool table and sees he's gone. She steps around to the other side of the pillar to look around and practically runs into Gage.

Lyrics With somethin' on your shoe

She steps back over to the pool table side of the pillar, and Gage follows her around the other way and leans against it.

Lyrics Yeah, draggin' it behind you

Gage This me-and-my-shadow act? It's getting old. What do you want from me?

Lyrics Lookin' kinda foolish

Buffy Well, um... *exhales nervously* It's a little embarrassing. You see, I'm a swim groupie.

Gage *unconvinced* Aha.

Buffy Oh, yeah. *smiles and exhales* You know, there's just something about the smell of chlorine on a guy. Oh, baby.

Gage *disbelieving* Hmm. *turns to go*

Buffy *runs around him* Uh, okay, okay, okay. *stops him* Obviously, my sex appeal is on the fritz today, so I'll just give it to you straight. There's something lurking out there, and it's making fillets of the populace, and I think you might be next.

Gage Uh-huh. And you think that because?

Buffy Well, it's already attacked. It's already killed some people.

Gage You're one twisted sister, you know that? Cam told me about your games. Go find someone else to harass. He bumps her as he walks past her and out of the Bronze. Buffy sighs and looks down in defeat. Cut outside the Bronze. Gage comes striding out.

Gage What a psycho bitch, man.

Angelus comes out from behind a pile of crates.

Angelus Gotta be talking about Buffy.

Gage *stops and faces him* How'd you know?

Angelus Uh, she and I... had this thing once. Biggest mistake of my life.

Gage Yeah. My condolences, dude. *turns and goes*

Angelus *follows* She's a real head-tripper.

Gage Tell me about it. Girl acts like she's God's gift or something.

Angelus Who is she? The Chosen One?

Gage Exactly.

Angelus You know, what she really needs is for someone to really knock her down off her notches.

Gage Yeah, that'd be sweet. Anyone in mind?

Angelus You're in luck, my friend.

Gage turns to look at Angelus and sees that he has disappeared.

Angelus Just so happens...

Gage turns back quickly and sees Angelus standing there in front of him in his game face.

Angelus ...I'm recruiting.

Gage looks horrified as Angelus grabs him and bites his neck.

Gage No!

Buffy strolls out of the Bronze and hears Gage's screams.

Gage Ah! Somebody! Help! Ah! Help! Ah! Ah! Get him off me! Help! Ah!

She rushes to his aid. Cut to Angelus. He drops Gage and begins to spit out his blood. He wipes his mouth and spits some more. Buffy comes running around the corner, and just as he looks up she does a roundhouse kick to his face. He isn't fazed, and just looks at her. She pulls out the stick holding her hair up and holds it ready to stake him as her hair falls down around her face.

Angelus Why, Miss Summers! You're beautiful!

He quickly bends down, picks Gage up and throws him at her, knocking her to the pavement. He spits a few more times and leaves smiling.

Buffy scrambles to her feet and watches him go. Gage gets up also and rubs his neck.

Gage Oh. Was that the thing that killed Cameron?

Buffy No. That was something else.

Gage *confused* S-something else?

Buffy Yeah. Unfortunately, we have a lot of something else in this town. Good night. *goes*

Gage looks back and forth between Buffy and the direction Angelus went.

Gage Hey!

Buffy stops and looks back at him. He goes over to her.

Gage *laughs nervously* Walk me home?

She motions for him to follow, and they leave.

Cut to the pool at Sunnydale High School. Six members of the swim team are on the blocks ready to start a heat.

Coach Marin Swimmers! Take position!

They all bend down to dive in. The coach blows his whistle, and they're off. He walks along the edge of the pool past the stands as they swim. Willow, Buffy and Cordelia are watching from the stands. In the middle of the pool Gage stops, stands up and lifts off his goggles.

Coach Marin Keep the stroking up. Alright. Keep it going, keep it going all the way to the end. All the way to the end. Breathe deep.

Gage sees Buffy in the stands and waves to her. The coach blows his whistle. Buffy waves back to Gage discreetly, but Willow notices and gives her a smile. Buffy looks back at her with a smile.

Coach Marin Gage! You with us or not? *Gage swims off* C'mon, let's go!

Cordelia *to Buffy* So he spit it out? I thought Angel liked blood.

Buffy He used to.

Willow Maybe his eyes were too big for his stomach.

Buffy Or maybe there was something in Gage's blood that Angel didn't like. Say, for example, steroids.

Willow That would explain all their behavioral changes.

Cordelia And their winning streak.

Willow So maybe whatever's in their blood is what's attracting this creature to them.

Buffy Any luck researching our fish monster?

Cordelia Zippo. We couldn't find any sea demon that matched the description that Xander gave us. Not that Chicken Little's much of a witness, but...

Her eye is caught by a swimmer coming out of the locker room.

Cordelia Oh.

The camera cuts to a shot of the swimmer's knees and pans up along his athletic legs, past his crimson Speedo's and tight abs and up to his hairless chest.

Cordelia Oh! Oh, my! Now, that, girls, is my kind of...

The camera reaches the swimmer's face.

Willow Xander? *stares in wide-eyed shock*

Cordelia *shocked* Xander?!

When he hears their voices he scrambles over to a pile of kickboards, grabs the one off the top and hides himself behind it. The girls all get up and come down from

the stands. Xander scrambles over to them.

Cordelia What the hell are you doing here?

Xander Shh! I'm undercover.

Buffy Not under much. *grins*

Cordelia Get out of here before someone sees you impersonating a member of the swim team!

Xander I don't do impersonations. I tried out for the team last night. I made it.

Cordelia *intrigued* Really?

Xander Yeah. I figured I can keep an eye on Gage and the others when Buffy can't.

Willow *eyes wide* When you're nude? *gets a nudge from Buffy* I-I meant to say 'changing'.

Coach Marin Harris! You can flirt on your own time!

Xander Okey-dokey, coachie.

He backs away and goes to join the rest of the team, covering his butt with his free hand. He lamely tosses the kickboard back onto the pile, but it just falls off. He reaches the others and listens in on what the assistant swim coach is saying.

Cordelia *smiles proudly* I'm dating a swimmer from the Sunnydale swim team!

Buffy You can die happy.

She and Willow watch as Xander gets up on a starting block and puts on his swim cap.

Buffy to Willow What about Jonathan? Is he involved?

Willow Oh, no. He just... sort of... peed in the pool.

Buffy Oh.

The girls look back at Xander to watch as he dives in. His dive is a bit sloppy, but not at all bad. The girls all look on in wide-eyed shock as they realize what he just dove into.

Buffy *cringes* Oh!

Cut to the steam room after practice. The camera looks in through the window from the locker room. Xander joins the others and finds an available spot.

Xander Don't you guys get claustrophobic in here? *sits* I mean, what's the deal? You perspire a lot. You can't breathe. O-or read. I mean, I guess you could, but the pages would probably get all wet.

The camera pans down from the window to a grate in the floor of the locker room. Several green, clawed fingers poke through and lift up the grating.

Cut to the halls outside of the locker room. Buffy waits for Xander and Gage to come out. She leans against the wall and exhales. A moment later Xander comes out with a towel over his head, rubbing his hair dry.

Xander You gotta love this undercover deal. Twenty minutes in a hot room with a bunch of sweaty guys...

Buffy Where's Gage?

Xander I don't know. He was right behind me, putting his sneakers on. But it's not the Velcro kind, so give him a couple of extra minutes. *taps her on the shoulder* Tag. You're it. *leaves*

Buffy sighs and resigns herself to waiting.

Cut to the locker room. Gage is tying his shoes on a changing bench. He sniffs, smelling something foul. He sniffs at his own armpits to see if it isn't himself he smells. It's not, and he gets up to investigate. He walks through the locker room looking around, passing the steam room and the whirlpool bath. The smell gets stronger as he goes down a row of lockers. He sniffs deeply outside of one and opens it.

Cut to the hall. Buffy is still waiting for Gage to come out. Suddenly she hears him scream.

Gage OH, MY GOD!

She wastes no time running into the locker room.

Cut to the locker room. One of the monsters stands before Gage. It roars as he screams.

Gage Help me! Help me! Ah! Help me!

Buffy comes rushing in and pushes the terrified Gage away from the monster. The creature roars, and Buffy confronts it with a look of disgust, but it just stands there and doesn't move to attack her. Behind her Gage has collapsed to the floor and continues to scream, not in fear anymore but instead in agony, and writhes on the floor in pain. Buffy looks back at Gage, concerned.

Buffy Gage?

He reaches out to her for help, but can't get up and continues to convulse. Buffy takes a step closer, but then stops and stares at him in shock. He has managed to get to his knees and pulls open his shirt. Then he grabs at his chest and begins to tear open his skin. Beneath is the chest of another monster. Gage holds up his hand and watches as the skin tears along the back and a green, clawed hand emerges. Buffy takes a quick look behind her at the other monster, but it's not advancing, so she turns back to Gage and continues to watch, dumbfounded. The monster that was Gage now stands up, and what's left of Gage's clothes and skin fall away from him. Buffy stares up at it in horror and starts to back off. It roars, advances on her and takes a swipe at her with its sharp claws. The first monster advances on her from behind now, and she finds herself trapped between them.

Part 3

The boys' locker room. Buffy is trapped between the two sea creatures. She does a roundhouse kick to the one behind her and uses her angular momentum to follow up with a high kick to the other one, knocking it to the floor. She grabs a trashcan and throws it at the first one, but it just deflects the can. Buffy grabs a mop leaning against the wall and thrusts it at the second monster as it gets up, spins around with it to hit the first one in the face, knocking it down, and then jabs the other one again in the side. It is momentarily stunned, and Buffy follows up with another swing of the mop to its back and a kick to its chest, making it fall to the floor. The first creature is back up, grabs Buffy from behind, turns her around and sinks its sharp teeth deeply into her arm. She screams out in pain. The monster shoves her away into a bank of lockers, and she falls to the floor. Coach Marin suddenly appears and quickly helps her to her feet. The two monsters give up the fight and launch themselves across the floor and slide one after the other into the still-open grate.

Cut to the school nurse's office. She finishes bandaging Buffy's arm. Giles and the coach are standing behind her by the window.

Nurse Greenleigh I don't think that this is going to need stitches, but you might wanna have your family physician take a look at it. *walks off*

Giles approaches Buffy How are you?

Buffy I'm definitely feeling the burn.

Giles to Coach Marin Well, the, uh, good news is that it would appear that none of your team actually died.

Buffy But the bad news is... they're monsters.

Coach Marin How could this happen?

Giles Are you saying you don't know?

Coach Marin Well, you work so hard, you start to win suddenly. You think it's just you. You're inspiring the boys to greatness. But in the back of your mind, you start to wonder.

Giles You never asked any of the boys if they were taking anything?

Coach Marin Maybe I was afraid to.

Buffy and Giles exchange a look.

Cut to Willow's classroom. She, Buffy and Xander are at the computer surfing through the school medical files.

Buffy There.

Willow Dodd McAlvy: torn tendon. Gage Petronzi: fractured wrist, depression, headaches.

Buffy It's all there in the school medical records.

Willow All symptomatic of steroid abuse.

Xander But is steroid abuse usually linked with, 'hey, I'm a fish'?

Willow There must be something else in the mix. But the point is, these boys were obviously drugged.

Buffy And Nurse Greenleigh treated every one of them. She must have known.

Willow If steroids are that dangerous, why would they do that to themselves?

Buffy They needed to win. And winning equals trophies, which equals prestige for the school. You see how they're treated. It's been like that forever.

Xander Sure. The discus throwers got the best seats at all the crucifixions.

Buffy Meanwhile, I'm breaking my nails every day battling the forces of evil, and my French teacher can't even remember my name.

Xander So what's the drill? Get Nurse Greenleigh?

Willow stands up sternly Let's throw the book at her!

Buffy She probably went home for the day. I think it can wait. Xander, why don't you see if you can find out what these boys are taking, or at least how they're taking it? Powders, pills, syringe?

Xander I'm Lookin'-Around Guy.

Willow What about you?

Buffy Giles loaded up the tranquilizer gun. We're going fishing.

Cut to the sewers. It's dark and very wet. Buffy comes around a corner with a flashlight, scanning as she goes. Behind her Giles follows with his dart gun held ready. They hear a noise ahead of them, and Giles raises the gun to take aim. Buffy shines the flashlight, and they see it was only a rat. She puts her hand on his arm to stop him, and he lowers the rifle. They continue on and come to an intersection in the tunnels. Buffy shines her light down one of them, and gestures to Giles that they should go that way. She takes another quick look in the other directions and begins down the adjacent tunnel. Giles looks around again also, and then follows Buffy. They both walk down past the camera, then it focuses on the tunnel opposite the direction they came, and one of the creatures pokes its head around the corner to watch them as they go around a corner further down the tunnel.

Cut to the boys' steam room. The entire swim team is relaxing in the fog.

Xander I feel good! Lovin' the swimmin'. Had some carrot juice this morning... A little wheat germ mixed in with it. Woke me right up. Nothin' like it, huh? Breakfast of state champions. You betcha. Okay. So... when do we get our next dose?

Sean What do you mean?

Xander Who's carrying? I need a little something to improve my performance. Give me an edge. Rrr! *chuckles* Sean just looks away.

Xander The steroids. Where are they?

Sean chuckles You're soakin' in it, bud.

Xander Huh?

Sean *inhales deeply and exhales* Aromatherapy. It's in the steam.

Xander gives him a stunned look.

Cut to the pool. The nurse follows the coach at a brisk pace.

Nurse Greenleigh This has **got** to stop, Carl. Those poor children.

Coach Marin What, are you a quitter? We got no room for quitters on **this** team.

Nurse Greenleigh Do you even understand what's happening? Listen to yourself.

Coach Marin I'm very close to perfecting this. We just need to adjust the mix.

They head down some stairs to the pool equipment room below.

Nurse Greenleigh Carl. You can't be thinking of continuing to expose these boys.

Coach Marin They're gonna be the best. I don't accept anything less.

Nurse Greenleigh They're gonna be monsters. Carl, please. Don't make it any worse. You've already lost three.

The coach stops and looks at the nurse.

Coach Marin Lost? Why, they're not lost.

He grabs her by the arms, pulls her around and shoves her down into a hole to a pool of water in the sewers below. She screams as she falls. The water is not deep, and she quickly gets to her feet, wipes the water from her eyes and looks up at him through the hole.

Nurse Greenleigh Carl! What are you doing?!

Coach Marin I'm just lookin' after my boys. They may be out of the game right now, but they're still a team. And a team's gotta eat.

He lifts the grating back into place.

Nurse Greenleigh Carl!

Coach Marin You quitter.

He stands there to watch. Nurse Greenleigh looks around and begins to panic. Suddenly she screams and gets pulled under the water.

Part 4

The library. Xander paces. Giles gets up from cleaning his glasses and heads for the table, where Willow and Buffy are sitting. Cordelia is on the stairs to the mezzanine level behind the table.

Giles They're absorbing the steroid mixture through the steam.

Xander *follows him* Not they. We. Me! We have to find an antidote, don't you think? The clock is ticking, people!

Buffy I wouldn't break out the tartar sauce just yet. I mean, it's not like you were exposed more than once. *gets a worried look from Xander* Twice?

Xander Three times a Fish Guy. *crosses his arms*

Buffy and Willow Oh...

Cordelia Whoa.

Xander What am I gonna do?

Cordelia You, you, you. What about me? It's one thing to be dating the lame unpopular guy, but it's another to be dating the creature from the Blue Lagoon.

Xander *paces over to her* Black Lagoon. The creature from the Blue Lagoon was Brooke Shields. And thank you **so** much for your support! *sits by her*

Buffy *quietly to Giles and Willow* I think we'd better find the rest of the swim team and lock them up before they get in touch with their inner halibut.

Giles Yes. Yes, good. Uh, we also need to know exactly what's in this, this steroid gas so that the hospital's toxicology lab can develop an antidote.

Willow *stands up* Well, I'll talk to Nurse Greenleigh.

Buffy You're really getting into this interrogation thing.

Willow The trick is not to leave any marks. *leaves*

Buffy *gets up* On that note, I think I'm gonna go have a little talk with our coach. Somehow, I doubt all he's been giving these boys is inspiration. *leaves*

Cut to the pool equipment room. The coach leads Buffy to the same hole through which he shoved Nurse Greenleigh.

Coach Marin You got some imagination, missy.

Buffy Oh, well right now, I'm imagining you in jail. You're wearing a big, orange suit, and, oh, look, the guards are beating you up.

Coach Marin You don't have any proof.

Buffy *stops following sternly* Tell me what's in the steam.

Coach Marin *faces her* After the fall of the Soviet Union, documents came into light detailing experiments with fish DNA on their Olympic swimmers. Tarpon... mako, shark... But they couldn't crack it.

Buffy And you did... sort of. Why?

Coach Marin What kind of question is that? For the win! To make my team the best they could be! Do you understand we have a shot at the state championship?

Buffy Do you understand that I don't care? It's over. There's not gonna be any swim team.

Coach Marin Boy, when they were handin' out school spirit, you didn't even stand in line, did you?

Buffy No. I was in the line for shred of sanity.

The coach reaches into the desk behind him and pulls out a Beretta 9mm semi-automatic pistol. He pulls back the hammer and points the gun at Buffy.

Buffy Which you obviously skipped.

Coach Marin Get in the hole! *indicates with the gun*

Buffy looks down at the hole and back up at the coach.

Coach Marin In! Now!

She sits down on the edge with her legs dangling in and looks up at him.

Buffy This isn't over.

Coach Marin In!

She gives him one last look and drops herself into the water below. It's about a fifteen-foot drop, so she submerges completely and comes back up soaked through and wiping the water from her eyes. She looks up at the coach leaning over the hole.

Coach Marin You think I don't care about my boys. But I do. They count on me.

Buffy understands now, and looks around for the monsters. When she turns back around she screams at the sight of what's left of Nurse Greenleigh's body as it floats by. She looks back up at the coach.

Buffy So, what, you're just gonna feed me to 'em?

Coach Marin Oh, they've already had their dinner. But boys have other needs.

Cut to the pool. Xander and Cordelia come walking in looking for other members of the swim team. Xander is rubbing his neck, expecting to find gills growing there.

Cordelia No one. Willow and Giles must've rounded up the rest of the swim team.

Xander Does my neck look scaly to you?

Cordelia Well, of course it looks scaly, the way you've been rubbing it dry like an idiot.

Xander I need to look in a mirror. Wait here. But feel free to come in if you hear me scream.

He runs off into the locker room. Cordelia keeps walking around the pool. She hears a door close and glances behind her, but sees no one. She continues along the side of the pool. She hears a door open, and assumes it's Xander.

Cordelia Any gills yet?

Behind her a creature comes in and jumps into the pool. She looks into the pool, but at first can't make out the monster because of the splash on the surface.

Cordelia Xander, what are you doing? *giggles* Xander?

The creature swims beyond the splash, and Cordelia can see it clearly now.

Cordelia Oh, my God! Xander!

She walks along the edge of the pool, following the monster as it swims under water.

Cordelia *very upset* It's me, Cordelia? I know you can't answer me, but... God, this is all my fault. You joined the swim team to impress me. You were so courageous. And you looked really hot in those Speedo's. *chuckles* And I want you to know that I still care about you, no

matter what you look like. And... and we can still date. Or, or not. I mean... I understand if you wanna see other fish. *crouches by the edge* I'll do everything I can to make your quality of life better. Whether that means little bath toys or whatever.

Xander walks up behind her.

Xander Uh, Cordy?

Cordelia spins around quickly, startled, and draws a frightened breath.

Xander *points into the pool* That's not me.

They both look at the creature. It suddenly makes a lunge for them from the water, and Cordelia screams. Xander pulls her up and away, and they run from the pool area.

Cordelia Oh, my God!

Cut to the library. Giles leads the other swim team members into the cage.

Giles I-in you go.

They are all a bit confused, but obey none the less.

Giles Stay calm, chaps. *closed the door* Either we'll find an effective antidote, or, or, uh... S-stay calm. *goes to Willow*

Willow Everyone's accounted for except Sean.

Xander and Cordelia come into the library.

Cordelia I think we can safely say we've found Sean. He was in the pool skinless-dipping.

Xander Where's Buffy?

Willow She hasn't come back yet.

Cut to the sewers. The camera pans around the pool of water. One of the monsters pokes its head out of the water behind a pillar and observes Buffy. The camera continues until it stops on her.

Buffy Great. This is just what my reputation needs: that I did it with the entire swim team.

Another one of the creatures pokes its head up to look at Buffy. She makes a tentative jump to see about getting out of there. She hears them growl, and looks around. The one by the pillar submerges again and begins to swim. Buffy looks into the water to try to see where they are. Cut underwater. One of them swims right past her legs. She sees its head emerge further away from her, and draws a frightened breath.

Cut to the pool equipment room. Xander walks in and spots the coach leaning over the hole and gloating.

Xander What's up, coach?

Coach Marin *looks back, startled* Oh! Harris. Uh... *stands up* how you feelin'?

Xander Little dry. Nothing a lemon butter sauce won't cure.

They both chuckle nervously.

Xander Where's Buffy?

The coach's eyes focus on his gun laying on a barrel just behind Xander.

Cut to below. Buffy keeps looking for the sea monsters. One suddenly rises up behind her and lunges at her. She quickly grabs it and throws it aside. Another one comes for her, and she deflects it into the wall, but loses her balance and falls underwater. One grabs her leg, and she kicks out. She grabs it and throws it off of her. Standing again, she grabs another one's arm as it attacks her and flips it over into the wall.

Cut above. Coach Marin makes a grab for his gun, but Xander grabs his arm, pounds it into the barrel and makes him drop it. He elbows the coach in the face, who falls over unconscious.

Cut below. Buffy knocks and flips the monsters away as they each come for her in turn. Soon they've had enough, and the three of them surround her and slowly close in.

Cut above. Xander steps over to the hole and looks down. When he sees what's going on below he quickly lies down and reaches into the hole with his arm.

Xander Buffy, hurry! Your hand!

Buffy looks up and sees him there. She takes a breath, crouches down into the water and leaps up the ten feet to grab Xander's hand.

Xander Hold on!

He starts to pull for all he's worth. Below the creatures paw at Buffy's legs, trying to pull her back down. Two of them grab hold, and she kicks and flails to shake them off. The monsters can't keep hold of her, and fall into the water.

Buffy Pull!

Xander Hold on!

He pulls again, but he's not as strong as he thinks and it goes slowly. One of the monsters leaps up and grabs Buffy's leg again. She kicks it with her free leg and it goes tumbling down. Xander pulls again as Buffy raises her legs up out of the creature's reach. Slowly she emerges from the hole and climbs onto the floor, coughing and panting.

Buffy Thanks.

Xander Just doin' my part for our team.

Behind him the coach has regained consciousness, and hits Xander across the back with a large pipe wrench.

Buffy Oh!

He starts to take a swing at Buffy with it, too, but she

ducks away and trips him with her leg. He falls and screams as he rolls into the hole. Buffy reacts fast and grabs his ankle.

Coach Marin Don't let go! Don't let go of me! Hold me! Buffy can't maintain her grip, and he falls into the water below. The coach stands up in the water, shaking it out of his face and coughing.

Buffy reaches down Grab my hand!

He's too busy being worried about his sea monsters surrounding him to listen to what Buffy is saying.

Coach Marin Boys! Boys, uh, now, now, boys! No! I... They attack him.

Coach Marin No, boys!

He screams and struggles as they pull him under. Buffy pulls her arm back up.

Buffy Those boys really love their coach.

Cut to the school lounge. Willow and Buffy are sitting on one of the couches opposite Xander and Cordelia on the other.

Xander Let's see. I gotta take a make-up chem test at three. And then I'm meetin' some of the guys for plasma transfusions at five. It's turned into quite the busy afternoon.

Buffy The fun never stops with you, does it?

Willow Giles seems pretty confident that the treatments are gonna work.

Xander Well, turning into a creepy-crawly wasn't on my top ten list of things to do before I turn twenty.

Cordelia to Xander I want you to know that you've really proven yourself to me. And you don't have to join the new team next year if you don't want. I'd be just as happy if you played football. *smiles*

Buffy and Willow exchange an amused look. Giles comes up the steps to them.

Giles The... people from animal control have just left. Our creatures have apparently made a, a dash for it. Um... so to speak.

Willow Does that mean we're gonna have to hunt them again?

Buffy No, I don't think so. I don't think we'll be seeing them anymore.

Giles Where do you think they'll go?

Buffy Home.

Cut to the beach. The camera pans over the waves rolling in. The three monsters are in the surf and begin to swim out to sea.

Becoming, Part 1

Written by Joss Whedon

Directed by Joss Whedon

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Becoming", part 1. It also includes descriptions of the settings, ac-

tion scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.09

This episode was originally broadcast on May 12, 1998.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

A town square in Galway, Ireland, 1753. The camera looks straight down from above onto the cobblestones. A lone rider on his horse passes underneath, and the camera follows them past a well as Angelus narrates.

Angelus There's moments in your life that make you, that set the course of who you're gonna be. Sometimes they're little, subtle moments. Sometimes... they're not. I'll show you what I mean.

The horseman continues past a tavern on the far side of the square. The door opens, and a young drunk Angel and his drunk friend are thrown out.

Angel with an Irish accent We'll be back when we've found a bit more cash money! Keep the girls warm!

The tavern proprietor slams the door shut, and Angel pounds on it a couple of times.

Angel's friend moans Let's go.

Angel staggers back over to him and puts his arm around him. They begin to walk with a definite sway in their step.

Angel Come on. We'll sneak in and take some of me father's silver. He'll never miss it. He eats with his hands, the pig.

His friend is too drunk to go on, and faints dead away, falling out of Angel's arm to the pavement. Angel looks down at him.

Angel Ah. Why don't you rest right here.

He takes a look around and spots a noble lady in a fancy period dress standing in an alley beyond an archway. The woman gives a slight backward glance to be sure she has his attention, and starts to walk further into the alley, disappearing around a corner from Angel's view.

He follows her.

Cut to the alley. The woman continues her slow pace and looks up when Angel comes through the archway and begins to speak. As she gets closer to the camera it becomes clear that the woman is Darla. Her long curly blonde hair is very nicely coiffed.

Angel So, I'd ask myself... What's a lady of your station doing alone in an alley with the reputation that this one has?

Darla still facing away Maybe she's lonely.

Angel In that case, I'd offer myself as escort to protect you from harm and to while away the dull hours.

Darla You're very gracious.

Angel Hm. It's often been said.

Darla turns to face him Are you certain you're up to the challenge?

Angel approaches her Milady, you'll find that with the exception of an honest day's work, there's no challenge I'm not prepared to face.

He stops in front of her and looks into her eyes.

Angel Oh... But you're a pretty thing. Where are you from?

Darla smiles Around. Everywhere.

Angel I never been anywhere myself. Always wanted to see the world, but...

Darla I could show you. *smiles*

Angel Could you, then?

Darla Things you've never seen, never even heard of.

Angel Sounds exciting.

Darla It is. And frightening.

Angel I'm not afraid. Show me. Show me your world.

Darla closes her eyes Close your eyes.

Angel follows her example. The camera follows her hand as she puts it on his shoulder, and continues up

to show her face vamped out. She smiles, lets out a low growl and opens wide as she leans in to bite him. When he feels the pain his eyes open wide, and he gasps. He can't keep steady, and sinks to his knees. Darla lets go of her bite, revealing his bloody neck, and stands up straight. She lifts her hand to her chest and draws a sharp fingernail across the skin above her breasts, allowing blood to trickle out. She grabs him by the back of the neck and pulls him in to her bosom so that his lips fall directly onto the cut, forcing him to taste of her blood. He puts his arms around her and drinks.

Cut to the cemetery in Sunnydale, 1998. Angelus walks through carefully and quietly while watching Buffy fight a pair of vampires nearby. He sees her kick one and then the other, and then continues on to a better vantage point. One of the vampires rushes Buffy, and she flips him over onto his back.

Buffy Nice try.

The other one comes at her again with a swing. She ducks it and punches him in the face, in the gut and again in the face. He falls to the ground, dazed. The first one comes at her again with a kick, but she blocks it with her arm, backhand punches him in the face, jabs him in the gut and grabs his arm, twisting it up high and forcing him to his knees in pain. Angelus looks on from behind a tree and smiles. The second vampire gets back up and rushes her. Without letting go of the first one she cleanly jams her stake into the other one's chest, and he crumbles into ashes. Angelus can't help but snicker. Buffy turns her attention back to the one she's holding and punches him in the face, making him roll away.

Buffy I want you to get a message to Angel for me. Tell him I'm done waiting. I'm taking the fight to him.

Angelus smiles as he listens.

Buffy You got that? Need me to write it down for you? The vampire gets up and charges her. She grabs him and pulls him around and down to the ground, and immediately plunges her stake home. He bursts into ashes.

Buffy Alright, I'll tell him myself.

She gets up and walks over behind a gravestone, where she reaches down to help someone up.

Xander *moans* I'm good. Don't worry about me. *rubs his neck*

Buffy You know, you don't have to patrol with me.

Xander *indicates the pile of ash* I had that guy under control until he resorted to fisticuffs. *cranes his neck* Oh! What is that, um... five vampires in three nights?

Buffy Yep. But no Angel.

Xander Are you, uh, really that anxious to come up against him?

Buffy I want it over with.

Xander *nods* I hear that.

Buffy Oh, we better go. *exhales* I haven't even started studying for finals yet. *starts to go*

Xander *joins her* Oh, yeah, finals! Why didn't you let me die?

Buffy Ah, look on the bright side. It'll all be over soon. They leave the cemetery under the watchful eyes of Angelus.

Angelus Yes, my love. It will.

He smirks and turns to leave the other way.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part I

The research lab at the Sunnydale Museum of Natural History. The camera pans across a large rectangular chunk of rock over to a technician. She is carefully cleaning off a section of the rock. She lets a jet of compressed air blow away some dust. A moment later she lets another jet go, and then reaches up with a brush and runs it across the rock. Dr. Doug Perren, one of the museum curators, comes over to check her progress.

Doug Careful, now. *points* Concentrate in this area. *watches her work a moment* There you go.

The door opens behind him, and he turns to see Giles come in.

Giles Hello?

Doug *comes to greet him* Rupert Giles?

Giles Yes.

Doug Doug Perren. *shakes his hand* Thanks for coming.

Giles Oh, not at all. It's... flattered to be asked.

Doug I spoke with Lou Tabor at the Washington Insti-

tute, and he told me we had the best authority on obscure relics right here in Sunnydale.

Giles Oh... *laughs* He may have, uh, exaggerated a little. *sees the obelisk* Ah, is this the...

Doug This is our baby. *they approach it* Construction workers dug it up outside of town. Don't have a clue what it is. Any ideas?

Giles *touches and looks at the rock* A few. None I'd care to share until I can verify. *notices the runes on it* You have, uh, carbon dated it? *inspects the writings*

Doug The results'll be back in a couple of days. I'll go out on a limb and say old.

Giles *smirks* Um, yes, it, it certainly... *picks up a jar and a scraper* predates any, uh... settlements we've read about. *points* Um, may, may I?

Doug Yeah. Sure.

Giles leans in and begins to scrape at the corner of the obelisk, catching the debris in the jar. He digs into an

apparent groove. A few scrapes later he stops and taps the scraper clean on the jar.

Giles I assume you've, uh, you haven't tried to open it.

Doug Open it?

He leans over to see what Giles has discovered.

Doug Ah, I'll be damned. I figured it was solid. What do you think is in there?

Giles *staring intently* I don't know.

Doug Well... I guess we won't know until we open it up.

Giles *considers* Yes, but could I ask, um... would you wait? I, uh... I'd like to work on translating the text. It-it-it might give us an indication of... what we'll find inside.

Doug You don't want to be surprised?

Giles A-as a rule, no.

Doug Alright. You're the expert. But I'm pretty damn curious, though.

Giles *removes his glasses* Yes. Yes, so am I.

Cut to the cafeteria at Sunnydale High. The camera focuses on two fish sticks that Xander is holding, one with a toothpick stuck through the middle. He plays with them like puppets, moving the one with the toothpick around.

Xander Tell Angel I'm gonna kill him! No, wait. I'm gonna kill you!

He starts to repeatedly stab the toothpick into the other fish stick. The camera pulls back and up to his face.

Xander Die! Die! Die!

He makes an anguished face and lets the fish stick fall.

Xander Aah! *makes a thudding noise squeals* Mother! *smiles*

Cordelia Is that it?

Xander Yeah. That's it. *chuckles* Scene! *grins*

Cut to Willow, Oz and Buffy at the opposite side of the table. Willow is sitting on Oz's lap.

Buffy That's exactly how it happened.

Oz Well, I thought it was riveting. Uh, I was a little unclear about some of the themes.

Buffy The theme is Angel's too much of a coward to take me on face-to-face.

Xander *still playing with the fish sticks* And the other theme was 'Buy American', but it, uh, got kind of buried.

Willow *to Buffy* Do you think you're ready to fight Angel?

Buffy I wish people would stop asking me that. Yes, I'm ready. I'm also willing and able. Just the one test I might actually pass.

Willow Don't say that! You're gonna pass everything. I will get you through this semester if I have to sweat blood.

Xander Do you think you're likely to? 'Cause I'd like to be elsewhere.

Willow It was only metaphor blood.

Oz I think you'd sweat cute blood.

Willow *gives Oz a smile to Buffy* Sixth period, after my computer class, we'll rock on chemistry.

Buffy Ready to rock.

Cordelia Boy, Willow, you've really got the teaching bug: taking over computer class, tutoring...

Willow *smiles widely* I love it. I really do.

Cordelia I think it's great to do that before you go out and fail in the real world. That way you're not falling back on something. You're falling... well, forward.

Xander *rolls his eyes* And almost sixty-five percent of that was actual compliment. Is that a personal best?

Cordelia Gee, Xander, what are you gonna teach when you fail in life? Advanced loser-being?

Xander I will teach... *with a French accent* zee Language of Love! *reaches for her*

Cordelia *fights him off* Don't touch me! You have fish hands!

Snyder comes into the cafeteria behind them.

Xander Come, let me caress you!

Cordelia Stop it!

Xander Let me in!

Cordelia No! *laughs* Don't!

Snyder That's enough of that. *to Willow* And you! Are we having a chair shortage?

Willow I didn't read anything about... Oh. *slides off of Oz's lap and into her chair* I get it.

Snyder These public displays of affection are not acceptable in my school. This isn't an orgy, people. It's a classroom.

Buffy Yeah! Where they teach lunch.

Snyder *glares at her* Just give me a reason to kick you out, Summers. Just give me a reason. *walks off*

Cordelia How about because you're a tiny, impotent Nazi with a bug up his butt the size of an emu?

Buffy Sums it up.

Cordelia Don't you think?

Willow *smiles to Buffy* Do you wanna come by my house tonight and study, too?

Buffy Maybe. I-I do have to patrol.

Willow Again? Do you really expect Angel to turn up tonight?

Buffy No, I don't expect him to. But that's usually when he does.

Cut to an abbey in London, 1860. Cut inside the nave. Monks are chanting. Drusilla walks behind the pews toward the confession booths. Before going in she faces the altar, kneels and crosses herself. She looks up briefly before getting back to her feet and going into one of the booths. As she steps in through the curtain an arm juts out of the adjacent one where the priest waits, and muffled noises and struggling can be heard. The

arm gets pulled back in as quickly as it appeared. Cut inside the confessional. Drusilla sits down and pulls the scarf from her head.

Drusilla Bless me, Father, for I have sinned.

In the next booth Angelus is caught by surprise, and drops the dead priest.

Drusilla It's been two days since my last confession. *waits for an answer* Father?

Angelus *goes along with it* That's not very long.

Drusilla *with a trembling voice* Oh, Father, I'm so afraid.

Angelus The Lord is very forgiving. Tell me your sins.

Drusilla I had... *breathes deeply* I've been seeing again, Father. Yesterday, the men were going to work in the mine. I had... *shakes a terrible fright. draws a frightened breath* My stomach all *draws another* tied up, and I saw this horrible... *crash.* *calms a bit* My mummy said to keep my peace, it didn't mean nothing. But this morning... they had a cave-in. Two men died.

Angelus Go on.

Drusilla Me mum says... I'm cursed. *exhales* My seeing things is an affront to the Lord, *inhales sharply* that only he's supposed to see anything before it happens. *inhales, sobs* But I don't mean to, Father, I swear! *inhales* I swear! *begins to cry* I try to be pure in his sight. *sobs* I don't want to be an evil thing.

Angelus Oh, hush, child. The Lord has a plan for all creatures. Even a Devil child like you.

Drusilla *taken aback* A Devil?

Angelus Yes! You're a spawn of Satan. All the Hail Marys in the world aren't going to help. The Lord will use you and smite you down. He's like that.

Drusilla *frightened* What can I do?

Angelus Fulfill his plan, child. Be evil. Just give in.

Drusilla No! *sobs* I want to be good. *sobs* I want to be pure.

Angelus We all do, at first. The world doesn't work that way.

Drusilla Father... I beg you... Please... Please, help me.

Angelus Very well. Ten Our Fathers and an Act of Contrition. Does that sound good?

Drusilla *relieved* Yes. *exhales* Yes, Father. Thank you.

Angelus The pleasure was mine. And my child... *raises his hand to the lattice between them*

Drusilla Yes?

Angelus *stares at her* God is watching you.

Cut to the atrium at Angelus' mansion, 1998. Drusilla comes down the stairs to the garden below. There Spike sits in his wheelchair and reads the newspaper.

Spike Nice walk, pet?

Drusilla *holds her tummy as though sick* I met an old man. Didn't like him. He got stuck in my teeth. *licks her*

fingers faces Spike But then the Moon started whispering to me... *closes her eyes and leans her head back* All sorts of dreadful things.

Angelus walks into the Garden behind Spike.

Angelus Well, what did it say?

Spike Oh. Look who's awake.

Angelus bumps Spike's head with his fist as he walks past him.

Angelus What did the Moon tell you? *walks around Drusilla* Did you have a vision? Is something coming?

Drusilla Oh, yeah. *whispers* Something terrible. Psst, psst, psst, psst, psst...

Angelus Where?

Drusilla At the museum. A tomb... *smiles* with a surprise inside.

Angelus *holds his hand up to her head* You can see all that in your head?

Spike No, you ninny. She read it in the morning paper. *hands over the paper*

Angelus *takes the paper and looks* Oh, my.

The headline of the Sunnydale Press reads 'Mysterious Obelisk Unearthed'. The article's subtitle reads 'Excavators Discover Ancient Artifact'.

Drusilla That's what's been whispering to me. Sh.

Angelus Oh, yeah. *to Drusilla* Don't worry, though. Soon it'll stop. *to Spike* Soon it'll scream.

He smiles over at Spike. Drusilla waves her head around open-mouthed and playfully snaps at Angelus' cheek.

Cut to the computer science classroom after school. Willow is tutoring Buffy in chemistry. Buffy gives up in frustration and slaps down her pencil.

Buffy Waah! This doesn't make any sense. *pouts at Willow*

Willow Well, sure it does. See... *takes the paper and looks* Oh, no, this doesn't make any sense.

Buffy *shrugs* It's senseless. *plays with her pencil*

Willow *encouragingly* It is, but at least you know that, so you're learning. *looks at the problem more closely*

Buffy Yay me. Well, it doesn't matter anyway. I mean, when in the real world am I ever gonna need chemistry or history or math or the English language?

Willow *shoots Buffy a glance* Okay. I see your problem.

Buffy I'm a moron?

Willow *gives Buffy a look* Will you stop that? You're not stupid! You've just had a lot on your mind. You can learn this real easily, but if you're just gonna give up, then don't waste my time.

Buffy *impressed* Wow. You really **are** a good teacher. *smiles*

Willow Okay. Look at this. A covalent bond, which means these two atoms are linked by this...

Buffy puts her pencil down on her open book, and it rolls off of the desk and into the space between it and the filing cabinet next to it.

Buffy Ohh! *moans* Hold that thought.

She reaches down and in with her fingers, and pulls the pencil out. In the process she bumps the disk with the pencil so it now leans against the desk instead of the cabinet.

Buffy sits back up Okay. I'm Learn Girl.

Willow Okay. *points to the paper* So, see here...

Buffy has an epiphany Deja vu.

Willow Really?

Buffy Yeah. I have this perfect memory of the pencil and...

She drops the pencil onto her book again. It rolls off of the desk again, falls and hits the disk. She looks over into the space and sees the disk. She reaches down again for it and her pencil.

Buffy Oh, hey. *pulls up the disk and pencil* You dropped this.

She hands the unlabeled yellow disk to Willow, who looks at it curiously.

Willow It's not mine. It might be something of Ms. Calendar's.

She inserts the disk into her laptop's floppy drive.

Buffy This feels kinda morbid.

Willow smiles at Buffy I've gone through most of her files already.

Buffy Does that make it **less** morbid or you **really** morbid?

The program on the disk starts up, and the Rumanian text scrolls into the left-hand window.

Willow sighs I had to, to teach her class.

The translation program's percent complete window appears, and the bar begins to zip across the screen.

Buffy Relax, Will. I was making with the funny.

They both watch as the bar reaches the far side. It disappears, and the English translation scrolls into the right-hand window.

Buffy looks closely Does that say 'restoration'? *keeps reading*

Willow It's one of her spells, I think. *looks at Buffy* Ms. Calendar wasn't a practicing witch, but she did dabble...

Buffy interrupts Willow... *keeps reading*

Willow looks back at the screen and begins reading more. She quickly realizes what they've found.

Willow Oh, boy. Oh, boy. Oh, boy.

The camera closes in on Buffy. She has stopped reading, and just looks stunned.

Part 2

A wood in Rumania, 1898. Angelus runs through the trees, panting in his desperation to reach a gypsy camp. Cut to the camp. The camera pans across the dead body of the young Kalderash Gypsy girl that Angelus has recently killed. She is on a table dressed in white and lying on an intricately patterned quilt with candles burning around the perimeter. Members of the clan are laying rose petals on her. The camera continues to pan over to the Elder Woman sitting beneath a tent canopy and chanting over an Orb of Thesulah surrounded by candles within a sacred circle. Angelus continues running through the woods as she chants.

Elder Woman Nici mort, nici de-al fiintei, Te invoc, spirit al trecerii. Reda trupului ce separa omul de animal!

Translation Neither dead, nor of the living, I invoke you, spirit of the passing. Return to the body what distinguishes Man from the beast!

Angelus breaks through the trees into the clearing of the camp. He trips and falls by the great bonfire raging near the center of the camp.

Elder Woman Asa sa fie.

Translation So it shall be.

He gets to his hands and knees and looks over at the Elder Woman, still chanting. Cut to the Elder Woman.

Elder Woman Utrespur aceastui.

Translation Restore this one.

The glowing Orb suddenly gets very bright for an instant, and then goes dark. Cut to Angelus. His eyes grow bright for a moment, then return to normal, his soul now restored. An elder man of the clan steps up to him as he sits back on his ankles.

Gypsy Man It hurts, yes? Good. It will hurt more.

Angel confused Where am I? *pants hard*

Gypsy Man You don't remember... everything you've done for a hundred years. In a moment, you will. The face of everyone you killed... our daughter's face... they will haunt you, and you will know what true suffering is.

Angel still not understanding Killed? I, I don't...

Slowly the memories come back to him all the people in Budapest after the earthquake that he and Darla killed for their blood; all the people he's turned into demons; the gypsy girl that proved to be his downfall.

Angel No...

He looks down away from the man and begins to sob.

Angel No... No... No...

He bends down to the ground in sorrow and grief.

Cut to the library at Sunnydale High School, 1998. Xander and Cordelia are sitting at the table. Giles walks up to Buffy and Willow.

Giles What are you saying?

Buffy The curse. *holds out a printout* This is it.

Willow Looks like Ms. Calendar was trying to replicate the original curse. To restore Angel's soul again.

Giles *takes the printout, stares at it* She said it couldn't be done.

Buffy Well, she tried anyway. And it looks like it might have worked.

Xander So he killed her... before she could tell anyone about it. What a prince, huh? *looks away*

Cordelia This is good, right? I mean, we can curse him again.

Buffy paces, thinking.

Giles Um, well, this, um... certainly points the way, but... the ritual itself requires a greater knowledge of the black arts than I, I, I can claim.

Willow Well, I've been going through her files and, and researching the black arts, for fun, or educational fun, and I may be able to work this.

Giles *very concerned* W-Willow... channeling... such potent magicks through yourself, it could open a door that you may not be able to close.

Buffy I don't want you putting yourself in any danger, Will.

Willow And I don't want danger. Big 'no' to danger, but I may be the best person to do this.

Xander Hi! For those of you who have just tuned in, *gets up* everyone here is a crazy person. *walks to the end of the table* So this spell might restore Angel's humanity? Well, here's an interesting angle. *harshly* Who cares?

Buffy I care.

Xander *not surprised* Is that right.

Giles Let's not lose our perspective here, Xander.

Willow looks at Xander, disbelieving what she's hearing from him.

Xander *standing his ground* I'm Perspective Guy. Angel's a killer.

Willow Xander...

Buffy It's not that simple.

Xander *disgusted* What? All is forgiven? I can't believe you people!

Cordelia *gets up* Xander has a point.

Xander *to Cordelia, in a raised voice* You know, just for once, I wish you'd support me, and I realize right now that you were, and I'm embarrassed, so I'm gonna get back to the point, *to the others* which is that Angel needs to die.

Giles Curing Angel seems to have been Jenny's last wish.

Xander Yeah? Well, Jenny's dead.

Giles *approaches Xander angrily* Don't you **ever** speak of her in that tone again!

Xander *yells back* Can't you hear what I'm saying?

They begin to argue heatedly. Buffy rushes over and gets between them.

Buffy Stop it! Stop it!

They all shut up and glare at each other for a moment. Buffy turns away and goes over to Willow, very upset. Giles paces away, also very upset.

Willow *quietly* What do you wanna do?

Buffy *sighs quietly* I-I don't know. What happened to Angel wasn't his fault.

Xander Yeah, but what happened to Ms. Calendar is. Buffy and Willow stare at him in disbelief.

Xander *very coldly* You can paint this any way you want. But the way I see it is that you wanna forget all about Ms. Calendar's murder so you can get your boyfriend back.

Buffy refuses to listen to any more of this, and walks out of the library. Willow and Giles just stare at Xander in surprise and shock. He walks back to his chair at the table.

Cut to the museum research lab. Dr. Perren is going over his notes when he hears some whispering coming from behind him. He turns around to look, but no one's there.

Doug Hello?

He gets up and slowly walks over to the obelisk. The whispering gets louder as he nears it. He reaches up to the runes on the face of the rock and touches them. The whispering seems to be coming from inside. He places his hand flat on the face of the rock and stares up at it in amazement. Suddenly Drusilla wraps her hand around his mouth from behind and pulls his head back to expose his neck. She leans in and bites him hard as he struggles to get away. Behind her Angelus and two other vampires approach the obelisk.

Angelus I'll have one of these to go.

The two vampires walk around the rock with some rope and tools to haul it away.

Angelus Dru...

She jerks her head up from her victim and turns her eyes toward him, growling and smiling a most evil smile.

Angelus Save me some.

Cut to Buffy's room at home. She piles a bunch of stakes and crosses into her bag while talking on the phone with Willow.

Buffy Well, I'll do a couple of sweeps, and then I'll stop by. *listens* Yeah, Xander was pretty much being a... Willow! Where did you learn that word? My God. You kiss your mother with that mouth?

She goes over to her desk while listening to Willow talk some more. She grabs a couple more stakes from the

top left drawer.

Buffy I don't know. I don't know what I wanna do.

At the bottom of the drawer she sees the claddagh ring that Angel gave her, and stares at it sadly for a moment. She reaches in for it and holds it gently with her fingers, remembering.

Buffy I'll, I'll see you in a little while, okay?

She turns off the phone and sets it down. She holds the ring with both **hands again and gazes at the design** two hands for friendship, a crown for loyalty and a heart for love.

Cut to the park. Buffy walks through on patrol and heads into some bushes. She stops and jerks her head aside when she hears something snap. Slowly she takes a few more steps to investigate. She hears another sound behind her, and spins around to look. Nothing. Again she takes a couple of steps. Suddenly Kendra comes out of the bushes to stand right behind her. Buffy instantly pivots around with her fist held up, ready to punch. She stays herself when she recognizes the other girl.

Buffy *exhales* You know, polite people call before they jump out of the bushes and attack you.

Kendra *in her accent* Just wanted to test your reflexes.

Buffy How about testing my face-punching? 'Cause I think you'll find it's improved.

Kendra I was on my way to your house. Saw you walking. Couldn't help meself.

Buffy *smiles* Which begs the question, and don't think I'm not glad to see you, but, why are you here? *Kendra starts to answer* Oh, wait. No, let me guess. Your watcher informed you *imitating her accent* dat a very dark power is about to rise in Sunnydale.

Kendra Dat's about it.

Buffy Great. So, you have any idea what this dark power is?

Cut to the main hall in Angelus' mansion. He and Drusilla walk in across the marble floor to where Spike is sitting in his wheelchair, staring at the obelisk set in front of the huge fireplace.

Spike *hears them coming* It's a big rock. I can't wait to tell my friends. They don't have a rock this big.

Angelus Spike, boy, you never did learn your history.

Spike Let's have a lesson, then.

Angelus Acathla the demon came forth to swallow the world. *strolls to the obelisk* He was killed by a virtuous knight who pierced the demon's heart before he could draw a breath to perform the act. Acathla turned to stone, as demons sometimes do, and was buried *turns to face Spike* where neither man nor demon would want to look. *starts away from the obelisk* Unless of course they're putting up low-rent housing. Boys...

The two vampires reach up with crowbars and pry open the tomb. The lid crashes to the floor, stirring up plenty of dust. Inside is a tall, horned, stockily built stone demon with a sword protruding from the right side of its chest. Upon seeing him Drusilla closes her eyes, raises her hands to the sides of her head and begins to sway it back and forth.

Drusilla He fills my head. I can't hear anything else.

Spike Let me guess. Someone pulls out the sword...

Angelus Someone worthy...

Spike Mm. The demon wakes up, and wackiness ensues.

Drusilla *opens her eyes, lowers her arms* He will swallow the world.

Angelus And every creature living on this planet will go to Hell.

He walks up to Acathla for a closer look, and turns to face the others.

Angelus My friends... we're about to make history... end. *smiles evilly*

Part 3

The library. Giles comes out of his office into the main room where Buffy and Kendra are waiting at the table. Willow is behind the counter, researching in a book.

Giles I've been on the phone to the museum. The artifact in question is missing, and the curator has been murdered. Vampires. *leans on the table*

Buffy And you're sure this was the tomb of Alfalfa?

Giles Acathla. And yes, the information provided by Kendra's Watcher seems conclusive.

He straightens back up. Willow walks out from behind the counter.

Willow Okay, somebody explain the whole 'he will suck the world into Hell' thing, because that's the part I'm not loving.

Giles Well, the, uh, *puts on his glasses* the Demon Universe exists in a dimension separate from our own. *sits on the table* With one breath, Acathla will create a vortex, a-a kind of, um... whirlpool that will pull everything on Earth into that dimension, where any non-demon life will suffer horrible and... eternal torment.

Buffy So that would be the literal kind of 'sucked into Hell'. *smiles nervously* Neat. *frowns, turns to Willow* Willow, I think you should try the curse.

Kendra I tend to side with your friend Xander on this one. Angel should be eliminated.

Buffy Oh, I'll fight him. I'll kill him if I have to. But if I don't get there in time, or if I lose, then Willow might be our only hope.

Willow *taken aback* I don't **wanna** be our only hope! Uh, I crumble under pressure! Let's have another hope.

Kendra We have. *pulls a sword from her bag* Blessed by the knight who first slew the demon. *Giles looks at the sword, intrigued* If all else fails, this might stop it. I tink.

Giles *approaches* Ooh. May I? May I? *takes the sword from Kendra* Thank you. Well, I-let's, uh, hope all else doesn't fail. *to Willow* Um, how close are you to figuring out the ritual of the curse?

Willow *goes to her pack* I need about a day, and... *picks up some papers and reads* an 'Orb of Thesulah'? Whatever that is.

Giles *hands the sword back to Kendra* Spirit vault for rituals of the undead. *heads toward his office* I've got one. *embarrassed* I-I've been using it as a... paperweight. *disappears into his office*

Willow *to Buffy* This means I can't help you study for tomorrow's final.

Buffy Ah, I'll wing it. Of course, if we go to Hell by then, I won't have to take 'em. *worried* Or maybe I'll be taking them forever.

Giles *comes back with the Orb* Angel has a ritual of his own to perform before he can remove the sword and awaken Acatlha. With any luck, it should take some time.

Buffy stares at the Orb as Giles hands it to Willow.

Cut to Angelus' mansion. Spike paces in his room. He hears Drusilla coming.

Drusilla Spike?

He quickly gets back into his chair. Drusilla comes through the curtain into the room.

Drusilla Spike, my sweet! The fun's about to begin.

He wheels himself out of the room and heads for the main hall.

Cut to the main hall before the obelisk. The two vampires drag in a young man, barefoot and bare-chested with his hands tied behind his back. They drop him to the floor before Spike, Angelus and Drusilla.

Angelus *comes toward the young man* I will drink... the blood will wash in me, over me, and I will be cleansed. I will be worthy to free Acatlha. *looks at Spike* Bear witness... *looks at Drusilla* as I ascend... *looks ahead and morphs into his game face* as I become.

He grabs the man by the hair and lifts him up, holding his head at an angle to expose his neck. He roars and bites the young man hard and fast on the neck. He drinks deeply, brings up his hand to brush it against the man's wound and then lets him fall to the floor dead. He looks at the blood on his hand. He lowers it and starts to walk slowly toward Acatlha.

Angelus Everything that I am, everything that I have done, has led me here.

Cut to Manhattan, 1996. A bum steps up to a trashcan and begins to go through it. A man walks past him and on down the street. Having found nothing, the bum makes his way into an alley with slow, labored steps. A boy runs past him with a package and disappears further down the alley. The bum, tired and weak, staggers into a concrete post at the side of the alley and stops. He coughs and rolls around to lean with his back against the post, and it's Angel, tired, filthy and unkempt. He just breathes for a moment, and then smells something. He searches the alley with his eyes and spots a rat scampering across to the other side. He takes a couple of unsteady steps, brushes the hair from his face and begins to stalk the rat. It reaches the other side and disappears into a pile of trashcans and bags. Angel dives after it, scattering the cans and bags noisily, but loses the rat. A man comes into the alley behind him. Angel rolls over to sit and flails his arms at the trashcans in anger over missing the rat. The man comes up to him.

Whistler God, are you disgusting.

Angel calms down a bit and looks around himself.

Whistler This is really an unforgettable smell. This is the stench of death you're giving off here. And the look says, uh... Crazy Homeless Guy. It's not good.

Angel *angrily* Get away from me.

Whistler What are you gonna do, bite me? *gasps and jumps back* Horrors! A vampire!

Angel looks at him in surprise.

Whistler Ah, but you wouldn't bite me on account of your poor, tortured soul. It's so sad, a vampire with a soul. It's so poignant.

Angel *confused* Who are you?

Whistler Let's take a walk.

Cut to a ways down the street. The two of them walk along the sidewalk for a few paces and then turn into the street to cross to the hotdog stand on the other side. Angel isn't paying any attention to the traffic, so Whistler grabs his arm to stop him.

Whistler What are you eating? *they continue across* Like, a rat once a month?

Angel strays and almost walks into another car. Whistler grabs him again and pulls him back in time.

Whistler Hey! *car honks, they continue* Look, you're skin and bones here! Butcher shops are throwing away more blood in a day than you could stand. Good blood. *they reach the far side* You lived in the world a little bit, you'd know that.

Angel I wanna know who you are. *stops*

Whistler *stops and faces him* And I wanna know who **you** are.

Angel You already do.

Whistler Not yet. But I'm looking to find out. 'Cause you could go either way here.

Angel I don't understand you.

Whistler Nobody understands me. That's my curse. *chuckles*

He steps over to the street vendor and pulls out some cash.

Whistler Dog me. Mustard.

He watches the vendor get out the hotdog and squirt on some mustard.

Whistler to Angel My name's Whistler.

Vendor Here you go.

Whistler takes the dog Thanks. *hands over a bill, turns to Angel* Anyway, lately it is. *takes a bite* Mm.

Angel looks down You're not a vampire.

Whistler A demon... technically. I mean, I'm not a bad guy. Not all demons are dedicated to the destruction of all life.

Angel looks at him Whadaya mean, I can go either way?

Whistler I mean that you can become an even more useless rodent than you already are, or you can become someone. A person. Someone to be counted.

Angel I just wanna be left alone. *starts away*

Whistler Well, yeah, you've been left alone for, what, ninety years already. *Angel turns back* And what a package you are. The Stink Guy!

Angel What do you want from me?

Whistler I want you to see something.

He gives Angel an intense look. Angel just looks at him.

Whistler We'd have to leave now. You see, and then you tell me what you wanna do.

Angel Where is it?

Cut to Hemery High School in Los Angeles, 1996. School is over for the day, and the students come streaming out. An old, rusted Chevy Impala with its windows spray-painted black pulls up on the far side of the street. The driver's window lowers, and Angel squints out into the daylight, careful to remain in shadow. He looks over at the building and sees Buffy come down the steps with three of her friends.

Buffy So I'm like, 'Dad, do you want me to go to the dance in an outfit I've already worn? Why do you hate me?'

Girl#1 Is Tyler taking you?

Buffy Where were you when I got over Tyler? He's of the past. *Angel watches her* Tyler would have to crawl on his hands and knees to get me to go to the dance with him. Which, actually, he's supposed to do after practice, so I'm gonna wait.

Girl#1 Okay. See ya later.

Girl#2 Bye!

Buffy waves to Girl#1 Call me!

Girl#1 Okay!

Buffy waves to Girl#2 Call me! *waves to Girl#3* Call me!

Girl#3 I will!

Buffy climbs back up a few steps and looks around. She takes off her jacket and sits down to wait for Tyler. She lays the jacket across her legs and idly looks around again. A man in a black suit approaches her. He is her first Watcher, who has finally found her.

Watcher Buffy Summers?

Buffy looks at him Yeah? *smiles* Hi! *confused* What?

Watcher I need to speak with you.

Buffy worried You're not from Bullock's, are you? 'Cause I-I meant to pay for that lipstick.

Watcher There isn't much time. You must come with me. Your destiny awaits.

Buffy confused, shakes her head I don't have a destiny. *nods* I'm destiny-free, really.

Watcher seriously Yes, you have. You are the Chosen One. You alone can stop them.

Buffy Who?

Watcher The vampires.

Buffy considers for a moment Huh?

Cut to a cemetery. Buffy lands flat on her back.

Buffy Oof!

A vampire props himself over her, growling menacingly. She is very frightened, and looks around frantically for what to do. Angel watches from behind some grave-stones. Buffy spots her stake, but can't reach it, so she just gets her hands underneath the vampire and pushes him off. He flies off of her and lands hard on his back.

Buffy Oh, God...

She rolls onto her hands and knees and scrambles on all fours to retrieve her stake.

Buffy Oh, God... Oh... Oh, God... Unh!

She grabs the stake and quickly gets to her feet. She looks at it, unsure of what to do next. The vampire gets up and lunges at her. Reflexively she grabs him, sidesteps him and sends him flipping over to the ground again, dazed. She looks at the vampire, amazed by what she just did. She glances back at the Watcher, down at her stake and then makes her move to dispatch the vampire. She quickly gets to her knees, raises the stake above her head and plunges it into him, but gets him in the gut instead of the chest.

Buffy Oh! Not the heart!

Angel watches, concerned. Buffy plunges the stake into the vampire again, and this time hits her mark. An instant later the vampire bursts into ashes. Buffy is caught by surprise, and she screams and jumps back, landing on her butt. She just stares at the ashes on the grass in wide-eyed shock. Behind her the Watcher steps up.

Watcher You see? You see your power?

Buffy isn't at all sure she wants to see. Angel continues to watch.

Cut to Buffy's house in L.A. The camera looks into her room from outside. Buffy comes in with her mother close behind.

Joyce Why didn't you call?

Buffy *faces her mom* I'm sorry. I-I didn't know it was so late. Tyler and I were talking.

Joyce *exhales* That boy is irresponsible.

Buffy No, mom. It's not his fault. *takes off her jacket*

Joyce You know we worry, that's all.

They look at each other for a moment, and Joyce shrugs.

Joyce Dinner's in ten minutes. *leaves*

Buffy *whispers* Yeah.

She goes through the other door into her bathroom. The camera pans from the bedroom window over to the bathroom window. She turns on the water to wash up from the cemetery. Her parents talk in the hall, and she can hear as it escalates into an argument.

Hank Did she say where she was?

Joyce She was with Tyler.

Hank I don't want her seeing him anymore, period!

Angel looks in at her from outside.

Joyce You're overreacting, dear.

Buffy looks at herself in the mirror sadly. The tears begin to come.

Hank Don't do that! Don't talk to me like I'm a kid!

Joyce I don't! Just forget it!

Angel continues to watch and listen.

Hank Just because you can't discipline her, I have to be the ogre!

Buffy keeps on staring into the mirror.

Joyce I am not having this conversation again! Alright?

Buffy looks down and tries hard not to cry.

Cut to the sewers. Angel arrives where Whistler is waiting for him.

Whistler She's gonna have it tough, that Slayer. She's just a kid. The world's full of big, bad things.

Angel I wanna help her. *Whistler looks at him* I want... I wanna become someone.

Whistler God, jeez, look at you. She must be prettier than the last Slayer. *Angel looks away* This isn't gonna be easy. The more you live in this world, the more you see how apart from it you really are. *sternly* And this is dangerous work. Right now, you couldn't go three rounds with a fruit fly!

Angel *with resolve* I wanna learn from you.

Whistler Alright.

Angel But I don't wanna dress like you. *starts to leave*

Whistler *follows* Again, you're annoying me. You're lucky we need you on our side.

Cut to Angelus' mansion, 1998. He approaches Acathla, still vamped out.

Angelus I have strayed, I have been lost. But Acathla redeems me. With this act, we will be free.

He grabs the hilt of the sword with both hands. A blindingly bright light emanates from it. Drusilla smiles and bathes herself in it. Angelus begins to shake with the power of the sword.

Part 4

In the main hall of Angelus' mansion. He holds onto the sword tightly, trying to draw it out of Acathla. It won't budge, and a moment later a bright red flame bursts from the sword, throwing Angelus back and onto the floor.

Spike *sing-song* Someone wasn't worthy.

Angelus *scrambles to his feet* Damn it!

Drusilla *freaks out* This is so... disappointing! *moans*

Angelus *paces angrily* There must be something I missed. The incantations, the blood... I don't know!

Spike tries hard to suppress a snicker, hiding his mouth with his hand.

Drusilla *whining* What are we going to do?

Angelus *menacingly* What we always do in a time of trouble: turn to an old friend.

Hope returns to Drusilla's eyes.

Angelus *viciously* We'll have our Armageddon. I swear! He grabs a vase from a shelf and heaves it at the far wall, smashing it into hundreds of tiny pieces.

Cut to class the next day. Willow, Buffy, Xander, Cordelia

and the rest of the class are taking one of their final exams. Everyone is intent on it. Buffy looks up and glances around briefly, then turns her attention back on her paper.

Cut to the hall. There are very few students. A mysterious figure with a shawl over its head walks slowly toward the room where the team is taking their test. The camera follows. The few students who pass don't take any notice.

Cut back to the class. Everyone is concentrating on the test, and no one notices as the vampire comes in and pulls the shawl away from its face.

Vampire Tonight... Sundown... *everyone looks up* At the graveyard...

Teacher *gets up* Excuse me...

Exposed now to the daylight, the vampire begins to smoke.

Vampire You will come to him. *takes the shawl off* You will come to him or more will die.

She points at Buffy and ignites. Buffy watches, taken aback by the vampire's direct approach at delivering her message.

Vampire Tonight!

The students scream, jump out of their chairs and begin to run from the room. Cordelia and Xander also jump up, but don't run. Buffy remains calmly in her seat.

Vampire His hour is at hand!

She combusts in a flash of flame and smoke. Buffy just stares at the empty space before her.

Cut to the library. Xander, Cordelia and Willow are researching at the table. Kendra approaches with her sheathed sword. The camera pulls back to show Giles and Buffy up on the mezzanine.

Buffy She said more would die. I have to go.

Kendra Den I should go wit you.

Buffy *faces Kendra* No. I need you here just in case. *heads for the stairs* I can take care of myself. And look, *comes down* as long as Angel's fighting me, then he can't do this end-of-the-world ritual thingy, and that's a good. *reaches the table* Will, what do you think?

Willow *looks over her research* I just want to cross-check...

Buffy We don't have time. If this is gonna work, it has to work now.

Willow Okay. Then I need maybe half an hour once we're all set up.

Giles *looks at the shelves* Which means you just have to hold Angel off. Don't let him close on you. *pulls out a book* If the curse succeeds, you'll, you'll know.

He tosses the book down to Xander. Xander checks the title, and hands it to Willow.

Cordelia Why don't you just wait here to find out if it worked, see if he phones you?

Buffy I can't risk him killing any more people. I better go. *starts out*

Xander Be careful.

Buffy *looks back* I will. *starts out again*.

Kendra Here...

She grabs a stake from the table. Buffy stops and looks back. Kendra goes over to her and holds up the twisted but very sharp stake.

Kendra In case de curse does not succeed, dis is my lucky stake. I have killed many vampires wit it. I call it Mr. Pointy.

Buffy You named your stake?

Kendra *a bit embarrassed* Yes.

Buffy *smiles* Remind me to get you a stuffed animal. She accepts the stake from Kendra and looks it over.

Buffy Thanks.

Kendra *exhales* Watch your back.

Buffy leaves the library.

Cut to the cemetery. Buffy walks through, watching all around as she goes. Angelus walks out from behind a small mausoleum.

Angelus Hello, lover. I wasn't sure you'd come.

Buffy After your immolation-o-gram? Come on, I had to show. Shouldn't you be out destroying the world right now, pulling the sword out of Al Franken or whatever his name is?

Angelus There's time enough. I wanted to say goodbye first. You are the one thing in this dimension I will miss.

Buffy This is a beautiful moment we're having. Can we please fight?

Angelus I didn't come here to fight.

Buffy *raises her eyebrows* No?

Angelus Gosh, I was hoping we could get back together. What do you think? Do we have a shot? *gets a look from Buffy* Alright. We'll fight.

He rushes at her.

Cut to the library. Willow is sitting cross-legged on the table. Before her is the Orb of Thesulah within a sacred circle and surrounded by candles, bones and stones. Willow casts some stones. She looks at them and then gives Giles a nod. He opens a book and reads the Latin text.

Giles Quod perditum est, invenietur.

Translation What is lost, return.

Cordelia swirls incense into the air while Xander watches.

Willow 'Not dead nor not of the living. Spirits of the interregnum I call...'

Cut to the graveyard. Buffy ducks a punch from Angelus and comes up behind him. He spins around to block her return swing. He blocks another jab from her, and punches her in the face. He follows up with a left hook, and Buffy loses her balance and nearly falls down. Angelus grabs her by the back of her coat and throws her over onto the grounds. She rolls away and onto her back, and looks up at him.

Buffy Come on, Willow.

She swiftly gets back to her feet to continue fighting.

Cut to the library. Kendra guards the main doors.

Willow 'Let him know the pain of humanity, gods. Reach your wizened hands to me. Give me the sword...' Suddenly a vampire comes out from the stacks and attacks Xander from behind. The main doors fly open, and Kendra spins around to defend as two more vampires walk in. Giles points to the steps and yells at the girls as a fourth vampire appears from the stacks.

Giles Get out! Go!

Willow and Cordelia make for the stairs. Kendra punches the first of the two vampires to reach her. The fourth one jumps over the mezzanine railing and lands

on Giles' back, knocking him into the table. Cordelia and Willow run up the stairs and see Xander elbow the vampire on his back, knocking the demon into a bookcase. Having punched down the one vampire, Kendra grabs the other and shoves her into the wall. The first one gets up and rushes in to fight. Willow runs around behind the stacks to try to escape. Cordelia is frozen in fright. Giles grabs a vase from the table and smashes it over his attacker's head. Xander's assailant rushes him again, but Xander sidesteps him. He spins around, grabs Xander and shoves him into a bookcase. The one down below hops up onto the table, runs across it and leaps over the railing above. Willow sees him coming, and hides behind a bookcase. The vampire doesn't stop and just pushes the case over onto Willow. She falls to the floor, and the books and case land on top of her, knocking her out. The vampire Kendra is fighting ducks her swing. Xander's opponent grabs his arm, loops his own around it tightly and pulls down, breaking it. Xander yells out in pain. Kendra ducks a roundhouse kick from her enemy and blocks several swings. Xander grabs his tormenter's hair and smashes his head down on the railing. Below Giles ducks a swing and punches the vampire in the gut. Kendra lands two punches in the face of her attacker. Giles pounds his assailant on the back, but he just roars and spins around with a punch to Giles' face, knocking him out. Xander picks the dazed vampire up and shoves him into the other one going at Cordelia, knocking him down.

Xander Go!

He grabs his broken arm and winces in pain. Cordelia screams and runs out through the stacks. Xander watches Kendra's opponent punch her in the face, but Kendra ducks and backs into her and comes up holding back the vampire's head. She plunges her stake into her heart, and she bursts into ashes. Xander winces again in pain. Willow lies prone under the fallen bookcase. Kendra looks around for her next target. She sees the one going for Giles, and rushes over to pull him off. She shoves him around to the floor. He tries to get up, but she just punches him back down. He tries again, and she grabs him and throws him through the window into Giles' office. Just then another one tackles her from the side.

Cut to the cemetery. Buffy punches Angelus, but he takes it in stride. She swings again, but he grabs her arm and holds on tight. She swings with the other one, but he grabs it, too, and then pushes her away.

Angelus Jeez, is it me, or is your heart not in this?

Buffy pulls out Kendra's stake.

Angelus Maybe I'll just go home, destroy the world.

Buffy Well, I think Mr. Pointy'll have something to say

about that. Come on. Let's finish this. You and me.

Angelus *chuckles* Y-you never learn, do you? This wasn't about you. This was never about you. *chuckles* She realizes the trap was set for the others, and begins to run.

Angelus *smiles* And you fall for it every single time!

Cut to the library. A vampire punches Kendra, and she stumbles, but regains her footing. Up in the stacks the other one comes at Xander and punches him in the face, knocking him out. Below Kendra is hit by a roundhouse kick, and falls. The library doors swing open, and Drusilla walks in. The vampire tries to kick Kendra, but she blocks it and swings out with her leg, tripping him, and gets back to her feet to face the other two, the one that came down from above, the other one now back out of Giles' office. The third one is up again also, and they close in on her, but before any more fighting can ensue Drusilla claps her hands.

Drusilla Enough.

She bids Kendra come hither with her waving fingers. The other three just back off. Kendra faces Drusilla, ready to fight. Drusilla walks around her and goads her on. Kendra kicks at her, but Drusilla blocks her easily, as well as two follow-up swings. She punches Kendra and sends her spinning to the floor.

Cut to a street. Buffy runs like mad to get to the school. Cut to the library. Drusilla ducks a kick from Kendra and grabs her by the arms. She swings her around and shoves her away. Kendra comes back at her again with a kick to the gut, and Drusilla doubles over for an instant. Kendra lunges at her, but Drusilla grabs her by the throat and forces her back against the counter, gripping hard and choking her.

Drusilla Look at me, Dearie.

She waves two extended fingers before Kendra's eyes and begins to hypnotize her.

Drusilla Be... in my eyes. Be... in me.

She lets go, and Kendra is completely under her spell. She sways back and forth a bit, and Kendra follows her every move to stay in contact with her eyes. Drusilla backs away slightly, lowering her arms and never losing eye contact.

Cut to the park. Buffy races through, leaping a bench as she runs.

Cut to the library. Kendra continues to sway with Drusilla. Drusilla extends out the fingers of her right hand at her side. She smiles evilly as she swings her hand up and slices Kendra's neck with her sharp nails. Kendra grabs at her neck as it begins to bleed heavily, and collapses to the floor. Drusilla watches her fall, and turns to look down at her.

Drusilla Night-night.

She kisses the air above her and turns to her accomplices.

Drusilla Let's get what we came for, dears.

Two of them grab an unconscious Giles by the arms and drag him from the library. Drusilla and the third vampire follow them out.

Cut outside. Buffy runs across the school grounds. Cut into the halls. Buffy throws open the door and rushes in. As she rounds a corner the scene slows. Buffy runs down the hall in slow motion as Whistler narrates over the scene.

Whistler Bottom line is, even if you see 'em coming, you're not ready for the big moments.

Buffy barges into the library and stops.

Whistler No one asks for their life to change, not really. But it does.

She looks around at the damage, and then sees Kendra lying on the floor. She runs to her, still in slow motion, and skids down next to her on her knees. She sees that she's gone, and takes her hand.

Whistler So what are we, helpless? Puppets? No. The big moments are gonna come. You can't help that. It's what you do afterwards that counts. That's when you find out who you are.

Buffy reaches up to Kendra's face with her other hand and strokes it gently. Behind her a police officer raises his gun at her.

Officer Freeze!

Buffy looks back at him, seemingly caught red-handed.

Whistler You'll see what I mean.

To Be Continued...

Becoming, Part 2

Written by Joss Whedon

Directed by Joss Whedon

Transcribed by AleXander Thompson

Disclaimer

I do not own the characters in this story, nor do I own any rights to the television show "Buffy the Vampire Slayer". They were created by Joss Whedon and belong to him, Mutant Enemy, Sandollar Productions, Kuzui Enterprises, 20th Century Fox Television and the WB Television Network.

This is not a novelization or a script. It is a straightforward and dry transcript of the episode "Becoming", part 2. It also includes descriptions of the settings, ac-

tion scenes and camera movements where I felt they were needed.

I made every effort to accurately transcribe the dialogue from this episode. If you notice anything that is transcribed incorrectly, please let me know and I will post an update. rev 98.10.10

This episode was originally broadcast on May 19, 1998.

Copyright c 1998 Alexander Thompson

Prologue

In every generation there is a Chosen One. She alone will stand against the vampires, the demons and the forces of darkness. She is the Slayer.

The library at Sunnydale High School. Buffy is crouched over Kendra after finding her dead. Behind her a police officer comes in and aims his gun at her.

Officer#1 Freeze! *Buffy faces him* Put your hands up. Back away from the girl slowly.

Another officer comes in behind the first, gun drawn and surveying the scene. Buffy slowly gets to her feet and raises her hands.

Buffy Look, I didn't do anything.

Officer#1 Do it! Now!

The second officer holsters her gun and crouches down to feel for Kendra's pulse, but can't find one.

Officer#2 This one's dead.

Officer#1 What about up there? *nods toward the mezzanine*

Buffy and Officer#2 look up at the stacks and see Xander lying unconscious on the floor behind the railing.

Buffy Xander...

She starts to go to him, but Officer#2 grabs her and pushes her back.

Officer#2 Get her out of here!

Buffy Wait! Just see if he's okay! Please!

The second officer hands her off to the first, and then goes to check on Xander. Buffy offers no resistance, and lets herself be led out. Officer#2 crouches down by Xander to check him out.

Cut to the hall outside the library. Officer#1 leads Buffy out.

Buffy Please. You don't understand.

Officer#1 You'd do well to keep your mouth shut, missy.

They turn down the hall and see Snyder coming down followed by two more officers.

Buffy But I didn't **do** anything.

Snyder Why do I find that so very hard to believe?

Officer#1 *to the other officers* In there. *to Snyder* You know this girl?

Snyder Buffy Summers. If there's trouble, she's behind it.

Buffy *angrily* You stupid little troll. You have **no** idea!

Snyder Attitude problem. Serious.

Buffy *faces the officer* Look, I just wanna know if my friends are okay.

Officer#1 All right, that's enough.

He spins her back around and gets out his handcuffs.

Officer#1 You have the right to remain silent. Anything you say can and...

Buffy glances over her shoulder, and without warning backhand punches the officer in the face. He grunts in pain and stumbles backward into the lockers. She grabs him by the neck and pushes his head down, flipping him over onto his back. Snyder takes a shocked step back. He is too stunned by what he just saw her do to move, and just lets her run down the hall without even looking. Officer#2 comes out of the library and sees her partner on the floor and Buffy running away. She raises her gun and takes aim at Buffy.

Officer#2 Stop!

Now Snyder turns around to see Buffy running away, but he's still too shook up to have the sense to get out of the officer's way.

Officer#2 Get down!

Buffy looks back and turns down an adjacent hall, and the officer takes a shot. The bullet shatters the window of the hall door. The other two officers come out of the

library, guns drawn and ready, and she waves them in Buffy's direction. They run in pursuit. She grabs the radio mic at her shoulder and puts out a bulletin on Buffy.

Officer#2 All units, we have a fugitive on foot at the

high school. Homicide suspect. Female, blond, approximately sixteen years old. Suspect is **very** dangerous.

Opening credits roll. Buffy's theme plays.

Part 1

The hall outside the Emergency Room at Sunnydale General Hospital. Buffy comes into the hall wearing a wool cap and a long, dark coat. She averts her eyes from the doctors and nurses. On the wall she finds a slot with a few patient histories and checks the names on them. There are none she's interested in. She continues slowly down the hall, avoiding the eyes of a passing doctor. She checks another series of slots for names on paperwork, but finds nothing. Further down the hall she turns down the left passageway. Behinds her Xander walks up and touches her on the back. She gasps and spins around, but is very relieved to see him standing there.

Buffy Xander! *hugs him tightly* Ohhh...

He hugs her back, and they hold each other for a long moment, then Buffy lets go.

Buffy I was so worried, I didn't know if you were okay. The cops were...

Xander Yeah, I, I heard them chase you out. I was just coming out of it. *holds up his arm in a cast* Souvenir.

Buffy Well, what about the others?

Xander sees two police officers come into the hall behind her.

Buffy Are they okay?

He grabs her in another tight hug. Buffy goes along with it, but wonders what's up. When she glimpses the cops she hides her face in Xander's shoulder while they head down the hall in the direction that she came in. When the police have gone they separate again.

Buffy Okay. That was about equal parts protecting me and copping a feel, right? *smiles*

Xander doesn't smile back. He turns his face down looking sad and very worried.

Buffy What is it?

Cut to Willow lying unconscious in a hospital bed. She has a bandaged cut on her forehead and a black eye, but otherwise seems unhurt. The camera pans up from her face to Buffy and Xander standing next to the bed.

Xander The doctor said it was head trauma. She can wake up at any time, but, um... the longer it lasts, the... less likely it is.

Buffy I never should've let her try to do that curse. Angel must've known.

She reaches up to Willow's face and brushes back a few stray hairs.

Buffy Where are her parents?

Xander With relatives in Phoenix. I gave them a call. They're... they're getting on a plane back.

Buffy Does Oz know?

Xander *realizes his omission* Oh, man. Um... I didn't even think. Um... I'll call him.

Buffy hears some footsteps behind her and turns quickly to see who it is. Xander looks over his shoulder, too, and they see Cordelia come in. He goes over to her.

Xander Hey.

Cordelia *whispers* Hey.

They kiss and hold each other close.

Cordelia *sighs* How is she? *they separate and look at Willow* The doctor told me that...

Xander Yeah. We're, uh... still waiting.

Buffy You okay?

Cordelia I ran. I think I made it through three counties before I realized nobody was chasing me. Not too brave.

Buffy It was the right thing to do.

Xander Did Giles keep up with you?

Cordelia I didn't see Giles.

Buffy You mean he's not in the hospital?

Xander No.

Buffy gives them a very concerned stare.

Cut to Angelus' mansion. Giles is lying on the floor. Angelus lies on the floor facing him and waiting for him to regain consciousness.

Giles Mm... *stirs a bit and exhales* Ohhh... *lifts his head*

Angelus Hi, Rupert. I wasn't sure you were gonna wake up. You had me worried. *hops to his feet*

Giles *standing up slowly* What do you want?

Angelus I wanna torture you. I used to love it, and it's been a **long** time. I mean, the last time I tortured somebody, they didn't even **have** chainsaws.

He strolls past Giles over to Acatlha. Giles turns to watch him and sees the stone demon with the sword protruding from its chest. Angelus notices Giles' stare.

Angelus Oh, yeah. Acatlha. He's an even harder guy to wake up than you are. I mean, I performed the rituals, said all the right phrases... blood on my hand. Got nothing. Big doughnut hole for my troubles. I figure you know the ritual. You're pretty up on these things. You could probably... tell me what I'm doing wrong. *approaches Giles* But honestly, I sorta hope you don't...

stops in front of him 'Cause I **really** wanna torture you. *stares evilly*

Cut to the Summers house. A police officer comes down the stairs to where Detective Stein is questioning Joyce and goes to stand next to him.

Joyce No. I-i-it's impossible. There... there's been some terrible mistake.

Det. Stein And you have no idea where your daughter is.

Joyce She said she was going to her friend Willow's house. *shakes her head* Maybe she slept over.

Det. Stein Is that Willow Rosenberg?

Joyce Yes.

Det. Stein *to the officer* Second victim.

Joyce *confused* What?

Det. Stein Your daughter has a history of violence. Doesn't she, Ms. Summers?

He nods for the officer to leave the house, and he goes.

Joyce Well...

Det. Stein *smugly* You call us. *pulls out his wallet* Okay? *digs out a card* If she decides to stop by. *hands Joyce the card* Be best if she just comes in.

He exits the house leaving Joyce very worried and confused.

Cut to Giles' apartment. The door is ajar, so Buffy just comes right in.

Buffy Giles! Giles!

She looks around, but doesn't see him. Behind her Whistler comes down the stairs from the loft.

Whistler I don't think he's here.

Buffy *pivots around to face him* Who are you?

Whistler Whistler.

Buffy What are you doing here?

Whistler *reaches the base of the stairs* I'm waiting for you.

Buffy Why?

Whistler 'Cause I-I-I need a date to the prom.

Buffy is **not** in the mood for jokes right now, so she takes the two steps over to him, grabs him by the throat and shoves him up against the wall.

Buffy I have had a **really** bad day, okay? If you have information worth hearing, then I am grateful for it. If

you're gonna crack jokes, then I'm gonna pull out your ribcage and wear it as a hat. *lets go*

Whistler Hello to the imagery! Very nice. *seriously* It wasn't supposed to go down like this. *moves away from the wall* Nobody saw you coming. I figured this for Angel's big day. But I thought he was here to **stop** Acatla, not to bring him forth. Then you two made with the smoochies... now he's a creep again. Now, what are you gonna do? W-what are you prepared to do?

Buffy Whatever I have to.

Whistler Maybe I should ask, what are you prepared to give up?

Buffy *exhales* You don't have anything useful to tell me, do you? What are you, just some immortal demon sent down to even the score between good and evil?

Whistler *impressed* Wow. Good guess. *grins*

Buffy *steps up to him* Well, why don't you try getting off your immortal ass and fighting evil once in a while? 'Cause I'm sick and tired of doing it myself.

Whistler In the end, you're always by yourself. You're all you've got. That's the point.

Buffy *disgusted* Spare me. *starts to leave*

Whistler The sword isn't enough. You gotta be ready. *raises his voice* You gotta know how to use it!

She goes out the door and slams it behind her.

Cut to the park. Buffy walks through it with her head down. A car drives by. She steps into the street and watches as the car goes. When she turns back she sees a police car coming, but doesn't run, instead hoping that the officer won't notice her. He does, though, and turns on his lightbar and lets the siren give a brief loud tone. He pulls the car aside, stops and gets out. Buffy ignores him and keeps walking right past the front of the vehicle. The officer draws his gun.

Officer#3 Hold right there! *slams his door*

Buffy spins around to face him.

Officer#3 Put your hands on your head! Do it!

She stares at his gun, frightened, and begins to raise her hands. Suddenly the gun gets kicked out of the officer's hands. He gets kicked in the face and in the shin, then grabbed and thrown onto the hood of his car, where he lies unconscious. His attacker faces a surprised Buffy.

Spike Hello, cutie. *smiles*

Part 2

In the park. Spike takes a step toward Buffy, and she immediately decks him twice in the face. He grabs her by the shoulders to restrain her, but she brings her knee up into his gut.

Spike Now, you hold on a second!

He gives her a good shove away from himself. She reaches into her coat and pulls out a stake. Spike jumps

back and holds up his hands in surrender.

Spike Hey! White flag here. I quit.

Buffy Let me clear this up for you. We're mortal enemies. We don't get time-outs.

Spike You want to go around, pet, I'll have a gay old time of it. You want to stop Angel... we're gonna have to play this a bit differently.

Buffy *still holding the stake* What are you talking about?

Spike I'm talking about your ex, pet. I'm talking about putting him in the bloody ground.

Buffy *chuckles* This has gotta be the **lamest** trick *lowers her stake* you guys have ever thought up.

Spike He's got your Watcher. Right now, he's probably torturing him.

Buffy What do you want?

Spike I told you. I want to stop Angel. *snickers* I want to save the world.

Buffy Okay. You do remember that you're a vampire, right?

Spike We like to talk big. *indicates himself* Vampires do. 'I'm going to destroy the world.' *looks at the officer* That's just tough guy talk. *steps over to the car* Strutting around with your friends over a pint of blood. *sits on the hood* The truth is, I like this world. *pulls the cigarette pack from the officer's shirt pocket* You've got... dog racing, Manchester United. *pulls one out and drops the pack on the officer* And you've got people. *exhales* Billions of people walking around like Happy Meals with legs. It's all right here. *lights the cigarette and takes a drag* But then someone comes along with a vision. With a real... *exhales* passion for destruction. *takes another drag and looks at Buffy* Angel could pull it off. Goodbye, Picadilly. Farewell, Leicester Bloody Square. You know what I'm saying?

Buffy *nods* Okay, fine. You're not down with Angel. Why would you ever come to me?

Spike *stands and takes another drag, but doesn't look at her* I want Dru back. I want it like it was before he came back. The way she acts around him...

Buffy You're pathetic.

He punches her in the face. She punches him right back.

Buffy I lost a friend tonight!

Spike I wasn't in on that raiding party.

Buffy And I may lose more! The whole earth may be sucked into Hell, and you want my help 'cause your girlfriend's a big ho? Well, let me take this opportunity to **not** care.

Spike I can't fight them both alone, and neither can you! Buffy punches him hard in the jaw, making him flinch. He straightens back up and feels his jaw, checking for blood.

Buffy I hate you.

Spike And I'm all you've got.

The police officer begins to stir on the hood of the car.

Buffy *looks down briefly* All right. Talk.

Spike *turns to the officer* I'm just gonna kill this guy.

Buffy clears her throat loudly. Spike faces her.

Spike Oh, right.

Buffy *raises her eyebrows at him* Let's get inside.

They leave as the police officer begins to wake up and feel his head.

Cut to Willow's room at the hospital. She is still unconscious. Xander is sitting in a chair and watching her while Cordelia stands.

Cordelia Do you want some coffee?

Xander I don't wanna leave. She might, uh...

Cordelia I'll get it.

Xander *looks up at her* Thanks.

They clasp hands briefly, and Cordelia goes to get some coffee. Xander looks at Willow again, deep in thought. He leans over to the bed and gently takes her hand in his.

Xander Come on, Will. Look, you don't have a choice here. You gotta wake up. I need you, Will. I mean, how am I gonna pass trig, you know? *chuckles* And who am I gonna call every night... and talk about everything we did all day? You're my best friend. You've always...

He looks at her for a long moment, looks away for an instant and then at her again, struggling with his emotions.

Xander I love you.

Her face twitches and her hand gives him a squeeze. Xander's eyes widen in hope.

Xander Willow?

She takes a few breaths before responding, with her eyes still closed.

Willow *whispers* Oz? *speaks* Oz?

Xander leans away, taken aback. Oz hears her as he walks into the room.

Oz I'm here.

Xander *looks back at Oz* She's just starting to wake up.

He gets up to let Oz go to her. Oz takes her hand and leans over the bed. Willow still has her eyes closed.

Oz Hey, baby.

Willow *weakly* Hi.

Xander I'm gonna go get a doctor. *leaves*

Oz How you feelin'?

Willow *weakly, eyes still closed* My head... feels big. Is it big?

Oz No. It's head size.

He leans over her face and gently kisses her on the forehead. He leans back to look at her and strokes her hair with his other hand. She opens her eyes tentatively.

Willow *whispers* Uh... is everybody else okay?

Cut to Angelus' mansion. The camera shows Giles in a chair with his hands bound behind his back and bleeding from rope burns. The camera pans up his arms and over his shoulder to Angelus, sitting in a chair and watching Giles as he cleans his glasses. He breathes on the lenses, polishes them clean and inspects his work.

Angelus Rupert, buddy... I'm here to tell you, I'm impressed. *chuckles*

He drops the cleaning cloth, gets up and goes over to Giles.

Angelus Hey. Uh... *slides on the glasses* How you holdin' up?

Giles *looks up at him weakly* Never... better.

Angelus Glad to hear it. *kneels next to him* Now... *Giles breathes painfully* Tell me when it hurts. *smirks*

Cut to Buffy's street. She and Spike eye each other as they head up the walk to her house. Just then Joyce pulls up in her Jeep and sees them from her open window.

Joyce Buffy?!

Buffy gives her a glance, but goes right back to watching Spike.

Joyce *stops the car* Where have you been? *gets out* Are you okay? *runs over* The police were here! I've been looking for you!

Buffy Mom, let's, let's go inside, and I can explain.

Joyce *hysterical* Who is this man? *to Spike* Who are you? *to Buffy* Are you okay?

Buffy Mom! I'm-I'm okay.

Joyce Buffy, terrible things have happened. What were you doing?

Spike What, your mum doesn't know?

Buffy glares at Spike.

Joyce *to Spike* Know what?

Buffy *faces her mom* That I'm, uh... in a band. A-a rock band with Spike here. *shoots Spike a look*

Spike Right. She plays the, the triangle.

Buffy Drums.

Spike Drums, yeah. She's, uh, hell on the old skins, you know.

Joyce *unconvinced* Hmm. And, uh, what do you do?

Spike Well, I sing.

Buffy You know what? Why don't we go inside, and, and we can talk about this. *nods*

She starts toward the door, and Spike follows.

Joyce I'm, I'm not sure how I feel about this.

Buffy turns around to face her. Suddenly a vampire rushes across the porch, pushes Buffy and Spike aside and jumps down the steps at Joyce, ready to fight. She screams and does some fast backpedaling. Buffy grabs him by the shoulders from behind and forces him around to face Spike. She pulls out a stake while Spike gives him a series of punches to the face. Spike's last blow sends the vampire spinning around and staggering away. Buffy thrusts the stake into his chest, and he instantly crumbles to ash. Joyce just stares in shock. Spike steps down from the porch and looks at the pile of ash.

Spike One of Angel's boys.

Buffy Yeah, probably watching me. Or you.

Spike Yeah. He won't get a chance to tattle on us now.

Joyce *utterly confused* Buffy... what... is going on?

Buffy looks at her mother for a moment, exchanges a look with Spike and realizes that it's time. She steps up to her mom and looks up at her, hoping against hope for understanding.

Buffy Mom... I'm a Vampire Slayer.

Joyce just blinks her eyes, raises her brows and shakes her head in complete dismay.

Part 3

Willow's room at the hospital. Oz brings her a bowl of Jell-O. She's sitting up and on the phone with Buffy. She takes the bowl from Oz with a smile, sets it down on her lap and begins to play with the spoon. Oz pulls up a chair and sits down.

Willow I'm okay, Buffy, really. I mean, I don't feel good, but... I'm awake, and I know my name and who's President and how many fingers, so they don't think my brain got mushed at all.

Buffy *cut to her in her kitchen* Thank God. So sorry I can't be there.

Willow I know. *cut to her* I'm sorry I didn't get to cure Angel.

Buffy Don't be. It just *cut to her* wasn't meant to be. I know I'm never gonna get him back the way he was. It just makes it easier.

Willow *cut to her* I guess. Any luck finding Giles?

Buffy *cut to her* Yep. I got a lucky break.

Willow What?

Buffy You wouldn't believe me if I told you.

Cut to their living room. Joyce sits nervously on the couch with the toes of her shoes turned in. Spike is sitting in an adjacent wicker chair. Uncomfortable silence reigns. Spike looks around the room. Joyce lifts her glass, takes a sip of her drink and winces at its strength. Spike looks down at his lap, lets out a long, bored breath and folds his hands. Cut to Buffy on the phone in the kitchen.

Buffy Xander. Angel and the others are holed up outside town. You remember that funky-looking mansion you showed me that time?

Cut to him sitting on Willow's bed. Behind him she eats her Jell-O. Oz looks through a magazine.

Xander *into the phone* On Crawford Street. Sure. That makes sense. What's the drill?

Buffy *cut to her* I'm gonna hit it come daybreak.

Xander *cut to him* You'll need backup.

Buffy No. *cut to her* You stay there. I'm covered.

Xander *cut to him* Do you, um... do you think Giles is still alive?

Buffy *cut to her* I think he is. I just wish he was here to tell me what to do.

Cut to the living room. The silence is deafening. Spike looks around some more. Then Joyce has a spark of recognition on her face and looks over at Spike.

Joyce Have we met?

Spike *faces her* Um... you hit me with an ax one time. Remember? *makes an ax-holding gesture* Uh, 'get the hell away from my daughter.' *lowers his arms*

Joyce Oh.

She lets out a little chuckle. Spike sighs with boredom.

Joyce So, do you, uh, live here in town?

Buffy walks into the room with her arms crossed. They both get up.

Joyce I-is Willow all right?

Buffy Yeah. She's fine. *to Spike* All right, talk. What's the deal?

Spike Simple. You let me and Dru skip town, I help you kill Angel.

Joyce *confused* Angel? Your boyfriend?

Buffy *to Spike* Forget about Drusilla. She doesn't walk.

Spike There's no deal without Dru.

Buffy She killed Kendra.

Spike *surprised* Dru bagged a Slayer? *chuckles* She didn't tell me! *to Joyce, smiling* Hey, good for her! *gets a look from Buffy and loses the smile* Though not from your perspective, I suppose.

Buffy *with contempt* I can't believe I invited you into my house.

Joyce *relieved* So you didn't kill that girl.

Buffy Of course not.

Joyce Did she explode like that man out there?

Buffy She was a Slayer, Mom.

Joyce Like what you are.

Buffy gives her a thin smile and a nod.

Spike Look. *pulls Buffy aside* This deal works for me one way. Full stop. Me and Dru for Angel.

Joyce *still confused* Honey, a-are you sure you're a Vampire Slayer?

Spike I'll take her out of the country. You'll never hear from us again, I **bloody** well hope.

Buffy *ignores her mother* Fine. Get back to the mansion. Make sure Giles is all right.

Joyce I-I mean, have you tried **not** being a Slayer? They both look at her.

Buffy Mom!

Spike sighs in exasperation of Joyce.

Buffy *to Spike* Be ready to back me up when I make my move.

He walks around her toward the door.

Buffy If Giles dies... *Spike stops and faces her* she dies. He gives her a final stare and heads out the door.

Joyce *trying to make sense of it* It's because you didn't have a strong father figure, isn't it?

Buffy It's just fate, Mom. I'm the Slayer. Accept it.

Joyce We should call the police. *heads for the kitchen*

Buffy No. We're not calling the police.

Joyce *stops and faces her daughter, smiling* Well, now that we know that you're innocent, it's...

Buffy What? You thought I was guilty? Jeez, feelin' the love in **this** room!

Joyce No, I didn't think that. It's just... now we have proof.

Buffy *exasperated* We have my word, Mom. Not proof.

Joyce *heads for the kitchen again* Look, I am sure that they will understand.

Buffy *follows closely* Get them involved, you'll get them killed.

Joyce Well, you're not gonna hurt them, are you?

Buffy I'm a Slayer, not a postal worker.

Her mother picks up the phone, and Buffy slaps her hand onto the switch hook.

Buffy Cops can't fight demons. *takes the phone from her mom* I have to do it. *puts the phone back in its cradle*

Joyce *demanding* Do what? Buffy, what is happening?

Buffy *doesn't want to deal* Just have another drink.

She turns away from her mother and starts to walk off. Joyce throws her glass aside in anger, and it breaks on the floor.

Joyce Don't you talk to me that way! *Buffy stops in her tracks* You don't get to just dump something like this on me and pretend it's nothing!

Buffy *looks at her* I'm sorry, Mom, but I don't have time for this. *starts for the door again, but stops*

Joyce No! I am tired of 'I don't have time' or-or 'you wouldn't understand.' *Buffy faces her* I am your mother, and you will **make** time to explain yourself.

Buffy I told you. I'm a Vampire Slayer.

Joyce *haughtily* Well, I just don't accept that!

Buffy *steps closer* Open your eyes, Mom. What do you think has been going on for the past two years? The fights, the weird occurrences. How many times have you washed blood out of my clothing, and you still haven't figured it out?

Joyce *raises her voice angrily* Well, it stops now!

Buffy *raises her voice also* No, it doesn't stop! It **never** stops! Do-do you think I chose to be like this? Do you have any idea how lonely it is, how dangerous? I would **love** to be upstairs watching TV or gossiping about boys or... God, even studying! But I have to save the world... again.

Joyce No. This is insane. *takes Buffy by the shoulders* Buffy, you need help.

Buffy *throws off her mom's arms* I'm **not** crazy! What I need is for you to chill. I **have** to go!

Joyce *shakes her head* No. I am not letting you out of this house.

Buffy You can't stop me.

Joyce *grabs her* Oh yes I...

Buffy shoves her back into the island, making her knock over several things. She heads for the door, opens it and steps out.

Joyce *angrily* You walk out of this house, don't even **think** about coming back!

Buffy just gives her a long stare and leaves. Joyce sighs, having failed once again at communicating with her daughter. She turns around and leans on the island with her head in her hands.

Cut to Willow's hospital room. Willow is sitting up in her bed with Oz in the chair next to her. Xander is sitting on the far side of the room.

Cordelia *paces* So Buffy's going for the big showdown, huh? Wish we could help. *to Xander* You know, without dying.

Xander I don't see how.

Willow I wanna try again.

Oz Try what?

Willow The curse. We never got to finish it. Maybe we **can** restore Angel's soul.

Xander I don't like it. You're talking about messing with powerful magic, and you're weak.

Willow I'm okay.

Xander You don't look okay. *to Cordelia* Does she?

Cordelia You should listen to him. The hair, it's so flat, and the lips...

Xander *to Cordelia* Could we stay on topic here, honey?

Cordelia What?

Xander *to Willow* Look, it's not a good idea.

Willow There's no use arguing with me. Do you see my resolve face? *gives them her resolve face* You've seen it before. You know what it means. This can help Buffy. If we turn Angel back soon enough, we can stop him from ever awakening Acathla.

Oz *gets up* Okay, I pretty much missed out on some stuff, didn't I? Because this is all making a kind of sense that's... not.

Willow *to Oz* Go with Cordy to the library and get my things. She'll fill you in.

Oz Sure. *kisses her hand* I'll drive.

He walks out of the room with Cordelia close behind. Xander gets up.

Willow Xander, go to Buffy. Tell her what we're doing. Maybe she can stall.

Xander But I...

Willow *points to herself* Resolve face.

Xander *gives in* Be careful. *leaves*

Cut to Angelus' mansion. Giles is still tied to his chair, and hangs his head weakly.

Angelus You know, I can stop the pain. You've been very brave... *puts his hand on Giles' shoulder* but it's over. *walks behind him* You've given enough. *leans down to Giles' ear* Now let me make it stop.

Giles *panting and shaking with pain* Please!

Angelus *kneels to face him* Just tell me what I need to know.

Giles *weakly* In order... to be worthy...

Angelus *whispers* Yeah?

Giles *weakly* You must perform the ritual... in a tutu.

Angelus glares at him. Giles doesn't back down.

Giles Pillock!

Angelus *stands up* All right. Someone get the chainsaw.

Spike *wheels himself in* Now, now, don't let's lose our temper.

Angelus Keep out of it, sit 'n' spin.

Spike Look, you cut him up, you'll never get your answers.

Angelus Since when did **you** become so levelheaded?

Spike Right about the time you became so pig-headed. You have your way with him, you'll never get to destroy the world. And I don't fancy spending the next month trying to get librarian out of the carpet. There are other ways.

Angelus Enlighten me.

Spike Hmm. *behind himself* Drusilla? Sweetheart?

She comes in behind him and walks up to them.

Spike Do you want to play a game?

She puts her arm on his shoulder, and they both look over at Angelus.

Cut to the library. The main area is cordoned off with yellow crime scene tape. Buffy walks in and just grabs and pulls down the tape. As she heads toward the table she looks down at the chalk outline of Kendra on the floor and passes it slowly, careful not to step on it. When she reaches the table she looks for a moment at the Orb, candles and other things that were used in the attempt at cursing Angelus. Then she reaches under the table, pulls out Kendra's large duffel bag and sets it on the table. As she goes through it Snyder comes into the library.

Snyder You do know this is a crime scene, don't you? *Buffy looks up at him approaching* But then... you're a criminal, so that pretty much works out. *stops*

Buffy You know I didn't do it. The police will figure it out.

Snyder In case you haven't noticed, the police of Sunnydale are **deeply** stupid. *takes a few steps closer* It doesn't matter anyway. Whatever they find, you've proved too much of a liability for this school. *takes a breath* These are the moments you want to savor. You wish time would stop so that you could live them over and over again. *smiles smugly* You're expelled.

Buffy reaches into the bag and pulls out the sword blessed by the knight who first slew Acathla. She holds it up and turns it in her hand. Snyder looks at it, at her and gulps. Buffy gazes at the polished blade.

Buffy You never ever got a single date in high school, *turns her eyes to him* did you?

Snyder Your point being?

She starts out of the library and leans the blade into his face as she passes him. He bends back nervously and watches her go. This time she makes no attempt to avoid the chalk markings on the floor. Snyder pulls out his cell phone and dials. He checks to make sure she's gone and holds the phone up to his ear.

Snyder It's Snyder. *smiles* Tell the Mayor I have good news.

Cut to Angelus' mansion. Drusilla kneels behind Giles, patting the sweat from his forehead.

Drusilla Is that better? *pats more* Hmm? *pulls away the cloth* Poor thing. *runs her finger down his cheek* Let's see what's inside.

She runs her hand up the back of Giles' head and over the top. She closes her eyes and concentrates on reading his thoughts. It doesn't take long for her to discover something useful. She gasps and removes her hand.

Drusilla *into Giles' ear* Of course.

She stands up and goes around to his other side and holds up two fingers to hypnotize him.

Drusilla Look at me.

Giles turns his head weakly to look away, trying to resist. She comes around the rest of the way in front of him, waving her fingers.

Drusilla Mm-mm-mm-mm.

Finally Giles can no longer resist and looks at her. She waves her fingers around some more and draws them in toward her own eyes.

Drusilla Be... in me.

In his weakened state Giles quickly falls under her spell. She looks into his eyes and smiles.

Drusilla Hmm. See with your heart.

She covers his eyes with her hand, and when she takes it away he sees Jenny kneeling before him. At first he can't believe it, but then accepts it.

Giles *smiles* Jenny! I thought I'd lost you.

Dru/Jenny *quietly* Shh. I'll never leave you.

Giles *tries to get up* We have to get out of here.

Dru/Jenny *calms him* No-no-no-no-no. Slowly.

She brushes her hand over his temple, down his cheek and over his lips.

Giles It can't be you. *stares into her eyes*

Dru/Jenny Did you tell Angel? About the ritual?

Giles *breathing erratically* No. *desperately* We have to get... him away from Acathla.

Dru/Jenny Why? Is he close to figuring it out?

Giles *nods, anxious to go* Later.

Dru/Jenny *imploringly* Tell me what to do.

Giles looks at her, helpless and confused.

Dru/Jenny It's all right. We'll be together... finally. We'll have everything we never got to have... Never got to feel... Just tell me what to do.

Giles *desperately* We have to get Angel away from Acathla.

Dru/Jenny Angel himself? He's the key?

Giles *weakly* H-h-his, his blood... H-he mustn't...

Dru/Jenny Shh. *kisses him* Mm.

They kiss passionately. The camera pulls over to Giles' face. When it pans back he's kissing Drusilla. The camera continues to pan over to Angelus and Spike as they watch, pleased with the result.

Angelus Blood. Of course. The blood on my hands must be my own. I am the key that will open up the door. My blood. My life. *considers* Okay. Kill him. *turns to go*

Spike Uh, but what if he's lying?

Angelus Yeah. Good point. Alright, don't kill him. *leans down to Spike* You know, I kinda like having you watch my back. It's kinda like old times. *chuckles*

They both look over at Drusilla, still kissing Giles.

Spike Uh, Drusilla...

She keeps kissing him.

Angelus Honey...

Spike We are finished here, ducks.

She stops and looks back at them sheepishly.

Drusilla Sorry. *smiles evilly* I was in the moment.

Giles opens his eyes and realizes that he's been tricked. Cut to Giles' apartment. Whistler walks into the kitchen and looks around. He spots a bottle of sherry and takes a sniff, but then sees that it's empty. He puts it back down and keeps looking around. Buffy comes in and sees him there. He goes over to check out the refrigerator.

Buffy Whistler. What did you mean, the sword isn't enough?

Whistler *finds a bottle of beer* You know, raiding an Englishman's fridge is like dating a nun. You're never gonna get the good stuff.

Buffy Tell me how to use it.

Whistler *takes a swig and looks back at Buffy* Angel's the key. *closes the fridge* His blood will open the door to Hell. Acatla opens his big mouth, creates a vortex. Then only Angel's blood will close it. One blow will send 'em both back to Hell. But I strongly suggest that you get there before that happens, 'cause the faster you kill

Angel, the easier it's gonna be on you.

Buffy Don't worry about me.

Whistler It's all on the line here, kid.

Buffy I can deal. *sadly* I got nothing left to lose. *leaves*

Whistler Wrong, kid. You got one more thing.

Part 4

Outside Angelus' mansion. The camera pans along its dark facade. Cut to the street. Buffy walks toward the mansion at a determined pace with the sword wrapped in a cloth. Suddenly Xander comes running out of the bushes on the hillside and jumps into the street in front of her. She startles and takes a reflexive step back.

Buffy Xander!

Xander Cavalry's here. Cavalry's a frightened guy with a rock, *holds up a large rock* but it's here.

Buffy holds up a stake. He tosses the rock aside and takes it from her.

Xander That's better.

Buffy You're not here to fight. *starts walking* You get Giles out, and you run like hell, understood? I can't protect you. *pulls off and discards the cloth* I'm gonna be too busy killing.

Xander *looks at the sword* Now, that's a new look for you.

Buffy It's a present for Angel.

Xander Willow. *stops* Uh, she told me to tell you...

Buffy Tell me what?

Xander *pauses to think* Kick his ass.

Without a word she continues walking. Xander hesitates a moment and then follows.

Cut inside the main hall of the mansion. Spike in his wheelchair, Angelus and Drusilla stand at one end near the large fireplace. The camera pans along the other side behind Acatla and the two other vampires standing on either side. Angelus begins the ritual.

Angelus Acatla... Mundatus sum... pro te necavi. Sanguinem meum... pro te effundam... *steps slowly toward Acatla* quo me dignum... esse demonstrem.

Translation Acatla... I am cleansed... here before you. My blood... flowing before you... *steps slowly toward Acatla* makes me worthy... as I demonstrate.

Cut to Willow's hospital room. Cordelia and Oz are back with the Orb and the candles, and they have everything set up on the tray table over the **bed** the Orb surrounded by the candles within a sacred circle. Cordelia stands on one side and waves burning herbs and incense over the Orb. Oz stands on the other side with an open Latin book. Willow sits up in her bed holding the printout of the Rumanian curse. The camera looks down from above and closes in on them.

Willow Are we ready?

Cordelia Stinky herbs are a go.

Oz Did I mention I didn't take Latin?

Willow Y-you don't have to understand it. You just have to say it. I hope.

Oz Right.

Cut to Angelus' mansion. The camera pans past Acatla's face and the vampire standing next to him.

Angelus Now, Acatla...

Cut to Angelus. Drusilla hands him a knife.

Angelus You will be free.

He draws the blade across the palm of his hand and winces in pain, but doesn't take his stare off of the demon. He drops the knife.

Angelus And so will we all.

Cut to the other vampire. The camera pans around him to show Buffy coming in quietly behind him. She raises her sword and decapitates him with a single swing. He crumbles to ash as his head falls to the floor. Drusilla and Angelus turn their heads to look. Buffy meets their gazes.

Buffy Hello, lover.

Angelus *bored* I don't have time for you.

Buffy You don't have a lot of time **left**.

Angelus Coming on kind of strong, don't you think? You're playing some deep odds here. Do you really think you can take us all on?

Buffy No. I don't.

Spike gets up out of his wheelchair behind Angelus with a determined look on his face and whips him hard across the back with an andiron. Angelus cries out in pain and collapses to the floor. Drusilla twists her head to look at Spike. He continues to whale on Angelus as hard as he can. Buffy starts for Drusilla, but the first vampire attacks her. She spins around to face him, but he punches her and she falls to the floor. She trips him when he comes at her again and maneuvers to her feet, ready to fight. He comes at her again with a series of punches, all of which she easily blocks. Spike keeps pounding on Angelus.

Spike Painful, isn't it?

He keeps swinging the andiron. Drusilla begins to freak, and jumps on Spike, taking him down to the floor with her. Buffy's assailant backhand punches her in the

face, and she goes staggering into a chair by the wall. She quickly recovers to block another swing, brings her knee up into his gut and kicks him in the face, knocking him to the floor. She spies a pile of broken wood fragments and goes to it. The vampire gets to his feet just as Xander comes into the room and surprises him with a punch. Buffy picks up a suitable piece of scrap wood and gets back into the fight. Xander backs off to go look for Giles. The vampire ducks a roundhouse kick and blocks another kick. Spike and Drusilla get up from the floor and face each other off.

Spike I don't want to hurt you, baby.

She grabs him by the throat and shoves him into the wall. He slaps her arm aside and punches her in the face.

Spike Doesn't mean I won't.

Cut to the hospital room. Willow casts her stones and gives Oz his cue. Cordelia keeps waving the burning herbs and incense.

Oz Quod perditum est, inveniatur.

Translation What is lost, return.

Willow Not dead... nor not of the living. Spirits of the interregnum, I call.

Cut to the mansion. Xander pushes aside a curtain to another room and finds Giles still tied to a chair.

Xander Giles!

Giles' head is tilted back, and he is very weak.

Xander Giles!

Giles lifts his head slowly. Xander crouches behind the chair and begins to untie the ropes.

Giles Xander?

Xander Can you walk?

Giles You're not real.

Xander Sure, I'm real.

Giles It's a trick. They get inside my head, make me see things I want.

Xander has untied the ropes and goes around to look into Giles' face.

Xander Then why would they make you see me?

Giles *considers* You're right. Let's go.

He groans as Xander gets under his arm and helps him out of the chair.

Xander Come on.

They make their way through the main hall as fast as they can and out the door. Buffy and the vampire continue to fight. Drusilla swipes at Spike with her hand and leaves four parallel scratches across his cheek. She follows up with a punch that knocks him to the floor. Angelus wakes up and groans in pain. He rubs his eyes and looks up at Acatlha. He gets to his feet and goes over to the demon. Buffy is still fighting the vampire. She blocks a kick from him, punches him, spins around

and punches again, and he falls onto his back. Buffy quickly follows him down with her stake and jams it into his chest. He bursts into ashes. Behind her Angelus takes the last few steps to Acatlha and grabs the sword stuck in his chest by the hilt with his bloody hand. A blindingly bright light emanates from it, and Buffy looks up from her kill in time to witness Angelus pulling the sword from the demon's heart. With a few telltale sparks the light is suddenly gone. Angelus whips the sword around in his hand and holds it up to look at it. Buffy scrambles to get her own sword. Drusilla looks up from her fight and gazes at Acatlha with a smile.

Drusilla Oh... Here he comes.

Spike comes up behind her and grabs her around the throat with his arm, choking her.

Cut to the hospital. Willow continues her chant, but starts to feel weak.

Willow Gods, bind him. Cast his heart from the... evil... realm.

Cut to the mansion. Buffy holds up her sword and faces off with Angelus. He holds his own ready to fight her also.

Angelus You almost made it, Buff.

Buffy It's not over yet.

Angelus My boy Acatlha here is about to wake up. You're going to Hell.

Buffy Save me a seat.

She thrusts at him with her sword, but he parries and swings around with a thrust of his own, which she also parries. They clash blades several times, and Buffy ducks a wide arcing swing from him. They face off again and trade one thrust and parry after another. Angelus tries another arcing swing from above, but she easily ducks and sidesteps out of the way. They face off again in front of Acatlha and trade a few more blows. Angelus tries a swing from above a third time, and again Buffy ducks it and escapes to the side. She jumps up on a low table and swings at him again. He parries, and swings at her legs. She jumps up and over his blade and lands on the floor. He tries for her legs again, but she blocks his attempt with her blade. Again they trade several swings, and Angelus tries a wide swing again, and this time cuts her superficially on the arm. He tries to take advantage of her distraction and comes at her with his sword held high, intending to swing from above, but she drops to the floor and rolls out of the way, so he only manages to smash a bowl on a table behind her. Buffy kicks his legs out from under him and scrambles back up. He turns to face her still on his knees and swings three times in rapid succession, all of which she parries. He swings a fourth time, and this time Buffy knocks his sword into the table with her parry and pins it there. He backhand

punches her in the face, and she spins away. He pulls the sword from the table and swings it hard at her. She blocks it with hers, and kicks him in the gut, making him double over. She jumps over him into the clear, and raises her sword to continue the fight. He thrusts, and she parries. Then he kicks her in her sword arm, and she stumbles back a step.

Cut to the hospital. Willow gets weaker as she chants and breathes heavily.

Willow Return. *pants* I call on... *pants*

Oz *worried* Willow?

Cordelia *worried* Are you okay?

Without warning Willow's head snaps back and she looks up with her eyes wide open. Her head snaps back down and her eyes stare into the Orb. She begins to chant steadily in Rumanian as though possessed.

Willow Te implor, Doamne, nu ignora aceasta rugaminte.

Translation I implore you, Lord, do not ignore this request.

Oz *to Cordelia* Is this a good thing?

Willow Nici mort, nici al fiintei...

Translation Neither dead, nor of the living...

Cordelia *freaked out* Hey, speak English!

Willow Lasa orbita sa fie vasul care-i va transporta, sufletul la el.

Translation Let this Orb be the vessel that will carry his soul to him.

Cut to Angelus' mansion. The fight has moved out into the atrium. Buffy hits the ground and scrambles back to her feet as Angelus slowly advances. She thrusts, and he parries. She spins around and swings at him, and he blocks her. Her sword bounces off of his and falls with the tip onto the low wall of a planting bed. Angelus stomps on the blade before she can raise it again and knocks it from her grip. He spins around and elbows her in the face, knocking her back into a stone table, which collapses and falls with her.

Cut to Acatla. Deep thundering growls and noises come from him as he begins to wake.

Cut to Spike choking Drusilla. She begins to lose consciousness and slumps over in his arms.

Spike Sorry, baby. Wish there was another way.

When she begins to fall he catches her, lifts her into his arms and starts to carry her out. On the way he passes the doorway to the atrium and glances outside. When he sees them he stops to take a better look. Buffy is backing up against the wall without her sword while Angelus slowly and deliberately advances on her holding his.

Spike God, he's gonna kill her.

He watches for another moment, then shrugs and heads for the garage with Drusilla.

Cut to the atrium. Angelus plays with his sword, idly pointing it at Buffy. She looks up at him, frightened.

Angelus Now that's everything, huh? No weapons ... No friends... No hope.

Buffy closes her eyes and steels herself for whatever's coming.

Angelus Take all that away... and what's left?

He draws the sword back and thrusts it directly at her face. With lightning-fast reflexes she swings up with both arms and catches the blade between the palms of her hands. She opens her eyes and meets his.

Buffy Me.

She shoves the blade away from her, and the hilt of the sword hits Angelus in the face. He staggers back, and she hops to her feet and kicks him in the chest. He stumbles back even more, and she reaches down and picks up her sword. She swings it around and thrusts at him, but he manages to parry. They exchange several blows, blocking each other. Buffy spins around and swings her sword down at him from above. He holds up his own to block, but she hits it hard and he falls to one knee. She swings again, and he blocks. She spins around with a roundhouse kick to his side, and he collapses to the ground.

Cut outside the garage. Spike smashes through the door with his car. The windows are all painted black. He screeches into the street and guns it. Cut into the car. Drusilla is lying unconscious in the passenger's seat. Spike concentrates on the road and whips around a corner. When heading straight again he looks over at her. He reaches around her neck and pulls her over to him, and holds her close as he keeps driving with only one hand on the wheel.

Cut to the mansion. Buffy kicks Angelus, and he comes flying in through the door, hits the floor and rolls to a stop. Before he can get all the way back to his feet Buffy leaps in and swings her sword at him. He almost misses parrying her blow, and he steps back to get his footing. They exchange a few more swings. Angelus misses a block and gets sliced on his hand.

Cut to the hospital. The table lurches hard. The camera pans around Willow and closes in on her face.

Willow Asa sa fie! Asa sa fie! Acum!

Translation So it shall be! So it shall be! Now!

Cut to the mansion. Angelus has dropped his sword and holds his cut. Buffy does a high kick to his face, and he falls backward into Acatla and lands on his knees before her.

Cut to the hospital.

Willow Acum!

Translation Now!

The Orb glows brightly for a brief moment and goes dark. Willow suddenly relaxes, and looks around blankly.

Cut to the mansion. Buffy raises her sword to dispatch Angelus, but stays herself when he suddenly gasps loudly and groans in pain. She sees his eyes glow bright red for an instant and go back dark. He looks up at her, but quickly collapses to the floor, crying. Buffy stares down at him, but still holds her sword raised behind her. Angel raises himself back up, his eyes heavy with tears, and looks into her eyes.

Angel *softly* Buffy? *sobs* What's going on?

She just looks at him, confused but not yet ready to lower the sword. He looks around a bit and gets to his feet.

Angel Where are we? I-I don't remember.

Finally Buffy realizes that the curse has worked, and she slowly lowers her sword.

Buffy *softly* Angel?

Angel *sees her wound* You're hurt.

She looks down at her wound and feels his gentle touch on her arm. She ignores her cut, looks back up at him and steps closer. He embraces her tightly.

Angel Oh, Buffy... God.

She still isn't completely sure that it's true, but accepts the hug.

Angel I... I feel like I haven't seen you in months.

Finally she accepts it, closes her eyes and breathes out a deep sigh.

Angel Oh, my God, everything's so muddled. I...

He holds her even more closely.

Angel Oh...

He sighs deeply and kisses her on the shoulder.

Angel Oh, Buffy...

She cries into his shoulder and hugs him back. Behind him Acatla lets out a low rumble. Buffy opens her eyes and stares in shock as Acatla's face contorts. His brows angle down, his eyes glow red, his mouth opens grotesquely and the swirling vortex to Hell opens, small at first, but growing steadily in size and emanating a deep, red glow. Buffy lets go of Angel and looks up into his face.

Angel *confused* What's happening?

Buffy *whispers reassuringly* Shh. Don't worry about it.

She brushes her fingers over his lips and across his cheek. She lays her hand on his cheek and kisses him softly. He returns the kiss, and it becomes more passionate. Behind them the vortex has grown to about five feet 1.5 m across and continues to get larger. Buffy breaks off the kiss and looks deeply into Angel's eyes.

Buffy *whispers* I love you.

Angel *whispers* I love you.

She touches his lips with her fingers again.

Buffy Close your eyes.

She nods reassuringly, and he closes his eyes. She tries hard not to start crying, and kisses him again gently. She steps back, draws back her sword and thrusts it into his chest. His eyes whip open in surprise and pain, and a bright light emanates from the sword. She steps away from him. He reaches out to her and looks down at the sword thrust completely through him. He looks at her imploringly, completely bewildered by this turn of events. She can only stare at the sword protruding from his chest, and slowly steps further back.

Angel Buffy...

Behind him the power of the sword begins to swirl into the vortex. Buffy steps further back, still looking only at the sword in his chest and not into his face. The vortex has enlarged to about twelve feet 3.5 m across, and the two energies begin to interact. Angel still holds out his hand to Buffy. When the vortex finally meets him it suddenly closes into Acatla's mouth without so much as a spark, taking him with it. Buffy stares at the stone demon for a long moment, a light of awareness dawning in her eyes as she truly realizes what she has done, what she has lost. She begins to sob, her heart breaking. In the background "Full of Grace", by Sarah McLachlan, begins to play over the scene.

Lyrics The winter here is cold...

Dissolve to Buffy's street. She walks across it toward her house.

Lyrics ...and bitter / It's chilled us to the bone / We haven't seen the sun for weeks / Too long, too far from home

She looks at the neighboring houses, then back at hers. Cut into the house. Joyce climbs the steps and looks down the hall at Buffy's door.

Lyrics I feel just like I'm sinking

Joyce Buffy?

Lyrics And I claw for solid ground

She walks to Buffy's room and looks in. The windows are open, and some of her daughter's things are strewn on the bed. She steps in and looks around.

Lyrics I'm pulled down by the undertow

She sees a note on the bed among a bunch of clothes.

Lyrics I never thought I could feel so low

She picks up the note and reads.

Lyrics And, oh, darkness / I feel like letting go

She begins to cry as she reads and sits down on the bed.

Lyrics If all of the strength and all of the courage / Come and lift me from this place

Cut to Sunnydale High School. Xander and Giles walk up to Oz pushing Willow in a wheelchair with Cordelia

at their side. Giles' walk is a bit unsteady.

Lyrics I know I can love you much better than this / Full of grace

Giles Willow, are you sure you should be out of bed?

Willow Look who's talking.

Giles *smiles* Yes.

Cordelia Any word?

Xander You guys haven't seen her either?

Willow No.

Oz But we know the world didn't end, 'cause... *looks around* check it out.

Giles *takes off his glasses and squints* Well, we, uh... we went back to the mansion. I-it was empty, um... and Acatlha was, was... dormant.

Willow I think the spell worked. I felt something go through me.

Cordelia Plus the Orb did that cool glow thing.

Xander Well, maybe it wasn't in time. Maybe she had to kill him before the cure could work.

Oz Well, then, she'd wanna be alone, I guess.

Willow Or maybe Angel **was** saved, and they want to be alone together.

Giles Perhaps.

Cordelia Well, she's gotta show up sooner or later. We still have school.

Willow Yeah. *looks around for her* She'll be here in a while.

Lyrics Where everything we said and did / Hurts us all the more

They all turn and head into the school.

Lyrics It's just that we stayed too long / In the same old sickly skin

Cut to Buffy looking at the school from behind a tree. She watches them as they go in.

Lyrics I'm pulled down by the undertow / I never thought I could feel so low

The camera pans around her to her face, looking sadly at the school. A light breeze sweeps her hair back.

Lyrics And, oh, darkness / I feel like letting go She turns around and walks away down the street without looking back.

Lyrics If all of the strength and all of the courage / Come and lift me from this place

Dissolve to the inside of a bus. Buffy's reflection is visible in the window as it drives by her house.

Lyrics I know I can love you much better than this / Full of grace

Buffy looks out the window calmly as the bus drives on. Cut to a two-lane road leading out of town. The bus passes under the camera on its way.

Lyrics I know I can love you much better than this The camera pans down to a sign that reads:

NOW LEAVING SUNNYDALE come back soon!

Lyrics It's better this way

Contents

1	When She Was Bad	1
2	Some Assembly Required	11
3	School Hard	22
4	Inca Mummy Girl	34
5	Reptile Boy	45
6	Halloween	57
7	Lie to Me	70
8	The Dark Age	82
9	What's My Line, Part 1	93
10	What's My Line, Part 2	104
11	Ted	117
12	Bad Eggs	130
13	Surprise	143
14	Innocence	154
15	Phases	165
16	Bewitched, Bothered and Bewildered	177
17	Passion	191
18	Killed by Death	202
19	I Only Have Eyes for You	215
20	Go Fish	227
21	Becoming, Part 1	239
22	Becoming, Part 2	252